



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

### Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

### About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>

1175

THE BRAIDWOOD COLLECTION,  
LANARKSHIRE.

**NON  
CIRCULATING**

· BX

5136

· H 886

1658

E

A

L



# Vindication

OF THE  
ESSENCE and UNITY  
OF THE

Church-Catholick visible,

And the Priority thereof in regard of  
Particular CHURCHES.

In answer to the Objections made against it, by  
M<sup>r</sup> John Ellis junior, and by that reverend and  
worthy Divine M<sup>r</sup> Hooker, in his survey  
of Church-Discipline.

---

The second Edition, with an Addition or Postscript to  
this VINDICATION, &c.

---

By SAMUEL HUDSON, Minister of the Gospel  
at Capell in Suff.

---



LONDON,

Printed by J. B. for Andrew Kembe, and are to be sold  
at his shop neer S. Margarets hill in Southwark, and by Ed-  
ward Brewster at the Crane in Paul's Church-yard,  
and Thomas Basset under Dunstons Church  
Fleetstreet, 1658.

Thin

8082

English - Handwritten

2-8-1923



6-299  
E 114  
TO THE  
Reverend Assembly of DIVINES  
assembled at Westminster.

**R**everend, and much honoured Fathers and Brethren,  
it is a received Maxime, That publick rights and inter-  
ests are to be preferred before private and particular;  
spirituall; before secular; divine before humane.  
Now as the internall spirituall government of Christ in  
the invisible Church, is far more excellent then any other:

so also his externall visible government of the visible Church, hath  
the preheminance above all visible civill governments and Kingdoms  
of this world. And if it be lawfull even for private persons to vin-  
dicate, by humane Laws, the extents and rights of their particular  
civill inheritances and possessions: and if it be accounted the duty of  
good Subjects to vindicate the extents and rights of their civill So-  
veraigns Dominions, with their Estates and Lives, even by the Sword:  
then much more is it the duty of Christs Subjects, by disputes and ar-  
gumentations to vindicate the extents and rights of Christs externall  
politickall Kingdoms; the one being but of civill concernment, the other  
divine; the one tending but to a civill end, the other a spiritual. And  
therefore I hope none will blame me for appearing in publick to con-  
tend for the extent and rights of Christs politickall Kingdome in his  
Church here on earth.

My first Thesis on this Subject was composed for the private  
use of my self, and some few neighbour Ministers, in a monthly  
private meeting, according to our custome. But being made pub-  
lick, at the desires of others, it met with opposition from two re-  
verend Brethren: first by M. John Ellis junior, who undertook  
to confute it, with other Tractates of divers of my betters that were  
written of the same subject: and secondly by Reverend M. Hoo-  
ker,

## The Epistle Dedicatory.

ker, who is since departed out of the visible militant Church, into the invisible Triumphant; the losse of which burning and shining light, the Church of God cannot sufficiently lament. Now because some things therein set down were by them mistaken, and other things not so fully cleared, as I desired, I thought good to set it out again more enlarged, and vindicated from the mistakes and oppositions that it met withall.

The reasons of my so long delay herein were, First, because I was the least and least concerned therein, though the most partly dealt withall by M. Ellis. And secondly, because I desired to see some of my betters go before me, in vindication of their own Tractates of the same Subject. And thirdly, because I understood by M. Ellis's book, and by common fame, that there was an answer to M. Rutherford coming out, wherein I should find my question discussed, by that eminent and worthy Divine M. Hooker, which was indeed sent over, but perished in the sea, and so was retarded one year longer, untill it could be transcribed, and sent over again. And since that was printed, the seat of the warr, by the siege of Colchester, coming so near us, we were all in a fear and danger, so that I thought it no fit time to attend to controversies: and I had indeed almost laid it quite aside, but that the importunities of some, and the insultings of others excited mee again to take it in hand.

And now I find a fourfold unhappinesse hath betided me herein.

First, The darknesse and sublimity of the Subject, which I could no way make plain, so as to be understood by vulgar apprehensions, because the handling thereof put me necessarily upon the use of so many latine words, and logicall termes of art, which are not usually understood by common people. And therefore despairing to be understood but by those that had some skill in the Latine tongue, and in Logick, I have set down the words of such Authours as I have had occasion to cite, in their own languages, in which I found them, lest otherwise this Tractate should swell too great.

A second unhappinesse is, that this Tenet seemeth to crosse so many of our own Divines, in their writings against the Papists. But indeed it doth onely seem so, for it is manifest that the Church-Catholick which they intend, is not the same with this that I have to deal about. For they speak of the Church-Catholick consisting onely of the Elect, and I consent unto them that that Church is invisible:

but

## The Epistle Dedicatory.

but my question is about the externall state of the Church, containing hypocrites as well as those that are truly godly, in which Church the Ordinances of worship and discipline were set.

A third is, that I am fallen upon a subject wherein I can find so few going before me, and therefore could have the lesse help from Auteurs.

A fourth is, that I being a mean Countrey-Minister, want both those abilities and opportunities, to enable me to write of controversies, having constant employment of preaching in mine own Congregation, and frequently abroad, lying upon me, so that I cannot attend polemickall Divinity, as they must that undertake such a work.

My principall scope in this and the former Thesis, is to prove that there is one Church Catholick visible on earth: and that Gods intention and donation of the Ordinances of worship and discipline, was first to the whole Church, and secondarily to the particular Churches, as parts thereof. And yet I acknowledge the ordinary and constant exercise of those Ordinances is primarily in the particular Churches, and a secondary and onely occasional exercise of them in greater parts thereof; and a very rare exercise of them in the whole conjunction upon some general extraordinary occasion, and that can be no otherwise, then by delegated commissioners from the severall parts of the whole, when convenient.

If it be conceived by any, that some of the Arguments in this Treatate are multiplied more then is needfull, and are laid down more singly then was meet, I will not deny it: Be pleased in the reading of them to consider them together, and I hope they will prove conclusive.

I find also by the review of this Treatate, that some things are often touched upon then I was aware of: be pleased to impute it partly to my forgetfulness, and partly to mine endeavour to follow the method of my former Thesis, and yet to answer what was objected against it by others, who followed their own methods, which occasioned some coincidence.

And since the transcribing of it for the Presse, there came to my hands two other Treatates about the same subject, written from N. E. the one in Latine by that reverend and worthy M. Norton, Minister at Ipswich there, in answer to Apollonius; the other by

most reverend Ministers, viz, M. Allen, and M. Shepard, in answer to M. Ball.

*It grieved me much, that I saw them no sooner : I have onely inserted a few annotations upon those tractates; because I was loath to make a Postscript; and because I found that most of the material passages in them concerning this subject, were already spoken unto in this book.*

*I have now skew'd mine opinion on this question, and submit it to your sage and mature judgments, and should be glad that my betters would shew me theirs, & either correct what I have erred or failed in, or make more cleare what I have endeavour'd to prove and defend. If I have herein erred, I would not willingly be an heretick, but shall be willing upon conviction and proof to retract the same, but if I have defended a truth (as I conceive I have) I should be glad to be confirmed in it, and gladder to have the truth confirmed, that it may appear so to others.*

*Now God the Father, who is the God of truth, and Jesus Christ, who is the way, the truth, and the life; and the holy Ghost, who is the Spirit of truth; guide you and us into all truth. So prayeth,*

Your unworthy fellow-labourer

Septemb. 8.  
1642.

in the Lord,

SAMUEL HUDSON.



## AN Epistle to the READER.

**T**He Reverend Authour of this learned Tractate, some few years ago, did put forth a Book about the *Essence and Unity of the Church-Catholick, visible, and the priority thereof in regard of particular Churches.* This Book was written with so much ingenuity, perspicuity, and learning, that Reverend and godly M. Hooker is pleased to passe his judgement upon the Authour and his Book in these words; *While Survey of I was enquiring and writing touching this Ecclesia Catholica vi-Church-  
fibilis, an especiall providence brought a book, to my view, which did discipline.  
proposely entreat of this particular subject. The Authour M. Hudson pag. 15:  
a learned man and a faithfull Minister of the Gospell, when I had  
considered his writing, all is well, I found his judgment sharp and  
scholasticall, his spirit Christian and moderate, his expression suc-  
cinct and pregnantly plain to expresse his own apprehensions: So  
that my heart was much contented with the acumen and judicious  
diligence of the Authour, though I could not consent to what hee  
writ, yet I could not but unsaindly prize the learning, perspicu-  
ity and painfullnesse expressed in his writing. To this Book (by him  
so much commended) he returns an answer, and before  
him one M. John Ellis junior. And it seems there are two o-  
ther Tractates about the same subject written from N. E. The  
one by M. Norton in answer to Apollonius, the other by M. Al-  
lin and M. Shepherd in answer to M. Ball. For the truth is, the  
position there held forth, if granted, would utterly overthrow  
the*

the grounds and pillars of the Congregationall government. For if there be a Church-Catholick visible, and this Church be not onely a Church-Entire but a Church Organically, and a Totum integrale having all Church-power habitually seated in the Officers of it, which they have commission from Christ to exert, and put into act upon a lawfull call. And if particular Congregations are integrall parts and members of the Church-Catholick, as the Jewish Synagogues were of the Jewish Church. And if the Ministry, Ordinances, and censures were given by Christ first to the Church-generall-visible, and secondarily to the Church particular, Then it will necessarily follow, That the particular Congregation is not the first receptacle of Church-power, And that all Church-power is not intirely and independently in a particular Congregation, which are two of the chief foundations of the Congregationall government. I shall not at all speak to the first, but as for this last, That all Church-power is solely and independently in a particular Congregation, it seems to me not onely to be contrary to the Scriptures, but to the very light of nature, and to carry many great absurdities with it. For,

1. It takes away all *authoritative appeals*, and all *authoritative waies* of uniting particular Churches one with another.
2. Then the Churches of Jesus Christ should have no Church-communion in *discipline* one with another. They may have *Christian-communion*, but no *Church-communion*.
3. Then no *Minister* could preach as an *Officer* out of his own Congregation, but onely as a *gifted brother*, and as a *private Christian*.
4. Then no *Minister* could administer the *Sacraments* (which is an act of office) out of his own Congregation, nor (as I conceive) give the Sacrament to a member of another Congregation.
5. Then when his particular Church is dissolved, he ceaseth to be a Minister, and must receive a *New Ordination*.
6. Then a Minister baptizing a childe, baptizeth him onely into his own Congregation. For if he be not an *Officer* of the *Catholick Church*, he cannot baptize into the *Catholick Church*, which

Ag. 15.  
 21. 18. 17.  
 cor. 17. 8, 9,  
 10, 11, 12.  
 Tim. 4. 14.



which is directly contrary to 1 Cor. 12. 13.

7. Then when the Officers excommunicate a person, he should onely be excommunicated out of that particular Congregation, &c.

8. Then Christ should have as many intire bodies as particular Congregations; Christ should not onely have one Body where of particular Congregations are part, but every Congregation should be a Body of Christ by It self.

9. It would make way for toleration of heresies and blasphemies, and let in as many religions as there are particular Congregations.

10. It would make the Churches of Christ stand divided one from another in respect of government, and thereby bring ruine upon one another. Even as in a civill State, if particular Corporations should be independent from the whole in point of government, it would quickly bring destruction upon the whole.

For the removing of these and such like absurdities, This learned and judicious Author in the Book fore-mentioned laid down a quite contrary Thesis. *That there is a Catholick visible, organick Church, to which Ordinances and censures are firstly given by Jesus Christ. And that every Minister is seated by God in this Catholick visible Church, and hath a virtuell and habitual power to preach as a Minister in any place where he shall be lawfully called.* Indeed he is not an actual Minister of the Church-Catholick, nor hath actually the charge of the whole Church as the Apostles had: but habitually onely by reason of the indefinitenesse of his office. He hath power *in actu primo* by virtue of his office, though not *in actu secundo seu exercitio*, hee hath *ius ad rem* every where, but not *in re* any where, without a call. He is a Minister of Jesus Christ, and thereby hath right and power to perform the acts belonging to his office, but for the execution of it, there is required a call thereunto.

This position is opposed and confuted by the fore-named Authours. And in answer to them (but especially to M. Hooker and M. Ellis) This Reverend Minister hath here written a *Refutation*, which he hath done with so much meeknesse,

moderation, ingenuity, perspicuity and learning, that if that holy man of God M. Hooker were alive, I doubt not but he would passe the same judgment upon this Book which hee did upon the former. The truth is, The Question is full of difficulty and intricacy, the path in which he walks is an untrodden path, and the pains which he hath taken in the compiling of this work, and the learning which he hath discovered herein is so great, as I am very confident, *That whosoever reads the Book will commend the Authour and his abilities, though he should not in every thing resent his opinion.* The Scope of the Book is to contend for the extents and rights of Christs Politicall Kingdom in his Church upon earth, and to demonstrate the unity of it, and thereby to lay a foundation of unity between particular Churches, which is as necessary for the preservation of them, as purity and verity. *For a Church divided against it self cannot stand.*

Sad it is to consider, That whereas Jesus Christ hath left two waies for the uniting of Christians, in faith and love; the devill should make use of both of them to disunite and divide us. The first is, *The Sacrament of the Lords Supper*, which was instituted to be a *Feast of Love*, and a *Band of Union* between Christians, but by Satans cunning it hath proved an *apple of strife* and of great contention, not onely between the *Papists* and the *Protestants*, the *Lutherans* and the *Calvinists*, but between us also, and our dissenting brethren. The second is, *The Government of the Church*, which was ordained by Christ to be *νῦν καὶ ἄχρι τοῦ αἰῶνος*, and as a *golden chain* to link them together in purity, verity and unity, to heal breaches, and to make us *mind the same things, and to be perfectly joyned together in the same mind, and in the same judgment,* But by the devills policy ( whose property it is to bring evill out of good ) it is become the great bone of contention, and a *middle wall of partition between Christians and Christians.* This is a *lamentation*, and shall be for a *lamentation.*

But my comfort is, That Jesus Christ came into the world to remove the *wall of partition* that was between Jew and Gentile, and to *make both one*, and he is not only a *foundation stone* for his people to build their faith and hope upon, but also

also a corner stone to unite beleevers one to another. He it is that will shortly remove all these *Wals of partition between brethren*, and will become not onely our Redeemer, but our Peace-maker. For he hath prayd for all those that should beleeve in him, *That they may be one, as thou Father art in me, and I in thee, that they also may be one with us, that the world may believe that thou hast sent me. And the glory which thou hast given me, I have given them, that they may be one even as we are one.* This Prayer will in due time be fulfilled, together with those three soul-comforting Prophecies concerning the times of the New Testament, *Jer. 32. 39. Zeph. 3. 9. Zach. 14. 9.* In the mean time it is our duty to study unity as well as purity. To this the Apostle exhorts us with great earnestnesse and affection, *1 Cor. 1. 10. Phil. 2. 1, 2, 3. Eph. 4. 3, 4, 5, 6.* This the present times call for with a loud voice. And this shall be the care and prayer of

Job. 17. 21.

Your unworthy servant

in the work of the Ministry.

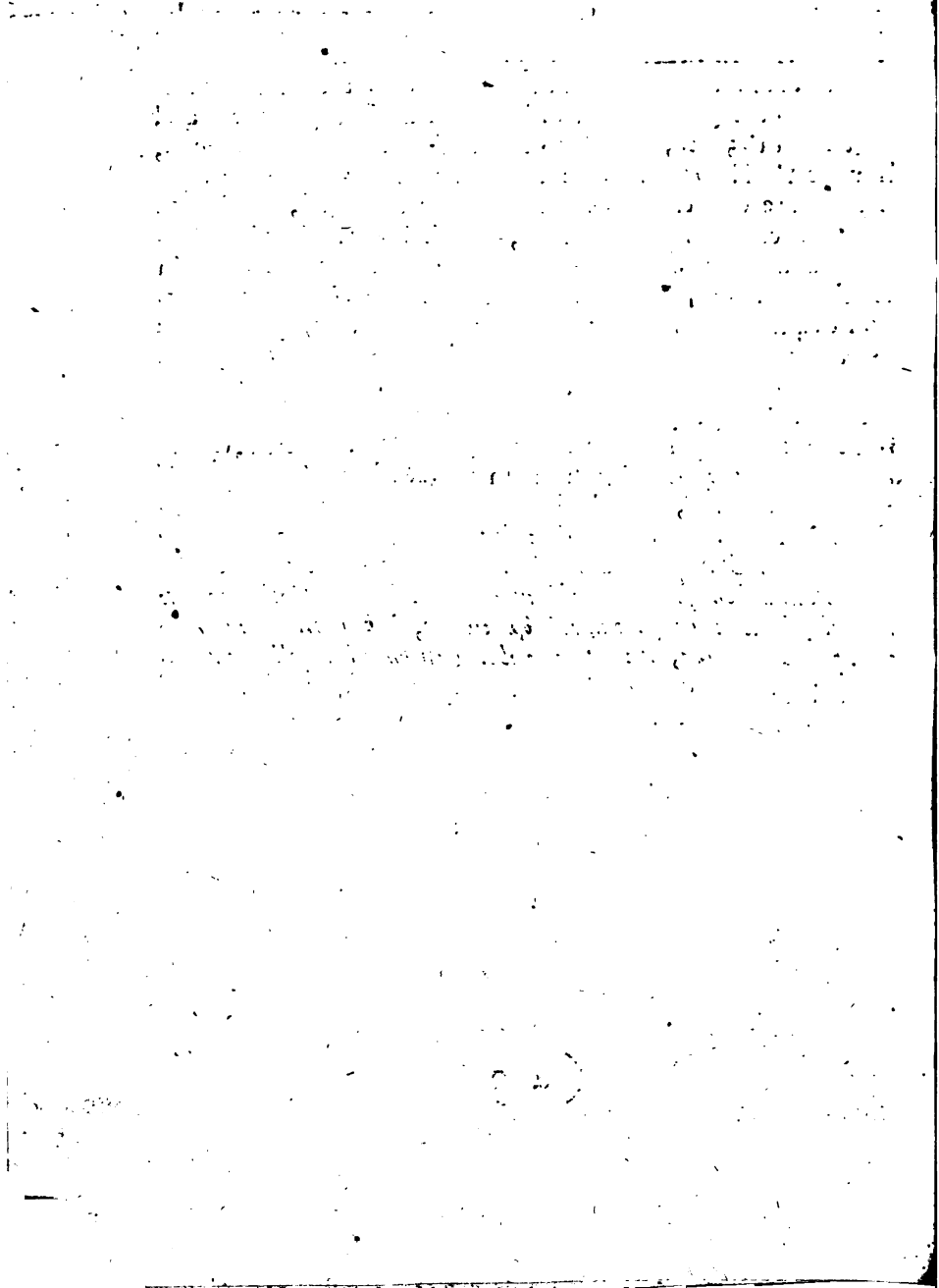
EDMUND GALAMY.

This Leaf being forgotten to be inserted in the former part of this Thesis, it was thought fit to add it here.

M. Norton a reverend Minister in N.E. in his Treatise of the Doctrine of Godliness, printed since his answer to *Apollonius*, defines the Church-Catholick to be the number of the elect and redeemed, whom God hath called out of the world unto a supernaturall estate and communion of grace and glory with himself in Jesus Christ. And affirms, that there is but one Catholick Church, because there is but one faith. And then comes to distinguish this Catholick Church in respect of its extent into invisible and visible. And then defines a visible Church to be a similar part of the Catholick Church, consisting of a competent number knit together by way of visible Covenant, to exercise an holy communion with God in Christ, and so one with another, according to the order of the Gospell. And then distinguisheth this visible Church into pure and impure; impure into three branches, viz. Simply erring, Schismaticall, Heretical. And then makes the matter of this visible Church to be Saints &c. visible believers. From whence wee have these conclusions. 1. That there is a Church-Catholick which is but one. 2. That this Church Catholick is visible, yea, let me add further out of his answer to *Apollonius*, *Politica visibilitatis Aspectu Ecclesia Catholica*, pag. 87. i. e. Political visibility is an adjunct in respect of the Church Catholick. 3. That this Church-Catholick is an integral. 4. That the particular Churches are similar parts of that integral. 5. That these particular Churches consist of visible believers, which as himself in his answer to *Apollonius*, confesseth are not all Saints in truth, *οὐ πάντες ἀγίοι*, but many of them onely *οὐ πάντες*, in appearance. 6. That some of these visible Churches may be impure, not only simply erring, but schismaticall, yea, hereticall.

But (saying my honorable respect to so worthy a man) I cannot see how these things are consistent with his definition of the Church-Catholick: for how can the Church-Catholick consist onely of the elect redeemed ones, called out of the world into a supernaturall estate, and yet the particular Churches which

which are similar ( and constituent ) parts of it, consist of members that are ( many of them ) only Saints in appearance, and not in truth ; yea, some whole Churches erring, schismaticall, heretical. Now such matter as the particular visible Churches, which are the members of the Catholick consist of ; such must the Church-Catholick consist of, which is the similar integral. And though such as are onely Saints in appearance, and not in truth, are said by M. Norton in his answer to Apollonius, p. 87. to be equivocall members of particular Churches, yet are they as truly members of the whole as they are of the parts, and they are so far true as that their externall communion and administrations ( if any such be Officers ) are true and valid, both in respect of the particular Churches, and the Catholick, *quoad externum statum*. And it is his own rule, *Resp.* p. 88. *Quicquid inest parti inest toti*, that which is in the part is in the whole. And again he saith *Ecclesia Catholica & Ecclesia particulares communicant essentiâ & nomine : & Ecclesia particulares, pro variis earum rationibus habent se ut partes & ut adjuncta Ecclesia Catholica. Ex natura, & ex ratione sunt ut res quosopius, i. e. similes : ut mare appellatur aqua, ita & qualibet gutta maris appellatur aqua.* *Resp.* pag. 87. therefore they must needs consist of the same kind of matter, as they are both visible.





# A T A B L E

Of the chief things contained in this Tractate.

## CHAPTER. I.

*The explication of the terms of the Question. Page. 1.*

### Section 1.



*What is meant by Ecclesia or Church.*

*It is taken in a civill and theologicall sense.*

*In a theologicall sense.:*

1. *Primarily and properly for the whole company of the elect, which is called the Invisible Church.* 2.
- 2 *For the company of visible beleivers.*
- 3 *For the members as distinct from the Officers of the Church.*
- 4 *For the Elders or Governours of the Church as distinct from the body.* 3
- 5 *For the faithfull in some one family.* 4

### Section 2.

*What is meant by visible.*

*The distinction of the visible and invisible Church opened.*

*The difference between visible & visum.*

*The Churches mentioned in the N. T. were visible Churches.* 6

*An objection of the absurdity of wicked mens being members of the body of Christ, answered by a distinction of Christs body.*

*The distinction of the Church into visible and invisible is not exact.* 8

*The invisible members of the Church are also visible.*

*What a Church visible is.* 9

*The description vindicated from some objections against it.* 10

Section 3.

# The Table.

## Section 3.

<i>What is meant by Catholick, universal, or oecumenicall.</i>	11
<i>Four acceptations of the word Catholick, and which of them suit the question</i>	
<i>What the universall visible Church is.</i>	12
<i>Diverse descriptions of it, and quotations out of Divines both ancient and modern about it.</i>	13
<i>What a National Church is.</i>	15
<i>Diverse proofs from Scripture for a Nationall Church under the Gospell.</i>	
<i>The description of a particular visible Church given by Gersom Bucerus, scanned.</i>	17
<i>M. Gorton's description of a visible.</i>	18
<i>Four Quarries about it propounded.</i>	
1. <i>Whether the matter of it consisteth only of Saints called out of the world?</i>	
2. <i>Whether every particular visible Church be a mysticall body of Christ, or but only a part of it, seeing Christ hath but one mysticall body, in the same sense?</i>	
3. <i>Whether the form of a particular visible Church be a particular Covenant?</i>	19
4. <i>Whether all the Ordinances of God can be enjoyed in a particular visible Church?</i>	20
<i>Which for some of them findeth very inconvenience.</i>	
<i>And for others impossible.</i>	
<i>M. Nortons description of a particular Church.</i>	22
<i>A Congregational Church standing alone, hardly found in the New Testament.</i>	

## Section 4.

<i>What is meant by Prima vel Secundaria Scriptura</i>	23
<i>The primity of the Church-Catholick in severall respects</i>	24
<i>The difference between this question and M. Parkers.</i>	

## Chapter 5.

<i>Proofs by Scripture for a Church Catholick visible.</i>	25
--	----

## Section 1.

<i>Our Divines in answer to the Papists, mean by Church Catholick the invisible Churchmanly.</i>	26
--	----



## The Table.

*That there also an external visible Kingdom of Christ, as well as an  
internall and invisible.*

*M. Hookers acknowledgment of a politicall body or Kingdom of  
Christ on earth.* 27

*D. Ames testimonie of a Church-Catholick visible.* 28

### Section. 2.

*Diverse proofs out of the Old Testament for a Church-Catholick,  
visible.* 29

### Section 3.

*Diverse proofs out of the New Testament for a Church-Catholick,  
visible.* 31

*Act. 8. 3. and Gal. 1. 13. vindicated.*

*Act. 2. 47. vindicated.* 33

*1 Cor. 10. 32. vindicated.* 35

*Gal. 4. 26. opened.* 37

*Eph. 4. 10. vindicated.* 38

### Section 4.

*1 Cor. 12. 28 vindicated.* 39

*Two answers of M. Hookers concerning this text considered.* 40

*Diverse answers to this text by M. Ellis, refuted.* 41

*An Objection of M. Hookers about Deacons set in the same Church  
where Apostles were set, answered.* 51

### Section 5.

*1 Tim. 3. 15. vindicated.* 53

*Diverse texts vindicated where the Church-Catholick is called the  
Kingdome of God and the Kingdome of heaven,* 55

*M. Hookers answer to those texts considered.*

*1 Cor. 15. 24. vindicated.* 56

*Heb. 12. 28. vindicated.* 57

### Section 6.

*1 Cor. 5. 12. vindicated.* 58

*Eph. 4. 4, 5. vindicated.* 59

*Mat. 16. 18. vindicated.* 60

*M. Hookers acknowledgment that this text is meant of the visible  
Church.* 61

*3. Ep. of John ver. 10. vindicated.* 62

## The Table.

### Chapter 3.

*Proofs by arguments and reason that there is a Church-Catholick visible.*

64

#### Section 1.

- 1 From Gods donation unto Christ of an universal Kingdom.
- 2 From Gods intention in sending Christ, and the tenour of Gods exhibition of Christ in his Word to the whole world.
- 3 From the general preaching and receiving of the Gospel.
- 4 From the general Charter whereby the Church is constituted.

65

66

#### Section. 2.

- 5 From the generality of the Officers of the Church, and general donation of the Ministry
- 6 From the general vocation wherewith, and general Covenant whereinto all Christians are called.
- 7 From the generality of the initial seal, admittance and enrolment
- 8 From the external catholick union between all visible Christians.

67

68

69

70

#### Section 3.

- 9 From the individual systeme or body of laws (proceeding from the same authority) whereby the whole is governed.
- 10 From the general, external communion, intercourse and communication between all Christians.
- 11 From the general extension of excommunication.
- 12 If there be parts of the Church-Catholick there is a whole.

71

73

#### Section 4.

*Many metaphors in Scripture setting forth the whole Church under an unity.*

74

### Chapter 4.

*That the Church-Catholick visible is one Integrally or Totum Integrally.*

#### Section 1.

- First, Negatively, that it is not a Genus.*
- 1 Because a Genus is drawn by mental abstraction of species, but the Catholick visible is made up by conjunction or apposition of the several members.
  - 2 A Genus hath no existence of its own, which the Church-Catholick visible hath.

77

## The Table.

- 3 *It appears by the definition of a Genus, both according to the Rarrits and Aristotelians, neither of which can agree to the Church-Catholick,*

### Section 2.

*Secondly, Affirmatively, that it is an Integral.* 79

- 1 *Because it hath an existence of its own, which no Genus hath.*
- 2 *Because the particular Churches constitute the Oecumenical, which hath partes extra partes.*
- 3 *Because it is made up not onely of particular Churches, but of particular believers also.*
- 4 *Because it hath accidents and adjuncts of its own, existing in it.*

80

*It is capable of being greater or lesse.*

*It is mutable and fluxile.*

81

*It is measured by time and place.*

### Section 3.

- 5 *Because it hath admission into it, nutrition and edification in it, and ejection out of it.*
- 6 *Because it hath an head and Governour of the same nature, as man, and Officers on earth, that are habitually indefinite Officers to the whole.*
- 7 *Because it hath actions and operations of the whole*
- 8 *It appears by the several appellations given to it in the Scripture,*

84

- 9 *It appears by the Scripture-expressions of the union of the members of the wole Church.*

86

- 10 *Because the invisible Church may in some sense be called an Integral, therefore much more the visible.*

87

### Section 4.

*An Objection from the possible contraction of the Church-Catholick into narrow limits, answered.*

*Whether every essential predication will make the arguments to be Genus and Species.*

89

*Whether the right to the Ordinances and privileges of the Church arise from the common nature and qualifications in believers, or from a Covenant.*

90

*If from a Covenant, whether from a particular Covenant between man and man, or the general Covenant between God and man.*

## The Table.

<i>The variation of situation or accidents vary not the species.</i>	91
<i>The method of conveyance of the right of Church-priviledges asserted.</i>	94
<i>The particular Churches are familiar parts and parcels of the Church-Catholick;</i>	95
<i>As the severall Synagogues were of the Jewish Church.</i>	
<i>Meer cohabitation makes not a man a member of a Church.</i>	
<i>Yet for a visible believer to inhabit within the limits of any particular Church, and not to be a member of it, implyeth it either to be no Church, or a very corrupt one.</i>	96
<b>Chapter. 5.</b>	
<i>That the Church-Catholick is visible.</i>	97
<b>Section 1.</b>	
<i>There is an invisible company or Church of Christ.</i>	
<i>But that is not meant in this Question.</i>	
<i>Four distinctions of Visible.</i>	98
<i>What kind of visibility is here meant.</i>	
<b>Section 2.</b>	
<i>Arguments to prove the Church-Catholick to be visible.</i>	
1 <i>Because the matter thereof is visible.</i>	99
2 <i>Their conversion is visible.</i>	
3 <i>Because their profession, subjection, obedience and conversations are visible.</i>	100
4 <i>Because the Officers of the whole Church are visible.</i>	101
5 <i>Because the admittance into, and ejection out of the whole, are visible.</i>	102
<b>Section 3.</b>	
6. <i>Because the Doctrine, Laws, Ordinances, and Covenant of the whole are visible.</i>	
<i>An Objection of M. Hooker against this, answered.</i>	103
7. <i>Because all the administration, dispensations, and operations of the whole are visible.</i>	
<i>An Objection against this, answered.</i>	
8. <i>Because it is our duty to joyn our selves visibly thereto.</i>	104
9. <i>Because the accidents of the whole Church are visible.</i>	
10. <i>Because the severall parts of the whole Church are visible.</i>	105
<b>Section. 4.</b>	
<i>Some Objections of M. Ellis answered.</i>	

## The Table.

*The Church-Catholick which our Divines in opposition to the Papists speak of, is not the same with this which is meant in this question.*

107

*Neither can that Church-Catholick be considered as a Genus, which this is affirmed by our brethren to be.*

109

### Section 5.

*An Objection against the visibility of the Church-Catholick, because it wants an existence of its own; answered.*

111

*Another Objection from the necessity of the whole to meet together sometimes, answered.*

113

*Some exceptions of M. Ellis answered*

*About general Councils and their power*

116

### Section 6.

*Another Objection from the necessity of a visible head of the Church-Catholick visible, answered.*

117

*How Christ may be said to be a visible head.*

118

*Some exceptions against Christs visible headship, answered.*

119

*Another Objection, viz. that the Church-Catholick is an Article of our faith, and therefore cannot be visible, answered.*

121

## Chapter 6.

*That the Church-Catholick visible is an Organical, yet similar body.*

*Yea, one Organical body.*

123

### Section 1.

*That particular Churches are, or ought to be organized.*

### Section 2.

*That particular Churches thus organized are similar integral parts of the whole.*

124

*This assertion vindicated from M. Ellis's charge of a contradiction.*

*The similarity of the Churches asserted by D. Ames and M. Bartlet, &c.*

125

*Is neither crossish in its own scope, nor Apollonius, as is suggested.*

126

### Section 3.

*The Church-Catholick is one Organical body.*

127

*The distinction of the Church into Entire and Organical.*

*Whether the Church or the ministry be first.*

128

*An explication how the Church-Catholick may be said to be one Organ-  
nicall body, and how not.* 129

Section 4.

*Arguments to prove the Church-Catholick one Organisall body.*

1. *From the metaphors whereby it is set out in Scripture.* 131  
*It is set out by a naturall body.* 133  
*By a politicall body; as a Kingdome, City, Army.*  
*By an Oeconomical body.* 134
2. *Because a baptized person is admitted a member of the whole.*  
*Also because excommunication ejecteth out of the whole.*  
*Certificates indeed were sent from one Church to another to signify*  
*the inflicting of the censure, but no new act passed.*
3. *It appears by the Identity of the Covenant, Charter, Promises, and*  
*Laws of the whole.* 135
4. *By the generall communion that all the members of the Church-*  
*Catholick have indefinitely with other members or Churches, where-*  
*ever providence cast them.* 136
5. *From the opposition which the adversaries of the Church make a-*  
*gainst it as one organisall body.* 137

Section. 5.

6. *By the indefiniteness of the Office of Ministers.*  
*This indefiniteness appears.*
    1. *From the generality of the Donation, Institution and Commis-*  
*sion of the Evangelicall Ministry.* 138  
*They bear a double relation, one to the whole Church, another to the*  
*particular.* 139
- M. Rutherford, M. Ball, Crakenthorp, and Salmasius cited.* 140

Section 6.

2. *From the subject matter whereabout their office is exercised, which*  
*is common to all.* 141
3. *From the end of the ministeriall function, which cannot otherwise*  
*be attained.* 142
4. *From the actions which every Minister doth perform, by virtue of*  
*his office, indefinitely.* 143

Section 7.

5. *From the double relation which private members bear, one to the*  
*whole, another to the particular Church.* 147

6. *From*

## The Table.

6. *From the great absurdities which otherwise will follow.* 148

### Section 8.

Obj. *Then ordinary Ministers differ nothing from Apostles and Evangelists, answered.* 150

### Chapter. 7.

*About Combinations of particular Congregations in Classes, and of them in Synods.* 151

### Section 1.

*A double integrality of the Church, First, Entitive. Secondly, Organical.*

*A double combination, one habitually, another actual.* 152

### Section 2.

*The combining of particular Congregations into a Classis.* 153

*Scripture-proofs and Instances thereof.* 154

*Reasons to prove the necessity of it.* 156

### Section 3.

*Concerning Synods.* 158

*The authors that handle this subject,*

*The nature, kinds and authority of Synods.* 159

### Section 4.

*A threefold power of Synods, Dogmaticall, Diatactical, Criticall.* 160

*A ground of a Synod in Scripture, acknowledged by our Protestant Divines.* 161

*The Synod A.D. 15. exerted all those three kinds of power.* 162

### Section 5.

*About the equality of power of single Congregations.* 163

*Their subordination to the combined.* 164

*This subordination is also a coordination.*

*Scripture-proofs for this subordination.*

*And reasons for it.* 165

*The like subordination found in the Jewish Church.*

*And is dictated by lights of nature, and common to all Societies.*

### Section. 6.

*Divers Objections answered. As,* 166

Obj. *Then there must be 2 kinds of Presbyteries.*

*Then every particular Minister hath a very transcendent power and authority.* 167

Then

## The Table.

<i>Then they are standing-Officers of the Christian world,</i>	168
<i>Then they are Christs Vicars general.</i>	169

### Section 7.

<i>Then the Church of the whole world should choose every Officer.</i>	170
<i>Diverse exceptions of M. Ellis's.</i>	171

### Section 8.

<i>Then the whole is to honour and contribute to the maintenance of every Minister.</i>	173
<i>Then the Ministers perform not their whole office to the Congregation that maintains them.</i>	174
<i>This will be too great a burthen for Ministers to meddle in the affairs of many Congregations.</i>	174
<i>Then Ministers exercise rule where they do not ordinarily preach, so the keys should not be commensurable.</i>	175

### Section 9.

<i>This was a grand objection formerly against the Bishops, that they ruled where they preached not.</i>	176
<i>Then great and stubborn persons will never be brought to censure.</i>	176
<i>This will occasion much trouble and charge to the party grieved.</i>	177
<i>Synods are in danger of erring as well as particular memberships.</i>	177

### Section 10.

<i>The liberty of appeals proved.</i>	177
<i>But why then should Christ let his Church want general Councils so long.</i>	178
<i>But how then dare particular Churches abrogate the decrees of general Councils.</i>	179

## Chapter 8.

<i>An answer to M. Ellis's Prejudices, Probabilities, and Demonstrations against an universall, visible (and as he calls it) governing (but should have said organicall) Church, And his wrong stating of the Question rectified.</i>	180
---	-----

### Section 1.

<i>What M. Ellis denyeth to be the question.</i>	180
<i>1. He saith it is not meant of the essential oneness.</i>	180
<i>Ans. But this is meant, and is the foundation of the other.</i>	180



## The Table.

2. It is not (saith he) meant of engagement to mutual care one of another. 182

Ans. Not amicitia or fraternall only, but authoritative, the greater part to regulate the less.

3. Nor is it meant (saith he) of a voluntary association, as occasion requires for mutual assistance.

Ans. Their association, though it be necessary, yet it is voluntary, but not arbitrary.

4. Nor is it meant (saith he) whether all or most Churches may occasionally become one by messenger, in a general Council. 183

Ans. This is the highest effect this unity produceth.

### Section. 2.

What M. Ellis grants in this question.

1. An authoritative power from Christ to make directions and rules, to which the conscience is bound to submit, and which are to be obeyed, not only because materially good, but because formally theirs.

Ans. This is even as much as the Presbyterians desire.

But this he denies to be done by Church-Officers, as Officers. 184

2. If the universal Church were compenible, he grants what is contended for.

Ans. The parts may rule themselves (being simillar) as well as the whole, the whole. 185

### Section 3.

M. Ellis's corrupt stating of the question in diverse places. 186

Apollonius and the London-Ministers vindicated. 187

The particular Churches act not by commission from the general. 188

The whole company of Christians on earth are not in their ordinary settled Church-constitution, one single actuall Corporation, but habitually. 189

Yet there may be causes to draw the Officers of many Congregations together, yea, haply some Officers from the whole Church, if it could be, occasionally. 190

The Ministers are not actuall Ministers of the whole Church, but habitually.

They are given to the whole Church, as the Levites to the whole house of Israel. 191

# The Table.

## Section 4.

*Answers to M. Ellis's prejudices, probabilities, and demonstrations.*

192

*His Objection of novelty, answered.*

*That the Church is one habitually, and that the particular Churches bear the relation of members to it, is not novel.*

*That the Ministers are Ministers beyond their own Congregations, and can perform duties authoritatively, is not novel.*

*Diverse instances given thereof out of Scripture.*

*Diverse Canons regulate Ministers in the exercise of their functions abroad, but none deny them power.*

193

*Diverse instances out of antiquity.*

194

*Frequent conventions of Synods and Councils anciently, and their acting authoritatively.*

196

*Five answers of M. Ellis's herewith, considered of.*

197

## Section 5.

*M. Ellis's witnesses against the unity and integrality of the Church considered, viz. Chrysostome, Clemens, Alexandrinus, Cyprian, Augustine, Eucherius, and the Council of Trent.*

198

*That it is not novel in respect of Protestant Divines.*

201

*Some quotations out of Calvin, &c.*

202

## Section. 6.

*M. Ellis's prejudice from the dangerous consequences of this opinion, answered.*

203

## Section 7.

*Another prejudice that it is Papal and Antiprotestant, answered.*

205

## Section 8.

*M. Ellis's arguments answered.*

206

*His first argument from the silence of the Scripture herein.*

2. *From the institution of Christ.*

207

3. *From the first execution of the greatest act of intire power exercised in a particular Congregation, 1 Cor. 5.*

208

4. *Because intire power was committed to particular men, viz. the Apostles severally, and to all jointly.*

5. *From the reproofs given by Christ to the seven Churches of Asia, in the Revelations.*

Section

## The Table.

### Section 9.

*His second sort of arguments from the matter and members of the Church, answered,* 209

### Section 10.

*A third sort of arguments is from the form and nature of all bodies & corporations, which consist of superiour and inferiour answered,* 210  
*Six pretended inconveniences answered.* 211

### Section 11.

*A fourth sort of arguments from the authours of this opinion, answered.* 212  
*An objection that the whole world is one humane society, and yet this makes them not one Kingdom politically, answered.* 213

## The second Question.

*Whether the Church-Catholick visible, or the particular Churches be first.*

### Section 1.

*What kinde of priority is meant here?* 216

1. *Negatively, not a priority of time.*
2. *Not in regard of constitution by aggregation and combination.*
3. *Not in regard of ordinary operation.*

*But positively, the visible Church-Catholick is prime.*

1. *In Gods intention.* 217
2. *In regard of Gods Institution.*
3. *In regard of Gods denation of Ordinances and priviledges.*
4. *In regard of dignity.*
5. *In regard of perfection.*
6. *In regard of the essence or eminentness.*
7. *In regard of efficient ministerial causality.* 218
8. *In regard of distinct and perfect knowledge or noscibility.*

*The difference between ortum and secundarium,*

### Section 2.

*The first argument for the priority of the visible Church-Catholick from the names that are given to the Church in Scripture.* 219

## The Table.

The second argument is because the Covenant, Promises, Laws and Privileges primarily belong to the Catholic Church.

The Covenant, commission for gathering the Evangelical Church, the promises made to it, and laws of it, proved to be universal. 220.

The Privileges are also Catholic.

1. Federal holiness is a privilege of the Catholic Church, 221

2. Right to the Ordinances of Christ. 222

Proved in regard of baptism. 223

And the Lord's Supper. 224

Hearing of the Word, and joining in Prayer. 225

The Query about the Ordinance of Discipline dismissed. 226

1. Every member of the Church (though but enquirer) is bound to submit thereto.

2. Every Minister hath an habitual indefinite power annexed to his office to administer them.

3. The Ordinances of discipline were first given to general Pastors. 227

4. The censures dispensed have influence into the whole Church.

5. Otherwise great inconveniences will follow.

6. All polities administer justice to strangers offending within their limits.

And the like power must be allowed to Ecclesiastical polities.

### Section 3.

The third argument is because Christ's Officers are first intended for, and executed on the Church-Catholic. 228

The fourth argument is because the signs to difference the true Church from a false, belong primarily to the whole. 229

The fifth argument is because all the members are members of the Church-Catholic primarily. 230

Both those that are born members, and those converted.

This illustrated by three similitudes. 231

### Section 4.

The sixth argument is because the Ministers are primarily Ministers of the Church-Catholic. 232

Diverse proofs hereof.

The absurd consequences of binding the Ministers office to his particular.

icular Congregation only.	233
The Ministers office and power ceaseth not by the dissolution of his particular flock.	235
An Objection against this by M. Allen, and M. Shepherd, taken from the ceasing of the ruling Elder or Deacons office, at such dissolution, answered.	236
It appears because the censure of excommunication inflicted by particular Officers, reacheth the whole Church visible.	237
The distinctions of formally and virtually, and of antecedenter & consequenter, discussed.	238
It appears also because particular Officers admit into the Church-Catholick by Baptism.	239
Baptizing is an act of the ministeriall office.	
All are baptized into one body.	
Many examples of persons baptized without relation to any particular Congregations.	
Though it be objected that this was done by extraordinary Officers, yet this salves it not, because if it be an Ordinance belonging to particular, congregational members, these being not so, they could have no right to receive it, no jus in re.	240
Some are called Ministers in Scripture in regard of more Congregations then one.	241
And ruled in common over more Congregations then one.	

### Section 5.

The seventh argument is, because every Christian bears his first relation to the Church-Catholick, and that relation continueth last, and cannot be broken off without sin.	242
Hence strangers tried where they reside for the present.	
Ephesus commended for trying strangers, Rev. 2. 2.	
Her communion is a sentence denounced against strangers.	
Heresicks and false teachers not fixed must not be suffered.	
It is no sin to remove from one Congregation to another.	243
The eighth argument is, because particular Churches spring from the Church-Catholick, and are an additament thereto.	244
The Church-Catholick is as the main Ocean, and the particular as the Arms thereof.	
A double rise of particular Churches out of the Catholick.	245

## The Table.

- First, they are made up of members of the Church-Catholick, i. e. of visible believers.*
- Secondly, they find the Church-Catholick constituted and invested before their addition.*
- First, the Church-Catholick is instrumental to their conversion.*
- Secondly, and gives them ministerially their admittance, both into the Church entire and organical.*

### Section 6.

- What is sufficient in foro externo to make a man a member of the Church Catholick visible.* 246
- The absurdities of accounting true believers only members of the visible Church.*
- Apollonius and M. Norton cited.*
- Obj. Holiness of dedication is founded on holiness of sanctification, answered.* 247
- Instances out of the Old and New Testament for the contrary.*
- Personal and Ecclesiastical judgment differ.* 248
- The rules of the invisible Church serve not for the visible.*
- There are the same qualification for the members of the Church-Catholick visible, as for the particular Churches.* 249
- Two Objections against the priority of the Church-Catholick, answered.* 250
- The conclusion of the premises.* 253

### Section 7.

- Corollaries from the former Thesis.* 254
- 24 Corollaries concerning the Church-Catholick.*
- 12 Concerning particular Churches.* 255
- 7 Concerning the publick Officers of the Church.* 256
- 12 Concerning private members.* 257

### Section 8.

- An application of the Thesis bewailing our division.* 258
- First, in judgment.* 259
- Diverse errors reckoned up that are broached.*
- Secondly, in heart and affections.* 260
- Thirdly, in way or practice.* 261
- An exhortation to unity in all these three respects.* 262

# THE Essence and Unity OF THE Church-Catholick visible, &c.

## QUEST.

*Utrum Ecclesia visibilis universalis sive Oecumenica sit prima, vel secundaria & orta à particularibus?*

Whether the visible Church-Catholick, or the particular Churches be first?

## CHAPTER I.

*The Explication of the Terms.*

**I**N Or the handling of this Question, here are these four terms to be opened. First, What is meant by *Ecclesia, or Church*? Secondly, What by *visibilis, or visible*? Thirdly, What by *universalis, sive oecumenica, or universal and oecumenical*? Fourthly, What by *prima and orta, or the first Church, and that which riseth of it or secondary*?

First, What a Church is? The word Church is taken in a *civill or theological sense*. In a *civill sense*, for a company of people summon'd, or gathered together for some civil affairs, *Act. 19. 39. It shal be determined in a lawfull assembly*: the word in the Original is *ἐκκλησία*, a Church. Yea even the rout met together, *Act. 19. 41. is called Ecclesia, ἀσπασει τὴν ἐκκλησίαν*, He dismissed the assembly; or the Church, as the word is in the Original.

Secondly, in a *theological sense*, it signifieth a company of people that are called, or to be called and joined together, standing in some spiritual relation to God And so the word is taken diversly.

First,

Chap. I.

First and most properly, for the whole company of the elect, as they are opposed to the reprobates, whether Jew or Gentile: and in this sense it is taken, Eph. 5. 25. 26. *As Christ loved the Church and gave himself for it, that he might cleanse it with the washing of water by the Word.* So ver. 23, 27. and 32. Again, Col. 1. 18. *His body the Church.*

*Interdum cum Ecclesiam nominant, eam intelligunt quæ re-  
verà est coram Deo, in quam nulli recipiuntur nisi & adoptionis gra-  
tiâ filii Dei sunt, & spiritus. sanctificatione vera Christi mem-  
bra. Ac tunc quidem non tantum sanctos qui in terra habi-  
tant comprehendit, sed electos omnes qui ab origine mundi fue-  
runt.* Calvin Instit. lib. 4. cap. 1. sect. 7. where you may see more of this subject. Of these there are three sorts: The first are elect *uncalled*, which are not actually the Church, but *impe-  
ritiâ*, and in Gods decree: The second sort are *militant*, warring with principalities and powers, with flesh, world, and devill, being actually justified and sanctified persons: The third sort are *triumphant* in Heaven, having finished their course, and are now the spirits of just men made perfect: For the fourth, which the Pa-  
pists make, viz. *Ecclesia dormiens*, in Purgatory, we acknowledge not.

Secondly, the word Church sometimes significeth more then the elect, viz. the multitude of believers whether truly, or in *ap-  
parently*. So Act. 8. 3. *Saul made havoc of the Church,* Act. 12. 1. *Herod stretched out his hands to vex certain of the Church.* Now it is certain that neither Herod nor Saul knew who were elect: but as himself expounded it, *He persecuted this way unto the death.* And he desired letters to Damascus, that if he found any of that way, he might binde them, Act. 9. 2. So Act. 5. 11. *Fear came upon all the Church.* Now it cannot be conceived that they were all elect that feared that judgement of God, So 1 Tim. 5. 16. *Let not the Church be charged with them, that it may relieve widows indeed.* Now we cannot conceive that onely the elect gave collection, but the whole number of professors, which yet are called the Church, *In Ecclesia plurimi sunt permixti hypocrita, qui nihil Christi habent, præter titulum & speciem.* Calvin Institut. lib. 4. cap. 1. sect. 7.

Thirdly, the word Church is sometimes taken for the mem-  
bers



bers of the Church as distinct from the officers, *Act. 15. ver. 22.* Then pleased it the Apostles and Elders with the whole Church. And *ver. 4.* They were received of the Church, and of the Apostles and Elders. And this was before their convention in the Synod. And *Act. 14. 23.* Sect. 1.

Fourthly, the word *Church* sometimes signifieth the Governors of the Church, to whom of right it belongeth to administer and dispense the censures of the Church. *Mat. 18. 17.* If he will not hear them, tell it to the Church, i.e. the Ministerial Church, where Christ seemeth to me to speak of a Church that was in present being among the Jews, because he applies his speech to the capacity of the Jews present, *Let him be to thee as an heathen and Publican*, who might not have communion with Heathens, and would not with Publicans, but Christians might eat and drink with both: and the same course by analogy was to be taken by Christians when they had Churches set up, as it followeth, *ver. 18 19.* Whatsoever ye shall bind on earth, &c.

Now we know that matters of complaint were not among the Jews brought unto the Assembly or body of the people, but to their Elders and Rulers. And the word *Kahal*, which signifieth *Ecclesia* or *Church*, is frequently used in the Old Testament for a Court of Elders, not onely Ecclesiastical, but even civil. See *1 Chron. 13. ver. 1, 2, 4.* And *1 Chron. 29. 1, 10, 20.* And *2 Chron. 29. ver. 28, 31, 32.* And *2 Chron. 30. 2, 4.* called *Psalm. 82. 1.* The Congregation of the Gods. Compare also *Num. 35. 12, 24, 25.* and *Deut. 19. 12.* with *Josh. 20. 4, 6.* By Congregation in one place, is expounded Elders in the other. Also *Exod. 12. 3.* with *v. 21.* *Deut. 31. 28.* *Let my witnesses gather me the Elders*, or *make a Church of Elders.* The same word we find *1 King. 8. 1.* of *Solomon* assembling the Elders of Israel. And *1 Chron. 28. 1.* of *David* assembling the Elders. The Septuagint translate *Kahal Ecclesia*, or *Church*, by *synagoga*, *Prov. 26. 26.* His wickedness shall be shewed before the whole Congregation, i.e. *synagoga*. Compare also *Deut. 23. 1, 2, 3, 8.* No bastard, Ammonite, Moabite, &c. might enter into *Kahal*, the Congregation, which is rendred by the best Divines to be *Consessus Judicum*, the congregation of Judges. For by *Exo. 12. 48, 49.* and *Num. 15. 14, 15.* and *9. 14.* and *Lev. 22. 18.* All strangers upon circumcision were

## Chap. 1.

admitted into the Congregation of the people to offer to God as well as Israelites. Demosthenes used the word *ekklesia*, pro-  
visionally magnanimus, saith Pafor: It is very frequent in the Scrip-  
ture to speak of executing of judgments and justice, and put-  
ting away of evil from the Congregation, indefinitely by ye and  
them, as if it were spoken to the whole Congregation; which  
was done by the Elders and Judges onely, judicially: *Lewia* 19.  
*Deut.* 16: 19. *Jeremi.* 7: 9. *Amos* 5: 15, 18. *Zeph.* 1: 9, 10.  
*1 Cor.* 5: 4, 5 &c. The word *Church* is sometimes used to signify  
the faithful in some one family, *Philos.* 2: 14c. To the Church kindly  
house; Unless those families were the meeting places for the  
Christians that dwelt about, to enjoy the Ordinances of God  
in, because there were no publick meeting-houses built. And  
to this I consent Lincline. The second acceptation of the word  
*Church*, suits best with this question.

Set. 2.

The second term to be opened is, *What is meant by Visible?* The Church is distinguished into *Visible* and *Invisible*, which yet are not two distinct Churches or species of Churches, but it is a distribution of the Subject by the Adjunct, *viz. a duplex modus communionis, externæ & internæ*. Such as have spiritual communion with Christ, *scilicet* inwardly, are said to be *Invisible* members, which are only known to God, and not to men, having this seal, *The Lord knoweth who are his*. Such as have external communion in outward Ordinances *scilicet*, they are called *visible* members, because their communion is visible and apparent. I grant the *internal* communion is *invisible*, but the *external* is as *visible* as of any civil society: and God's Ordinances are as visibly administered, as justice at the Sessions or Assizes; and the profession of Christianity is as *visible* as the profession of any trade: the general calling to be Christians by profession, is as *visible* as the particular calling and trade of life. The inward grace is indeed *invisible*, but the outward administration of the Ordinances, and communion in them, is *visible*, *i. e.* perceptible by the senses. And this external communion in the Ordinances, though it were distributively in the several places where men live (which is confessed by all) would serve my turn for this question which I have in hand. But *visible* taken in the sense which

**М. Едигар**

M. Ellis takes it in, in his *Vindicia Catholica*, for that which *uno intuitu videtur*, is seen with one view, was not my meaning, and therefore to expound it so, which he knows I did not, is to prevaricate; as he charged me, pag. 59. If *visible*, i. e. that which may be seen, and *visum*, that which is seen actually, be the same, then is not the world visible. But when we say the whole world is visible, there is required an act of the mind: we conceive that all countries are visible as well as our own; and if we were there we might see them. They cannot be said to be invisible, because we see them not actually. *Nam visibile est quod videri potest, licet nunquam videtur. Visible is that which may be seen, though it be never actually seen. Videri potest, or may be seen, is referred to the capability of the object to be seen, not to the particular act of every agent at all times. But take visible in his sense, Quod uno intuitu videri potest, as a Kingdom-representative in a Parliament.* Sect. 2.

Is a Parliament only visible to such as do actually see it, and invisible to all others? Is it not *visible* because not *visum*? Men know it may be seen, though they see it not; though they exercise their knowledge only about it, and not their senses, yet that makes it not a *genus*, or *secunda notio*: It is visible, though not actually seen. *Cameron de Ecclesia conspicuitate*, pag. 245. saith the Church is visible as the world is: we cannot see the whole world together, but *secundum partes, successive, non uno obtutu: atamen nulla est pars terre habitabilis qua non possit cerni.*

Now only the invisible company have internal spiritual communion, and are elect; many of those that have external communion and are visible members, shall perish. And yet by reason of their profession are said 2 *Thes.* 1. ver. 1. *To be in God's Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ*, as *Amos* also confesseth, *Ames. mod. lib.* 1. cap. 32. art. 9. Such was the Church of *Corinth* and *Ephesus*, &c. wherein all were not in communion for life. And of such Christ speaketh, *Joh.* 15. 2. *Every branch in me that beareth not fruit, he takes away.* And verse 6. *If a man abideth not in me, he is cast forth as a branch; and is withered, and men gather them, and cast them into the fire, and they are burned.* These are said to be redeemed, 2 *Pet.* 2. 1. denying the Lord that bought them. And sanctified, *Hebr.* 10. 29. *And hath accounted the blood*

*Chap. 1.* of the Covenant wherewith he was sanctified, an unbody thing. And in Pauls exordiums to his Epistles, To the Church of God, to them that are sanctified in Christ Jesus, called to be saints, 1 Corin. 1. ver. 2. These are called the sons of God, Gen. 6. ver. 2. And Deut. 14. ver. 1. It is spoken of Israel in general, *Ye are the children of the Lord your God.* And Gal. 3. 26. *Ye are all the children of God by faith in Christ Jesus.* Now it is not to be conceived that all the members of the Churches in Galatia were true believers. They are called the children of the Kingdom, Mat. 8. 12. i. e. reputed so; but yet many of them were cast out into utter darkness. And Acts 3. 25, *Ye are the children of the Covenant which God made with our fathers.*

Their advantage by being of the visible body was great every manner of way. Rom. 3. ver. 1. 2. To them pertained the adoption, Rom. 9. ver. 4. and the glory, and the Covenant, and the giving of the Law, and the service of God, and the promises. Which adoption is not internal adoption (proper onely to true believers) for it is a privilege belonging to the body of that people; but it is the honour of being separated and reputed the children of God, and so to live under the external Covenant and service of God, and promises, though they had not grace to improve them. They are called, Rom. 11. 17. *branches of the true Olive*, partaking of the root and fatnesse of the Olive, which were broken off, and others ingrafted in their room, which cannot be meant of the invisible company of elect, but the visible Church. God did not blot some out of his book of election, and put others in; or break off any true believers, and graff others in, but onely out of their visible Church, standing, and partaking in outward Ordinances.

*Object.* But is not this absurd, that Christ should have wicked men, who are limbs of Satan, to be of his mystical body? Carnal wicked men to be members of such a gracious, glorious head?

*Answ.* If by mystical body be meant the company of elect, faithful ones, that are knit to Christ by the Spirit on his part, and by faith on their part, and receive spiritual sap and virtue, and grace from Christ internally; it were altogether absurd to suppose any limb of Satan were so: but mystical body is taken in opposition to a natural and civil body. Now draw a word

( as suppose head ) from its *natural* and *proper* signification to a civil use, and head will signifie a King, who is called a civil head, and then draw it to a *theological* use, and it is called a mystical use of that word, and so Christ is called a spiritual or mystical head, and the Church a mystical body. And in this sense mystical and organical are compatible, for both visible and invisible members may be said to be of the mystical body of Christ, though in a different respect in regard of their communion, the one visible onely, the other not onely visibly but also invisibly. And in this sense M. Cotton in his *Doctrine of the Church* calls a particular Church a mystical body of Christ, wherein all are not of the invisible company. And as the body admits of such a distinction, so doth the head also, for Christ affordeth spiritual communion to some inwardly, as well as outwardly by Ordinances, even saving graces and comforts by the Spirit of grace to others only outwardly by Ordinances, and by common works of his Spirit. In the same sense that a visible Church may be called a mystical body of Christ, Christ may also be called a mystical head thereof. As Christ terms himself a Master, for he hath evil, froward, unfaithful servants and stewards; as a King, he hath rebels that will not have him to rule over them, even in his Church, *Mat. 23. 26. Luk. 19. 14.* as a shepherd he hath goats as well as sheep: *Mat. 25. 32.* as a householder he hath vessels of dishonour as well as honour, *2 Tim. 2. 20. Mat. 25. ver. 2.* as a bridegroom he hath foolish virgins as well as wise invited to the wedding: as a husbandman, he hath tares among his wheat, *Mat. 13. 25.* as a fisherman, he hath rubbish in his net as well as good fish, *Mat. 13. 47.* as a vine, he hath unfruitful branches as well as fruitful, *Joh. 15. 6.* Christ saith, my people are foolish, they have not known me, foolish children that have no understanding, that are wise to do evil, but to do good they have no knowledge, *Jer. 4. 22.* yea, stubborn and rebellious people. In the N. T. there were some in the Church of Corinth, *1 Cor. 11.* that had not the knowledge of God, denying the resurrection, guilty of drunkenness at the Lord's table, guilty of fornication and uncleanness, and lasciviousness, and had not repented. And *1st. 1. 16.* Paul speaks of some in the Church, that professed they knew God, but in works denied him, being abominable,

Chap. 1.

disobedient, and to every good work reprobate. And 2 Tim. 3. 5. Having a form of godliness, and denying the power thereof. And Phil. 3. ver. 18, 19. Enemies to the cross of Christ, whose end is destruction, whose God is their belly, whose glory is in their shame, who mind carnally things. See what manner of persons Jude speaks of in 12, 13, and 16 verses. Spots in their feasts of charity, feeding themselves without fear, clouds without water, carried about with winds, trees whose fruit withereth, without fruit, twice dead, plucked up by the roots, raging waves of the sea, foamming out their own shame, wandering stars, at whose reserved the blackness of darkness for ever, murmurers, complainers, walking after their own lusts, &c. Yet these were God's people by dedication and consecration, and God owneth them so. And is it not as absurd for Christ to have such branches as such members?

But though the Metaphor taken from the natural head and members, seem to imply such a strict union and communion as to set forth onely the elect, yet we know that many of them are not called; and so in their natural condition as vile as any, and even the best on earth are but sinful men; yet as it is borrowed from a civil head and political body, it is no absurdity at all. For God himself is head and Governour of all the world, and thereby of devils as well as angels, beasts as well as men, wicked men as well as good, for he is the sovereign ruler over all. And Christ Eph. 1. 22. is said to be head over all things to the Church his body. There is therefore a visible Ecclesiastical body, which may also in some sense be called mystical: and there is also an invisible spiritual body of the elect onely, which is most properly called mystical. There are two Sieves or garbles which God useth, the first is, to sift the world into a visible Ecclesiastical body, over which Christ is a mystical, political, governing head and ruler, and this Sieve is managed by the hands of the Ministers; the second is to sift the visible Ecclesiastical body into a spiritual invisible body; and that is in God's hand onely.

Now we are to know that this distinction of visible and invisible is a very lame one, and the lameness thereof deceiveth many: For whereas all distributions should have their parts distinct and different; and the more opposite the members be, the better

better the distribution is; these two branches of this distinction interfere one with another; and the one comprehends the other. Sect. 2. there the visible comprehend the invisible here in this world, I mean the persons, though not the notions. For though indeed every visible member is not invisible, yet every invisible member in the Church is also visible. *Ad Catholicam Ecclesiam visibilem in terris recipere debemus, quique invisibilis illius cives esse cupimus.* Polani Syntag. lib. 7. cap. 9. *Invisibilis Ecclesia latet in Ecclesia visibili ut pars in toto; si autem que consideres ac eorum vocacionum excusationem, que communis est throvisibili & visibili Ecclesie, habet.*

They that have inward communion with Christ for life, are not taught and nourished only by an inward unction or inspiration, but are fain to have external communion also in the outward Ordinances of God. *De Ecclesia vultum modo agitur, cui Symbolum Apostolicum prescriptum est, non de celesti.* Ram. in Syno. So that this distinction is like the old distinction of *Gratia gratis data*, & *gratia gratis faciens*, whereas *Omnis gratia gratis faciens, est etiam gratia gratis data.*

If invisible had been taken for Saints in heaven, and visible for Saints on earth, it had been a compleat distinction. Or if visible had been taken for a Church conspicuous, flourishing with liberty of Ordinances; and invisible for a Church latent, as under persecutions; and general heresies, then it had been compleat; but the terms are not used in either of those senses, and therefore the distinction halts. So that in what is to be said we must take heed, that by visible we mean not onely such as are hypocrites and reprobates, but those that are also truly godly: not onely such as make external profession of faith, whereby they are differenced from heathens, but such as have inward sincerity also, whereby they are differenced from hypocrites.

The Church visible (I said) is a company of people called or separated by God from Idols to the true religion, and yielding professed subjection to that will, which is true of the godly as well as of the hypocrites. This description is excepted against by some, because it is said to be a separation from Idols, whereas many Atheists and Jews, &c. which worship no Idols, may be comprehended. Church-visible  
verted,

## Chap. I.

verted, and therefore (say they) it had better have been said, called out of the world. But I answer, that that expression would have admitted of as much exception, for there is much of the world in the Church. *I pray not for the world*, saith Christ, *Joh. 17. ver. 9.* which was meant of the reprobate Jews, which yet were in the visible Church. If I had made a description of the invisible Church, it had been right to have said called out of the world, but speaking of the visible Church, Idols are the most proper contradistinct term to the living God, and Idolatry that which onely causeth a divorce between God and a visible Church; and obstinate prophanenesse, which is opposite to the *professed subjection*, mentioned in the description. And though some converted should have been Jews or Atheists, &c. that never were Idolaters, yet my description takes them in, for I mean a separation or call both *privatively* and *negatively*; *privatively*, if they have been Idolaters; *negatively*, though they never were, *i. e.* there must be a disclaiming of Idols *negatively*, though there never were a positive worshipping of them. As if a neuter who never struck in of any side, shall side with one opposite, there must be a disclaiming of the other opposite.

An objection much to this purpose, reverend Mr. Norton hath, *In Respons. ad totam Questionum Syllogem.* p. 115. whereby he would infer, That a Synod is not a Church; his words are these, *Nullus cœtus cujus membrorum vocatio non habet mundum terminum immediatum à quo, & Christum terminum immediatum ad quem, habet sanctè vocatos pro proximâ materiâ. At omnis Synodus est talis cœtus, cujus membrorum vocatio non habet terminum immediatum à quo, &c. Materia Synodi sunt pii & docti viri membra Ecclesiæ.* But with due respect unto him, I conceive, he little considered how much this argument strikes at all the Churches in *New-England*, which are made up of members, not immediately called out of the world, but of members of our Churches in *Old-England*, and by Gods Ministers here converted, and sealed with the seal of the Covenant.

A second exception against it is, Because a Church may be a Church, though they fall to some Idolatry, as the ten Tribes were owned by God as his people though Idolaters. were



I answer, there were seven thousand in *Israel* in the worst times, that lived *latent* among the idolaters, who never bowed the knees to Baal, nor kissed him, and God might own the people for their sakes, being the better part, though the less. Secondly, though God doth not divorce a Church for all idolatry, yet they deserve it. And at last came forth the sentence of *Lo-ammi* and *Lo-ruhamah* against the ten Tribes for it, *Hosea chap. 1. ver. 6. 9.* Thirdly, I answer: it may be *vera Ecclesia*, (as is said of the Church of *Rome* by some) but not *vera & pura*; and it was needfull for me, as near as I could, to give a description of a true Church. But I will not contend with any about this description, you may take a more comprehensive description. A visible Church may be described to be a company of those that own or do profess the doctrine of Christ, Or, such as profess the true Religion.

The third term to be opened is, *Catholick, universall* or *Oecumenicall*. The word *Catholick* is frequently given to such Churches as hold the true doctrine of the Apostles, and in that sense it is the same with *Apostolical*, as it is opposed to heretical, and so we find it frequently used in *Eusebius, Socrates, and Sozomen*. So *Damasus* is called Bishop of the *Catholick Church* at *Rome*, and *Aurelius* of the *Catholick Church* at *Carthage*, and *Callistus* of the *Catholick Church* at *Pelensium*. And the Council of *Nice*, calls the Bishops of the *Orthodox Churches*, Bishops of the *Catholick and Apostolick Church*. And in that sense I suppose *M. Ellis* intends it in the title of his book which he calls *Vindicat. Catholica*, a sound or *Orthodox vindication*. For if he means by it a general vindication against all that assert a Church *Catholick visible*, he is mistaken therein also; for *M. Bamberford* hath written professedly of my question in both the branches of it, that there is a Church *Catholick visible*, and that it is the prime Church; though I confesse I knew not of it when I printed my *Thesis*. But this signification doth not fully comprehend my meaning of the word. Secondly, *Catholick* is taken for an office in the Church, next under a *Patriarch*, that was at his *Vicar generall*, and is called in *Latine Rationalis*: See *Salmas, de primat. Pap. p. 212.* Thirdly, *Catholick, universall* or *generall* is taken for a logical second notion, abstracted by the

Chap. 1.

the minde of man comprehending diverse different *species* under it. Fourthly, it is taken in the same sense that we use, so take *Oecumenicall*, that which is or may be all over the world. The first and last sense are onely pertinent to this Question, *viz.* the Orthodox Church over all the earth, and especially this latter, and therefore now I have inserted the word *Oecumenicall* into the question.

And in both these senses *Augustine* takes it, who saith, the Church is called Catholick, *Quia universaliter perfecta est, & in nullo claudicat, & per totam orbem diffusa est.* Aug. de Gen. ad lit. cap. 1.

We are to know that the Church of God admitts of severall distinctions from severall accidents. As in reference to the times wherein the Church hath existed, or doth exist, it is distributed into the Church under the *Old Testament*, and the Church under the *New*. And this again is distributed into the *primitive* and *successive*: So in regard of the places where the Church doth exist, or persons of whom it consisteth, it receiveth the distinction of *universall* and *particular*. Now in this question, universall is meant principally in regard of persons and places, and not in regard of time. *The Church-Catholick existing on earth at the same time, is compared with particular Churches existing at the same time also.*

What the universall visible Church is.

*The Universall visible Church, is the whole company of visible believers throughout the whole world.* Now whereas M. Ellis viii. pag. 52. saith, this definition of the Church-Catholick reacheth not the subject of my question, but contains what is of all hands confessed, I answer, I aimed at no more in the first part of my question, but to prove that there is a Church-Catholick visible, which he saith is of all hands confessed, and then I have as much as I desired, namely, the subject of my question granted. But I will further add that which M. Ellis thinketh wanting to make it pertinent to this question, *viz.* That this company is one visible Kingdom of Christ on earth. The Evangelical Church, which is so often called by Christ, the Kingdom of heaven, several men give several descriptions thereof. I shall set down some of their sentences.

Beale

“Ecclesia Dei vivus est columna & firmamentum veritatis, Secti. 3.  
 “toto orbe terrarum diffusa, propter Evangelium quod predica-  
 “tur, sicut dicit Apostolus, in omni creatura qua sub celo est.  
 Aug.

“Sancta Ecclesia nos sumus, sed non sic dico nos, quasi ecce qui  
 “hic sumus, qui me modo auditis, sed quotquot sunt Christiani  
 “fideles in universo terrarum orbe, quoniam a solis ortu usque ad  
 “occasum laudatur nomen Domini. Sic se habet Ecclesia Catho-  
 “lica mater nostra, Aug. Serm 99. Adhuc habet Ecclesia quo cre-  
 “scat donec illud impleatur, Dominabitur a mari usque ad mare. Aug.  
 in Matth.

“Disseminata est Ecclesia super omnem terram. Iren. lib. 3.  
 cap. 11.

“Non altera Romana urbis Ecclesia, altera totius orbis asstiman-  
 “da, Gallia & Bithinia, & persis, & Oriens, & India, & omnes  
 “barbarae gentes, nationes, unum Christum adorant, unum observant  
 regulam veritatis. Si auctoritas queritur, Orbis maior est urbe. Je-  
 rom. ad Evandr.

“Distincti per Orbem Ecclesiarum convenimus, unam Catholicam  
 “faciunt Ecclesiam. Beda in 1 Pet. 2.

“Catholica Ecclesia est illa qua diffusa est per universum orbem.  
 Cyril. Hierosol. Catech. 18.

“Quum unus sit Deus, una fides, unus Dei & hominum Medi-  
 “ator Iesus Christus, unicum Ecclesia caput, consequitur  
 “necessario unam quoque esse Ecclesiam. Beza. conf. fid. cap. 5.  
 art. 2.

“Sepe Ecclesia nomine universam hominum multitudinem in orbe  
 “diffusam designamus, qua unum se Deum & Christum colere prefi-  
 “terur. Calv. Instit. l. 4. c. 1. §. 7.

“Est Congregatio omnium per orbem universum qui consensu fide  
 “Evangelica. Bulling.

“Est ceteris hominum Christum suum regem sacerdotem, & prophe-  
 “tam profitentium. Keckerm.

“In Novo Testamento, vocamus Ecclesiam pro omnibus qui Christo  
 “nomen dederunt. Zuingl.

“Universa multitudo Christianorum qua se fidelem censet, facit  
 “unum fidelis populus, una Ecclesia dicitur. Idem.

chap. I.

“Ecclesia significat totum illam omnium multitudinem,  
 “quæ generatim ex vocatione, & professione externa æstimatur.  
 Trele.

“Ecclesia Catholica ex hominibus unius temporis, qst. Cætus eo-  
 “rum omnium, qui doctrinam Evangelii de Jesu Christo in carne jam  
 manifestato per universam mundum profitentur. Dicitur in euan-  
 “gelio Heb. 2. 5. I. e. mundus ille futurus, quem prædicaverunt  
 propheta, & prius advenit Christi inchoatus, &c. Polani, Syntag.  
 lib. 7. c. 7.

“Statuimus Ecclesiam quandam universalem externam per sa-  
 “tam urbem dispersam, nobis in sacris literis describi, quæ visibilis  
 “quidam politia unicuique Ecclesiasticum Organicum corpus consti-  
 “tuit, sub quo omnes Ecclesie particulares Classicales Provinciæ  
 “& Nationales tanquam partes totius continentur. Apollonius  
 “pag. 29.

“Ubi cunq; & quandocunq; fuerint homines Apostolicâ fide infor-  
 “mati, Christianam Electorum rem publicam constituunt, etiam si  
 “dispersi in omnes orbis partes. Sic Antoninus, Philolephus, &c.  
 “Romani dixerunt esse, quicunq; Romanis legibus viveret. Ita quicunq;  
 “Christianis legibus moribusq; vivit, ubicunq; sit nihil interest, si-  
 “visibilis Christianus, & ad publicum de regendâ civitate Dei consi-  
 lium adhibendus, ut Ecclesia Catholica disciplina Catholica sit. Ram-  
 de Ecclesiæ.

“Against these testimonies M. Ellis saith pag. 5. that I bring  
 the description of the visible Church out of severall Authors,  
 none of which, except Apollonius and Ramus, take it in my  
 sense.

Ans. They all imply a Church-Catholick, and that to be vi-  
 sible, and this Church-Catholick visible, to be one, which is all  
 I brought them for.

And whereas he seeks to blast Apollonius because he was pre-  
 engaged, I answer, It is more then I know, he is still alive, and may  
 answer for himself. And against Pet. Ramus he alledgeeth a clause  
 out of Beza's ep. before Arminius Organ. But I could cite much  
 more in his commendation out of others, but I write not to com-  
 mend him; ~~videtur quantum~~ Unde potest, I am sure I have cause to  
 blesse God for him.

Sometimes, saith B. field, Church signifies a company of men  
 in.

in one City or Province, that did outwardly profess the true religion, 1 Cor. 11. 18. 22 And so usually in the writings of Divines, the company throughout the world, so professing, is called the visible Church, *Befeld on Act. 9.* Sect. 3.

Catholick in the most evident sense agreeth to the Church now under the Gospel, since the partition wall between Jews and Gentiles was broken down, and yet in some sense it may agree to the Church from the beginning. *Idem.*

For particular Churches, either single or combined, either National, Provincial, Classical, or Congregational, it is not belonging to this question to discuss the Queries about them; and therefore I shall only set down some descriptions of them positively, as they are usually taken by others, and give you my present apprehensions of them.

*A Nationall Church is where all the visible, publick, religious Assemblies of a Nation, being parts of the Church-Catholick, living under one politick, civil government, are by the profession of the same faith, and communion in the same worship and government, united into one body Ecclesiastick, or Ecclesiasticall Republick.* Two things (as I conceive) are required to make a National Church. First, National agreement in the same faith and worship. Secondly, Nationall union in one Ecclesiasticall body, in the same community of Ecclesiasticall government. The Churches in France and the Netherlands have the same faith and worship, and kinde of government, but they are not in the same Nationall community thereof. See *Apollonius* confid. cap. 3. Affert. 2. "Afferimus Ecclesiam visibilem in sacra Scriptura descriptam, non tantum fuisse Parochialem seu particularem, sed esse etiam Ecclesiam quandam Nationalem unius gentis aut regni, quae constat ex diversis & multis Ecclesijs Parochialibus, quae reguntur Ecclesiastico iunctis, & mutua quadam communione & societate Ecclesiastica visibili inter se divinis. See clear proofs for Nationall Churches under the Gospel, *Isa. 55. ver. 5.* Thou shalt call a Nation which thou knewest not, and Nations which knew not thee, shall run unto thee. It is spoken of Christ under the Gospel. And there is set down both Gods call of a Nation; and a Nations answer to that call. And these two things are sufficient to make a Church. Also, *Isa. 59. 24. 25.* In that day shall

Chap. i.

shall Israel be a third with Egypt, and with Assyria, even a blessing in the midst of the land, whom the Lord of hosts shall bless, saying, Blessed bee Egypt my people, and Assyria the work of my hands, and Israel mine inheritance. It is a prophecy of the times under the Gospel, where Egypt and Assyria are promised to bee called in, to bee Churches as well as Israel, and are preferred in order before Israel, however it is clear those three Nations are owned, and blessed by God as three sister-Churches. Also, *Psalm*. 72. 11, 17. *All Kings shall fall down before him, all Nations shall serve him. All Nations shall call him blessed*, i. e. Christ, *Mat.* 21. 43. *The Kingdom of God shall be taken from you, and given to a Nation bringing forth the fruit thereof*, *Rom.* 10. 19. *I will provoke you to jealousy by them that are no people, and by a foolish Nation will I anger you*, i. e. God choosing the Gentile Nations, and giving them the priviledges of the Jews, it should anger the Jews, and provoke them to jealousy, *Isa.* 65. 1. *I said, behold me, behold me, to a Nation that was, not called by my name. The Commission of the Apostles was to go, teach and baptize all Nations (not Congregations onely) i. e. some of all Nations, if they received the Christian faith; and the whole Nations, if the whole received it*, *Matth.* 4. 2. *Many Nations shall come and say, Let us go up to the mountain of the Lord, and he will teach us his ways, and we will walk in his paths*. *Isa.* 52. 15. *He shall sprinkle us with his grace*, *Jer.* 4. 2. *The Nations shall bless themselves in him, and in him shall they glory. And Rom.* 4. 17. *Abraham is said to be a father of many Nations in a spirituall sense, as well as a carnall. In thee shall all the Nations of the earth be blessed. He is said to bee the father of us all*, *Rev.* 11. 15. *The Kingdoms of this world are become the Kingdoms of our Lord, and of his Christ. The Ecclesiasticall politics in converted Kingdoms, are said to be commensurable to the civill*, *Rev.* 21. 24. *The Nations of them that are saved shall walk in the light of it*, i. e. of the new Jerusalem, *Zac.* 2. 11. *Many Nations shall be joined unto the Lord in that day, and shall bee my people. Whereby wee see the current of the Scripture runs, that God not onely would convert Congregations out of severall Nations, but the whole Nations which also he performed, and many whole Nations joined themselves to the*

Lord;

Lord, & made Christian Kingdoms or Common-wealths, though they proceeded not from the loins of one man, as the Israelites did, which some make the ground of the Nationall Church of the Jews: yet we know there were proselytes of all Nations that were members of that Church, and had right to all the Ordinances as well as the Israelites, and servants that came not out of *Abrahams* loins. Self. 3.

And by the same reason when a part of a Nationall Church shall join in particular consociation and community in a City or Province, or Classe, they may receive denomination from thence: the one containing a greater part of the Church-Catholick, the other a lesse.

For the Church-Catholick being a *similar body* retains the name Church, in what parts, parcels, or quantities soever it bee divided into, for convenient community, untill it be brought in *minimum quod sit*, as the Philosophers say, i. e. into the least parts that can enjoy publick communion in Ordinances, which is a particular Congregation. The division of the Church-Catholick into particular Congregations, seemeth to me to bee no further of divine institution, then as it fitly serveth for order and edification, by cohabitation, for enjoyment of Gods Ordinances together publickly (as the Jewish Church was divided by Synagogues, for their constant enjoyment of Word, praier, and discipline, which they could not constantly enjoy, as a Nationall Church, by their Nationall worship thrice in the year) and the same reason will by proportion carry it for Classicall, Provinciall, and Nationall divisions, for community of a greater part of the Church.

*Gerson Ruzerus in dissert. de Gub. Eccles. p. 11.* hath this description of a particular Church. *Non particularem Ecclesiam intelligimus, quemlibet credentium catum in unam vocationem divinam, Evangelii predicatione, sacramentis Institutionum observatione adunatum, ac uni presbyterio subjunctum, sacros vero conventus uno aut pluribus locis agentem. Nam pariteriarum in quibus convenitur numerus, accidentaria res est, nihil ad Ecclesiam particularis essentiam pertinens.* Now this seemeth to mee to bee a discription of a Presbyterial or Classicall Church, and so not to divide the Church-Catholick into any lesse parts, for the enjoyment.

Chap. 1.

injoyment of all the usuall publick Ordinances, then a Presbyteriall, Classicall Church: and so, though I be a description of a particular Church indeed; yet not of the least particular Church.

M. Cotton a reverend Minister in N. E. in his Doctrine of the Church teaches, that a visible Church is a mysticall body, whereof Christ is the head, the Members, Saints called out of the world, and united together into one Congregation, by an holy Covenant, to worship the Lord, and to edifie one another in all his holy Ordinances. But (with due respect to so grave and worthy a man) much of this description seems to me to belong to an invisible Church, and not to a visible. First, because the matter thereof is the mysticall body of Christ, consisting onely of Saints called (not onely from *Idols*, but) out of the *world*, and therefore truly godly; but much of the world is in the visible Church.

Secondly, Every Congregation, though it be in some sense of the mysticall body of Christ, yet is not *the*, or a *mysticall body* of Christ, for Christ hath but one mysticall body; it behooveth therefore a particular Church to be defined with reference to the rest of the body, and not to the head onely, it being but a part of the body. It would seem strange to define the *little toe* to be a body made up of flesh, blood and bone, or such a figure, informed by the head, without declaring the reference of it to the rest of the body. Or a Corporation in *England* to be a body politick whereof the King is the head or Sovereign, without mentioning its reference to the rest of the Kingdom, whereof it is, but a part, and so the King, the head or Governor thereof, but secondarily, it being a part of that Kingdom whereof he was Sovereign. It is true, the Apostle saith, *the head of every man is Christ*, 1 Cor. chap. 12. ver. 3. &c. they are of the body of Christ. So it may be said of every Congregation, Christ is the head thereof, and that it is of his body or Kingdom visible Ecclesiasticall, but then we must add therewith the Apostolicall word of the Church of *Corinth*, 1 Cor. 12. 27. *Now ye are the body of Christ*, &c. *ye are the members of it*, &c. *members of a part*, &c. as in the old English Translation, *Members for your part*: in the new, *Members in particular*. On which words saith *Beza in his large notes* upon



upon the place. *Nam omnes Ecclesie per orbem disperse, diversa sunt unius corporis membra.* And the English Annotations upon the Bible, paraphrase it thus. *That is, members of this Church of Corinth, which is but a part of the Catholick Christian Church: for all the faithfull wheresoever they are, make the whole body: you Corinthians are not the whole body, but members onely, neither all the members, but a part onely of them.* Paræus renders it *partiatim*, Peter Martyr, *Vos estis pars membrorum.* Thirdly, I dare not make a particular explicate holy covenant to be the form of a particular Church, as this definition seemeth to do, because I finde no mention of any such Covenant, besides the general imposed on Churches, nor example or warrant for it in all the Scriptures, and therefore cannot account it an Ordinance of God, but a prudential humane device to keep the members together, which in some places and cases may haply be of good use, so it be not urged as an Ordinance of God, and so it be not used to inthrall any, and abridge them of liberty of removal into other places and Congregations, for their convenience; or urged as the form of a Church. I deny not but mutual consent of persons within such a vicinity, to joyn together constantly in the Ordinances of God under the inspection of such and such officers, is requisite to a particular Congregation.

But it is the generall preceding Covenant sealed by baptism, and not this that makes them of the body of Christ: they must be conceived to be of the visible body of Christ, before they can be fit members to constitute a particular Congregation: neither is it this particular Covenant that giveth right to the Ordinances of God, but the general, and therefore they must be judged to have right thereto before they be admitted as members of the Congregation. Onely this mutual joyning together, and choice of such and such a Pastor or Teacher or ruling Elders, giveth such Officers a call to take immediate inspection over them, and administer the Ordinances of God belonging to their offices, unto them, to which they had right before their particular consociation, which is but an accidental thing, and may many waies be dissolved, and yet they not lose their right to God's Ordinances by that dissolution. Such a consent, joyning, and call of, or submitting to a

Chap. 1.

Presbytery, giveth to those Elders right of exercising of their offices over, or towards them, rather then over others; and to them, to expect or require the Ordinance of God from those particular Officers, rather then from others.

Fourthly, for the enjoyment of all the Ordinances of God in one Congregation, it seemeth to mee very inconvenient for some of the Ordinances, and altogether impossible for others. First, It is inconvenient, that a Church consisting of seven, ten, twenty, or thirty, should inflict the formidable sentence of excommunication against any person, to cast him out of communion, not only with themselves, but the whole Church Catholick visible, and deliver him up to Satan. For if it be inflicted by the votes of the whole Congregation (as some would have it) many of the members being private men, and haply altogether illiterate and unexperienced, through want of age, education, or parts, are not able to understand the nature of the allegations and probations, they may bee so intricate, or not able to apply the rule unto the case, for inflicting of a just censure: and may be in danger to bear particular favour or ill will unto their persons, and so apt to be swayed by love, pity or hopes from them; or to bee over-awed by fears or threatnings, being poor men, servants, children, workmen, tenants: and therefore our brethren for Congregational Churches, have of late, seeing this inconvenience, debarred the people from votes, and put it into the hands of the Elders onely. See *M. Cottons* keys of the Church.

Yes, even the Elders of one Congregation may be in danger of the same temptations, because of particular relations, and their dependance on them for maintenance. But suppose they were as free as Angels from temptations or infirmities (which they are not) yet the weightiness and solemnity of the censure would require to bee performed by a Colledge of Elders of a combined Presbytery, that so it being not passed by the votes of three or four onely, but by the joint advice, consent and authority of a combined Presbytery, may bee the more dreadfull to the party, and bee the better accepted and submitted unto, without heart-burning and grudge against the particular Elders, or fears of revenge. Yet I deny not power in the Elders of the particular

particular Congregation, with the consent of the Congregation, to exercise even that sentence upon an offender, if there be a notorious clear cause: but I speak in regard of convenience, in respect of the Elders, or the cause, or the person on whom it is to be inflicted, who may be of civil eminency and degree &c. sect. 3.

It is worthy of note which Zanchy saith in this case. *In precept. 4. pag. 388. Si Ecclesia aliqua exigua sit, & non multis eruditis hominibus constans, non debet excommunicationem ferre, nisi vicinioribus consultis Ecclesiis. Profecto neque Chirurgus, si sit timens Dei & prudens, scindit alicui manum aut brachium, nisi audiat prius viciniorum etiam peritorum medicorum iudicium atque sententiam.*

Secondly, It is impossible for one Congregation to enjoy all the Ordinances of God within themselves. First, *Synods* and *Councils* are acknowledged to be an Ordinance of God, and particularly by that reverend divine M. Cotton himself, and he groundeth it on *Acts 15*. And though some of our brethren for Congregational Churches wave that place, yet grant the thing, and are members of one at this time; and this Ordinance all men will grant, cannot be had in one Congregation, but sometimes requires the help of a whole *Province, Kingdoms*, yea many *Kingdoms*. Yea secondly, the Ordinances that more neerly and particularly concern a particular Congregation, cannot be performed by that alone. For how can a Congregation, of private Christians try the sufficiency of an Elder, to be elected over them, to labour in Word and Doctrine? and if they have a tryed man among them, who shall give him imposition of hands, which belongeth onely unto Elders of the same kinde to perform? Neither have our brethren of Congregationall Churches (whatever their judgment is herein) ever dared (as far as I have heard) to permit private members to impose hands on their Elders, but always desired Elders of other Congregations to do it, and therefore they cannot have this Ordinance within themselves. And though this seemeth to some a thing of small moment, yea, but a complement, yet it is an Ordinance of God. The truth is, election is but a nomination of a man which they think fit to be invested with, and put into such

Chap. 1.

an office, and to whom so invested they are willing to submit themselves in the Lord, but that giveth no power at all to execute the office, nor doth it invest him with it, for that is given and done by Ordination, and imposition of hands, which they cannot give, because they are but private Christians out of office, and the lesse ought to be blessed of the greater. And the Apostle Heb. 6. 12. reckoneth it up amongst the principles of Religion, and part of the foundation. Which place Hen. Jacob urgeth vehemently to overthrow the lawfulness and essence of all the Ministers of the Church of England, because (saith he) they have erred in the foundation, not having right, and due imposition of hands of the Presbytery: though by his leave, hee was mistaken, for all those that imposed their hands on them, were Presbyters. But this dealing is not fair, to hold imposition of hands a part of the foundation, that so they may overthrow the Ministry of the Church of England; and then make it but a complement, that they may establish their own. Now this impossibility befalls a Church, either in the beginning of it, and first constitution; or may at other times by mortality of Elders, and will be frequent, yea constant in small Congregations, where there is but one or two preaching Elders, as is the case of most, if not all Congregations.

M. Norton a reverend Minister in N. E. in his answer to Apol Ionius, hath a description of a particular Church, much like this. *Ecclesia particularis, est cœtus fidelium visibili vinculo mutui consensus politicè unitus, ad incedendum in fide & observantiâ Evangelii, juxta ordinem seu politiam Evangelii.* p. 22. But I see nothing in the description but is applicable to the Church-Catholick. For they are the company of believers, and they are politically united together, under Christ a politicall head; and they are united together by a visible bond of voluntary consent to yeeld outward subjection to the government of Christ. See all these particulars yeilded by M. Hooker, *Survey*, p. 3. His own words I shall cite, Chap. 2. Sect. 1. And M. Norton himself, *Resp.* p. 50, acknowledgeth thus much, *Omnes Ecclesie uniuntur politicè sub eodem capite.* 2. *Uniuntur eadem formâ Politias & cultus.* 3. *Uniuntur relatione sororum politicarum, & hac unione communi fundatur communio Ecclesiarum inter se.*

And

And because it is not rationally probable that the Churches of Jerusalem, Rome, Corinth, Philippi, Thessalonica, or the seven Churches of Asia were merely Congregational, but rather Presbyterial, as hath been by the Reverend Assembly, the London Ministers, and divers others abundantly evidenced; it seemeth difficult to me to find in the New Testament an expresse Instance or example of a Congregationall Church, standing and continuing so by it self. The Church of Cenebra mentioned Rom. 16. 1. is the most probable, because of the conceived smalnesse of the place, yet it is not certain, for it was a port Town, eight miles from Corinth, as Holyoke tells us, and Gualter in Rem. 16. saith it was *Oppidum Corinthiorum navium statione celeberrimum, & idè frequens valde & populosum.*

The clearest evidence is from 1 Cor. 14. 14. for a particular Congregationall Church. Let your women keep silence in the CHURCHES, which word (Churches) seems to import severall Congregations meeting in several places, to enjoy publick Ordinances by the Corinthians (your women) and these Congregations are called Churches, and yet were all one combined Church of Corinth; often spoken of in the singular number.

But this dispute belongs not to this question, yet the present difference of opinions and practices, have caused me a little to dilate upon this subject, beyond the explication of the term. And I understand by particular Churches, any, or all the forementioned Churches, whether National, Provincial, Presbyterial, Classial, or Congregational; and this last principally; for those that have first moved this question, mean principally, if not solely, the Congregationall Church, because (as I suppose) they hold no other particular Churches but such.

The fourth term to be opened is, *What is meant by Prima, Sect. 4. vel Secundaria & Orta.* This distinction, or at least in these terms, is not ancient; for M. Parker in his *Politeia Eccles.* was the first that sprung it, as far as I know. *Primum* in Logick is defined to be *Quod est sua Originis. Ortum, quod oritur a primo. Secundarium* is properly that which is next after the first in order, for it is an ordinal. I do not mean strictly, next immediately,

Chap. 1.

diately, but in the largest sense, (for that which hath not the first right on first consideration, but a *Posterior*. In this Question, *Primum*, or *first*, is meant, that which hath the priority in consideration. Whether in our apprehension of Churches we are to begin at the Church-Catholick, and descend to particular Churches, to begin at the particular, and ascend to the Church-Catholick? which notion is first in distinct knowledge, whether *Ecclesiæ Universalis*, *aut Particularis*? Whether the nature, priviledge, and Ordinances, belong first to the Church-Catholick? and secondarily to the particular Churches: I do not mean (as M. Ellis supposeth) that the power or Ordinances go by way of descension or derivation of power from the Church-Catholick, in dispensation of Ordinances, but in consideration: for I acknowledge power to be given immediately to every particular Church therein, yet under regulation of a greater part of Church-Officers, in case of male-administration. The properties and power of water is primarily given to the whole element of water, but is immediately, yet secondarily in the particular parcels thereof.

But the Catholick Church is the primary in a threefold respect. First, as the Orthodox Catholick Church is a means or instrument by the Ordinances, Ministry and members thereof, in the severall parts and places thereof, to convert, add, and bring in more new members thereunto; and is continually conquering out of Satans and Antichrist's Kingdom, and leavening the world with the doctrine of Christ. Secondly, as the Church-Catholick affords matters and members, to make up or constitute the particular Congregations, which consist onely of the members of the Catholick-Church gathered up from any place of the world into particular vicinities. Thirdly, in regard the Ordinances and priviledges of the Church, are primarily intended and given by Christ, by one Charter unto the whole Church, and to particular Churches secondarily, as parts thereof. And so they partake of the benefits and priviledges of the Church, not because they are members of the particular Churches, though there they have the immediate opportunity, but of the Church-Catholick. As a Corporation already constituted by Charter, receiveth in free men continually, and giveth freedom

freedome to new members which come any way to have right thereto, and those members have right to the 'priviledges of the City; not because they are of such a street, or ward, or company, but because they are free of the City. Self. 4.

So that though I have retained the terms of M. Parkers distinction, *prima* and *Orta* *pro secunda*, yet my question differs much from his. For he compares the particular Churches who delegate and send members of commissioners to constitute a Classis or Synod; with such a ministerial Church, a Church of Officers so constituted; for some especial ends, *pro tempore*; which some call a representative Church: and I confesse with him that such a Church may well put on the notion of *Ecclesia Orta*, and the particular Churches out of which these members are delegated, may in some sense (in reference unto them) put on the notion of *Ecclesia prima*. Yet I do not conceive that those particular Churches give either the office, or the power *in actu prima*; whereby those delegated Commissioners do act when they are met, but by such delegation they do evocate and call forth the exercise of that power which Christ hath annexed to their office habitually, *in actu secunda*; to act *pro his & illis*, for the good of all those Churches so sending, which acts of theirs binde the delegating Churches to submission in the Lord. But in my Question the whole Church Catholick visible is compared with the particular Churches, and they are considered as parts thereof.

## CHAP. II.

*Proofs by Scripture that there is a Church-Catholick visible.*

NOW I have opened the terms of my Question, I finde two Questions instead of one, and whether of them is the most difficult I cannot tell. Whereas the subject of every Question used to bee taken for granted, and the predicate onely to bee proved, I finde the subject of my Question exceedingly questioned

Chap. 2.

oned and opposed, and that by some of our own Divines, and therefore though my first aim in undertaking the Question was to clear the Predicate, yet I must crave leave to confirme the subject, or else whatsoever I shall say of the Predicate will be as a house built on the sand, or a Castle in the air; *for if there be no universal visible Church, then it is not capable of being either Prima or secundaria.*

In handling both these Questions, I shall follow my wonted method. I preferre one Divine Testimony before ten arguments, and one good argument before ten humane testimonies.

First then, *Whether there be a Church-Catholick visible?*

Sect. 1.

I know that our Divines in answer to the Pontificians, do deny the Church-Catholike to be visible, as *Zenchy, Gerard, Whitakers, Qhamier, and Ames* against *Bellarmino*, and *Sadock* against *Torrianus*, and against the *Monks Confession of faith*, and *D. Wilkes* in his *Synopf*.

For they restraining the signification of the word *Church*, to the better part of the Church, the *Elect* onely, and considering them in respect of their internal communion with Christ their head, and not their external communion one with another by Ordinances, did deny the Church-Catholick to be visible. *Nec a quovis impio, nec pio videri potest*, saith *Whitaker*. And if the word *Church* be taken in that sense, it is most certainly true, it must needs be invisible, but there is also an external communion (as hath been shewed before) which the visible members have, both with Christ and one with another, which is visible, and makes the enjoyers thereof visible one to another, and to all others also, *viz.* their praying one with another and for another, and their hearing the Word, and receiving the Lord's Supper together as occasion is offered, and their receiving all those as visible members of the visible mystical Kingdom and body of Christ, that are admitted in any part of the Church by baptism, and the avoiding of such as are any where excommunicated, and the receiving again into communion those that are any where absolved.

So that there is an external visible Kingdom of Christ, as well as an internal and invisible, and the elect are of the visible Kingdom.



dom as well as of the invisible; they are as *Ezechie's wheels*, a wheel in the midst of a wheel. Sect. 1.

It is true which reverend M. Hooker puts me in minde of, that these 4. Questions between the Pontificians and our Divines: are distinct. *Utrum Ecclesia sit visibilis? Utrum Ecclesia visibilis potest deficere? An sit semper frequens & gloriosa? Utrum Ecclesia opus habet visibili monarchia & summo Iudice?* But they are rather marshalled so by our Divines in their answers, then distinguished by themselves; for they often confound *visible*, *conspicuous*, *glorious*, *manifest*, *specious*, *splendid*, *magnifical*, and *flourishing* together, yet the Church is visible when *latent* under persecutions, and is deprived of the other properties, for all the members even then are not invisible members of Christ. Cameron granteth that these properties may betide the visible Church, but not alwaies (and so say some of the Papists also) and that when they do betide the Church, they rather shew *Quid sit Ecclesia, quam qua sit*: that it cannot be discerned which is the true Church by these accidents of perpetuall clarity. *Cameron de Conspectu. Eccl.*

The Pontificians notion of the Church-Catholick is very absurd, for they hold the name *Church-Catholick* to belong to one Church, *viz. the Church of Rome*: and that being the Church-Catholick, and comprizing the universality of the Church in it self, all that will be members of the Church-Catholick must submit unto them, and be members of that. Of which Tilen. in *Syntag.* saith well, *Orbem in bi includunt.*

And the necessity which they make that this one visible Church should be under one visible universal head on earth, *viz. the Pope*, as Christs vicar general, is as absurd: and therefore they are worthily confuted by our Divines.

But to deny an external Kingdome or Church of Christ upon earth: or to deny the visibility or perceptibility of it: or the unity of it, or the universality of it under the Gospel (is as I conceive) as absurd on the other side. To the particulars I shall speak more fully in following Chapters. I finde reverend M. Hooker in his *Survey of Church-Discipline*, par. 1. pag. 3. acknowledging Christ a political head by his especiall guidance in

Chap. 2.

“ means and dispensations of his Ordinances, as well as a myſti-  
 “ cal by ſpiritual influence : and the Church a politicall body, as  
 “ well as a myſtical. The political body or Church-*viſible* (ſaith  
 “ he) reſults out of that relation, which is betwixt the profeſ-  
 “ ſors of the faith, when by voluntary conſent they yeeld out-  
 “ ward ſubjection to that government of Chriſt which in his  
 “ word he hath preſcribed, and as an *external head* exerciſeth  
 “ by his Word, Spirit, and Discipline, by his Ordinances and  
 “ Officers over them, who have yeelded themſelves ſubjects to  
 “ his head-ſhip and ſupream authority. And pag. 15. *The viſible*  
 “ *Church* is truly ſtilled and judged by Scripture light to be *the*  
 “ *viſible body* of Chriſt, over whom he is a *head* by *political* go-  
 “ vernment and guidance, which he lends thereunto, 1 Cor. 12.  
 “ 12. And that it is a viſible politick body, appears quite  
 “ through the whole Chapter, but eſpecially ver. 27, 28. Be-  
 “ cauſe in that Church God ſet Orders and Officers, Some Apoſtles,  
 “ Teachers, Helpers, Governments. *The like to this* Eph. 4. 12. 13.  
 “ Again p. 16. *The Church is the viſible Kingdom* in which Chriſt  
 “ reigns by the ſcepter of his word and Ordinances, and executi-  
 “ on of Discipline.

The teſtimony cited out out of *Ames* by me was this, *Congrega-*  
*tiones illæ particulares, ſunt quaſi partes ſimulares Eccleſiæ Catho-*  
*licæ, atque aded & nomen, & naturam ejus participant.* And  
 further he ſaith, *Illiqui profeſſione tantum ſunt fideles dum reman-*  
*ent in illa ſocietate, ſunt membra illius Eccleſiæ, ſicut etiam Ec-*  
*cleſiæ Catholica, quoad ſtatum externum.* *Ames. medul. l. 1. c. 22.*  
*Seſſ. 11.*

And in his *Bellarminus enervatus* he ſaith, *Nos fatemur Ecclē-*  
*ſiam militantem viſibilem eſſe quoad formam accidentalem & ex-*  
*ternam, in ſuis partibus, & ſingulatim & conjunctim, &c.* Here  
 I am taxed by M. *Ellis* vind. p. 53. for citing this authour for me  
 who is known to be againſt me. But I answer, I dealt candidly  
 with D. *Ames*, acknowledging him to be againſt a Church Catho-  
 lick *viſible* in ſome ſenſe, and yet not againſt it in ſome o-  
 ther ſenſe, as his expreſſe words declare. Neither doth he reſect  
 in *terminis*, an univerſall *viſible* Church in my ſenſe, as M. *Ellis* af-  
 firms, but my poſition ſtands good for ought that I find in D. *Ames*,  
 though I cannot conſent to his judgment in all things.

But let M. Ellis observe that *Ames* doth not hold the Church which is mystically one, to be a *genus*, or one generically, *sed quasi species specialissima, vel Individuum, quia nullas habet species propriè dictas. Dicitur igitur Catholica, non ut unum illud, genus, aut generale aliquid significat, sed ut denotat aliquid integraliter universale ( ut quum dicimus Orbis universus ), quia completitur fideles omnium gentium, omnium locorum, & omnium temporum. Med. l. 1. c. 31. n. 18, 19.* Sect. 2.

Again cap. 32. n. 5: he saith, *Ecclesia particularis, respectu communis illius nature, qua in omnibus particularibus Ecclesiis reperitur, est species Ecclesie in genere, sed respectu Ecclesie Catholicae, qua habet rationem integri, est membrum ex aggregatione variorum membrorum singularium compositum, atque respectu ipsorum est etiam integrum.* Which is as much as in this part of the question I contended for, viz. that the Church-Catholick in regard of the external and accidental form, is an integral, and not a *genus*. But M. Ellis makes the Church-Catholick one onely in regard of the internal essential form; and not in regard of any external form, wherein he expressly crosseth *Ames*. And therefore I retort it upon him again, that he citeth a man for him; which is expressly against him. The external form is that which is visible, and if the Church-Catholick be one in the external accidental form, it must needs be integrally and visibly one.

But come to Scripture proofs, which are the most sure, because they are a divine testimony. And first I shall shew you that an Oecumenicall universall Church was frequently foretold in Scripture, *Psal. 22. 27. All the ends of the world, shall remember, and turn unto the Lord, and all the kindreds of the nation shall worship before him.* Which comprehends all places, all the ends of the earth, and all persons that should be converted, all the kindreds of the Nations: and by worshipping is meant embracing the true religion, and performance of religious duties. So *Psa. 72. 8. He shall have dominion also from sea to sea, and from the river unto the ends of the earth.* It is a prophecy concerning Christ in the times of the Gospell: where he is set forth by his Kingly office; and the extent of his Kingdome is set out to be to the ends of the earth. This is his external political Kingdome, because it is set out by the externall prayers and prayse and gifts that should

## Chap. 2.

be tendred unto him by his Subjects, and by the judgment, peace, and flourishing estate that he shall bestow upon them. So Psal. 86. 9. *All Nations whom thou hast made, shall come and worship before thee, O Lord, and shall glorifie thy name.* This is a prophecy like the former, So Isa. 2. 2, 3, 4. *It shall come to passe in the last dayes, that the mountain of the Lords house shall be established on the top of the mountains, and shall be exalted above the hills, and all Nations shall flow unto it, and many people shall go and say, Come ye, let us go up to the mountain of the Lord, to the house of the God of Jacob, and hee will teach us his wayes, and wee will walk in his paths. For out of Zion shall go forth the Law, and the word of the Lord from Jerusalem, and hee shall judge among the Nations, and rebuke many people, &c.* Where is set down Christs call of all the Nations, and the time of this call, in the last dayes, i. e. the times under the Gospell, as the Apostle Act. 2. 17. expounds the like phrase in Joel. 2. 28. And here is the means of the call, by the Law out of Zion, and the word of the Lord from Jerusalem: and the answer to this call, All Nations shall flow unto it: and there is Christs executing his propheticall office by publick teaching them in his house, by his Ambassadors, and his Kingly office in judging and rebuking. So Isa. 25. 6.

So Daniel 7. 14. *There was given unto him (Christ) Dominion and glory, and a Kingdome, that all people, nations, and languages should serve him.* And in the New Testament Matt. 28. 9. *Go, teach all Nations, baptizing them &c.* Rom. 15. 11, 12. Rev. 14. 6. But because these places will be turned off with this answer, that some of all Nations should embrace the Gospell, and be turned unto the Lord, not the whole Nations: I answer, That experience hath proved it true of multitudes of great Nations, that wholly did embrace the Gospell, and submitted unto it. Neither can any of these places be avoided (as some plead) by the generall Kingdom of Christ, which is given him over all Nations, whereby he is head over all things to the Church, Eph. 1. 22. For it is clear they are meant of that Kingdome wherein are prayers, praises, gifts, worship, service, and attendance upon Gods Ordinances, flowing unto Christ, worshipping before him, and glorifying his name, as the severall

texts expresse; and these things are proper to the visible Church. So also *Zech. 14. 9.* And the Lord shall be King over all the earth: in that day shall there be one Lord, and his name one, which is clearly meant of one religion and way of worship of God in Christ.

But secondly, I will give you places of Scripture where the word Church is applied both indefinitely and generally, which cannot be understood of any particular Churches. See first *Act. 8. 3.* *Saul made havoc of the Church:* To which may be added that of *Gal. 1. 13.* *I persecuted the Church of God, and wasted it.* I shew before that this must needs be a visible Church, for they could not else have been persecuted; persecution is a visible opposition of a visible Church. And certainly *Saul* could not discern who were of the invisible company, but persecuted promiscuously all that were that way. Neither was it a particular Church, for this persecution was in *Jerusalem*, and in every *Synagogue*, and it reacheth to *Damascus*, and even to strange cities, *Act. 26. 11.* So that by Church here is meant an indefinite number of visible Churches or Congregations, which were in no other community but profession of the same faith, and an indefinite is equivalent to a general: which sometime although it should not be stretched according to the old rule, *Omne indefinitum potest esse infinitum*, it being without limits, yet it is true in suo genere, it is as large as a general. But this we may safely say, that by the same reason that the word Church would reach all those Churches, it would reach all the Churches in the world.

Reverend Mr. Hooker excepteth against these two places, and affirms that the word Church is taken here by a Synecdoche for the particular Church of *Jerusalem*; and not all that neither, but only such Christians as forsook *Moses* ceremonial Law, and not the Christian Jewish Church. *Serv. c. 15. p. 269.* Because saith he, his Commission was to pursue such as be found of that way.

The answer to this exception will lie in the meaning of these words, *all that bee found of that way*, whether by that way be meant the forsoaking the ceremoniall Law, or confessing Christ to be the *Messiah*: If the former, then *Paul* would have found

Chap. 2.

but little work in *Jerusalem*, for the Jewish Christians did generally cleave to the ceremonial Law. As the Elders told *Paul* *Act. 1. 20*. Thou seest how many myriads of the Jewes do believe, and they are all zealous of the Law, and therefore he needed not persecute them for neglect thereof, for they were zealous therein, yea, the Apostles themselves observe that in *Jerusalem* a long time. But the persecution was such, as that they were all scattered abroad except the Apostles; and therefore it was for Christianity that he persecuted them. It was to cause them to blaspheme, as *Paul* himselfe expounds it: now though reducing of them to the ceremonial Law had been an error, yet it was not a blasphemy, for then the Apostles themselves should have lived in blasphemy. Surely it was to cause them to blaspheme the Lord *Jesus Christ*, and deny him to be the *Messiah*. It is most likely that *Sauls* Commission was according to the former decree of the chief Priests, *Joh. 9. 22*. *That if any did confesse that he was Christ, he should be put out of the Synagogue*. And this appeares by what *Ananias* saith to Christ concerning *Paul*. *Act. 9. 14*. *Here he hath authority from the chief Priests to bind all that call on thy name*. And verse, 2. *If he found any that way; Not all of Jerusalem, or if he found any of Jerusalem that were fled thither, but any Jewes; for the Gentiles had not yet received the Gospel*. For Chap. 10. *Peter* was charged for eating with *Cornelius* and his companie, that were Gentiles. And they that were scattered abroad by *Saul*, preached the Gospel to none but to the Jewes only *Act. 11. 19*. And some of those whom *Saul* persecuted were men of *Cyprus* and *Cyrene*, *Act. 11. 20*. But it was all that call on thy name, not all that had forsaken the ceremonial Law, for that verie few Jewes as yet had done, if any at all. And this was the reason, as I conceive, that the commission given to *Saul* by the chief Priests, reached the Jewes at *Damascus*, and other Cities, because they were not fallen off from the ceremonial Law, but kept fellowship with the Jewish Church at *Jerusalem*, and came up to the feasts still, and so were under their Ecclesiastical jurisdiction, and liable to their censure, and they could write to the rulers of those Synagogues to see them punished.

Also it is said upon the conversion of *Saul*, *Act. 9. 31*. *Then*

had

bad the Churches rest in all Judea, and Galilee, and Samaria. Which yet were but some parts of the Church, ( in the singular number ) *Señt. 3.* which he persecuted. Now if *Saul* had persecuted onely the members of the Church of *Jerusalem*, which had forsaken *Moses* law, then they might have had rest before, for all him, for they should not have been within his commission: but he persecuted them also. So our brethren themselves expound it *Except. p. 17.* Also it is said *Act. 12. 1.* that *Herod* stretched both his hands to vex certain of the Church, and he killed *James*, and attached *Peter*. Now this was a visible Church, because a Church liable to visible persecution; and an Organiſmal Church, because the persecution was against the Officers; and the Catholick Church: for it is not said, Certain of the Church of *Jerusalem*, but indefinitely, The Church: and the two persons named were not Officers or members of the Church of *Jerusalem*, but Officers of the whole Church, being Apostles.

Also it is said *Act. 2. 47.* God added to the Church daily such as should be saved. Or, saved men, as some render it. Not that all should be saved, or were saved men that were added unto it, for there were many hypocrites added, but those that should be saved, or were sanctified, were added. Which Church was not a particular Congregationall Church, but the Catholick.

Reverend M. Hooker excepteth against this, and saith, that "it was not the Catholick Church, but the Apostolical Christian Church now erected, and not the whole company of beleevers in the whole world; for such a company they never saw nor knew, and therefore could not be added to them, *Serv. c. 15. p. 270.*"

*Answer.* It is true indeed, it was to the Apostolical Christian Church, but not to any particular Congregationall Church. For first, no man by conversion is added unto, or made a member of a or the particular Church where he was converted, but is made a member of the Catholick society of Christians by conversion, and then joins himself unto some particular society of them.

Secondly, This Apostolical Christian Church was not a Congregationall Church, for those 120 (suppose them the 12 and

Chap. 2.

70 and some others ) were many of them men of *Galilee*, and resided at *Jerusalem* but for a time, *per accidens*, by command, untill they were further endued with the *holy Ghost*. And those 3000 that were added to them, *Acts. 2. 41.* were men out of every nation under heaven, *vers. 5.* and their particular countries, named, *vers. 9, 10, 11.* And this is our brethrens own exposition, in their exceptions to the proof: from the Church of *Jerusalem*, p. 16. Where they say "They were not settled dwellers at *Jerusalem*, but strangers, commorants of the ten Tribes which were dispersed, and were but sojourners at *Jerusalem*, coming up to the feast, having their wives, and children, and families at home, to whom they used after a time to return. And that this continuing steadfastly in the Apostles doctrine and fellowship, was but onely while they were there at *Jerusalem*. Yea some of them were of *Judas*, *vers. 9.* and so of the countrey round about, and that of them might be Churches erected in their proper dwellings, is rationally supposable.

And the proof *M. Hooker* giveth ( to shew it was not the Church-Catholick ) from *Acts, 2. 24.* They continued steadfastly: ( *ἠρρανεῖς* ) in the Apostles doctrine and fellowship; makes much against a Congregationall Church, as I conceive. For the Apostles were not Congregationall Elders to *Jerusalem*, but generall Officers of the Church-Catholick by their commission. So that this communion of theirs with the Apostles, was not a particular Church-communion, but a Catholick-communion of Catholick members ( not reduced into particular Congregations ) with Catholick Officers. Neither might the Apostles join as particular Elders of the Church of *Jerusalem*. For how could they bind themselves by an holy Covenant to the constant performance, or enjoyment of all the Ordinances of God, together with them, seeing their charge was to go over all the world; yet such a Covenant our Brethren say, is requisite in a particular Congregation. Neither as yet were there any particular Elders of the particular Church of *Jerusalem* constituted, nor do wee finde it expresse how long after. If it had been said, that they continued in the Apostles doctrine and fellowship, with the Elders of *Jerusalem*, it had carried some probability.

Moreover



Moreover, it would not be the communion of a particular Church, because they had the *Lords Supper* in several companies. *Breaking bread from house to house.* Gods providence ordered it so that the Christian Church should be (as I may say) at the very birth of it, Catholick, in regard of Officers and members, before any reduction into particular societies under particular Officers. It was so, potentially, from the giving of the Apostles commission, and now it is actually in the members as well as Officers, before their number could make up Congregations in several countries.

Sect. 3.

X

"*Yes, but (saith he) It is not to the whole company of believers in the whole world, for such a company they never saw nor knew, and therefore could not be added to them.*" *pag. 270.*

*Ans.* It is not requisite they should see or know them all by face, but know that there was, or was to be such a company which was already begun. It is like every member of the Church of *Jerusalem*, did never see or know all the members that were of that Church, nor do every member of the greatest Congregation in *London*, know all the members thereof. A foreigner that is naturalized by Parliament, and so added to this Kingdom, did never see nor know all the whole Kingdom.

*Again 1 Cor. 10. 32. Give no offence to the Jews, nor to the Gentiles, nor to the Church of God.* Where the word *Church* cannot signify the Elect only, nor any particular Congregation or Kingdom, but indefinitely it reacheth the whole body though in never so remote parts.

"*M. Hooker* excepteth against this proof, because (saith he) the Church here spoken of, is contra-distinct to the Jews, & therefore cannot comprehend the whole company of believers through the whole world, because some believers were of the Jews." *Serv. 15 p. 270.*

*Ans.* It is true, I find *Baxter* in his large notes upon the place, interpreting the Jews here spoken of, to be the believing Jews, and the Gentiles to be the believing Gentiles; *Paritibus subiectis totum.* But then he croseth *M. Hooker* in making the Church an *integrum*; and Jews and Gentiles to be the integrant parts. Yet

Chap. 2.

he adds as the more probable meaning, *Nisi malimus, istud Judaeis & Graecis, de extraneis intelligere, quorum etiam nobis sit habenda ratio, &c.*

And all others that I have met withall interpret the words of the unbelieving Jews and Gentiles in opposition to Christians. Or else of the believing Jews and Gentiles making one Church, but most in the first sense. So *Calvin*, *Judeos & Gentiles nominat, non tantum quia duobus illis generibus constabat Dei Ecclesia, sed ut doceat nos omnibus etiam alienis esse debitores, ut eos si fieri potest lucrifaciamus.* So *Pareus* on the vers. Also *Amb. Thomas Aqu. Goran*, and the *English Annotations* on the place. And the reason diverse of them render is, because the unbelieving Jews (abhorring Idols) might be beat off from Christ by seeing Christians eating things sacrificed to Idols: (which is the particular offence here mentioned by the Apostle) and the unbelieving Gentiles might be confirmed in their Idolatry thereby: and the believers both of Jews and Gentiles take offence at it.

“Again (saith *M. Hooker*) that Church is here meant, whom  
“a man may offend by his practice in the particulars mention-  
“ed: but he cannot offend the whole company of believers,  
“through the whole world: because a scandal must be seen or  
“known certainly, &c.

*Ans.* All indefinite negative precepts (as against murder, adultery, theft, &c.) as they are generall for the time, binding *semper & ad semper*, so concerning place and persons; though no one man is ever like to have opportunity or possibility to commit them in every place and upon every person. So is this prohibition.

Some might give offence in one place, some in another, and some one in many places, in those travelling times; and the whole was liable to offence, though haply not by one man, and therefore the object is set down indefinitely to comprehend the whole. Yea, the word comprizeth not the Church *Entire*, but *Organical* and *combined*, for they may so be offended, and were not to affront or offend them: the greater the part of the whole body is, and the more compleated, the greater respect is to be had to it, that we give no offence thereunto.

Also

Sect. 3.

Also Gal. 4. 26. But *Jerusalem* which is above is free, which is the mother of us all. By *Jerusalem* is meant a Church, because it is that which brings forth children to God, which sometime may be desolate and in sorrow, because of the paucity and dispersion of them, sometime is bidden to rejoice for the multitude and prosperity of them, as *vers. 27.* It is also an Evangelical Church freed from the ceremonies of the Law, because it is called *Jerusalem*, answering to *Jerusalem* that was in *Pauls* time; and was in bondage with her children, *vers. 25. i. e.* to the Church of the Jews that were under the ceremonial Law, and would not forsake it, which was soon after destroyed. The Apostle changeth the manner of this speech from the person of *Sarah*, who was the type of the Evangelicall Covenant, to *Jerusalem*, which is the Church wherein the Evangelical doctrine and Covenant is preached, and this *Jerusalem* is the seed of *Sarah*, i. e. the Evangelical Church is the seed and off-spring of the Evangelical Covenant. This Evangelical Church is called *Jerusalem* and *Sion* in *Heb. 12. 22.* which text is parallel to this: and *Rev. 21. 1, 2, the New Jerusalem.* The legal ceremonial service did beget all under it to an external bondage, and brought them up under bondage; especially hypocrites which were not led by the Law to Christ; but rather hindred from him, they were in external and internal bondage. It cannot be the Church Triumphant, for that is not the mother of the Church militant, that hath no Ordinances to beget children. And though it be called *Jerusalem* which is above, yet that is meant because it hath its Original from heaven: as *Revel. 21.* the New Jerusalem is said to come down from heaven; and we are said to be begotten from above. Secondly, because their conversation is in heaven, *Phil. 3. 20.* Thirdly, because they shall in the end be brought thither. It cannot be the invisible Church as so considered; but must be a visible organical Church, because it doth no otherwise become a mother of children, but by the use of Ordinances and keys committed to her. It is by the preaching of the Word, that children are begotten in her womb, the seed is the Word: and by the same Word as milk, and the use of the Sacraments, they are nourished in their mothers house, and as a mother she educates and rules them by discipline. And this

Chap. 2.

cannot be a particular Church; but must be the generall, because the Apostle saith it is the *mother of us all*; the Apostle puts in himself and all believers. And the 27 verse makes it most plain, because the Apostle confirms and explains himself by quotation out of *Isai. 54. s. 2, 3.* which sheweth the calling in of the Gentiles to be of this Church. And thus all the protestant Expositours that I have met with, expound it. *Calvin* on this place saith, *Cœlestem vocat, non quæ sola sit inclusa, non quæ sit querenda extra mundum: est enim diffusa Ecclesia per totum orbem, & in terra peregrinatur.* *Luther* also saith, This heavenly *Jerusalem* which is above, is the Church, i. e. the faithful dispersed throughout the whole world, which have one and the same Gospel, faith, Christ, holy Ghost, and Sacraments. It is the Church which is now in the world, and not the Triumphant Church. To be the mother of us all, it is necessary that this our mother should be on earth among men, as also her generation is. This spirituall *Jerusalem* which took her beginning in corporeal *Jerusalem*, hath not any certain place, but is dispersed throughout the whole world. This freemother is the Church it self, the spouse of Christ, of whom we are all generated. So *Musculus, Perkins, Baldwin, and Bullinger.* *Loquitur de Ecclesia re-servata in omnibus gentibus collecta.* It is another body which is correspondent to *Sarah*, i. e. the Christian Church. *Beza* and *Calvin* on *Hebrews 12. v. 22.* a text parallel to this hath these words, *Cœlestem Jerusalem intelligit, quæ per totum mundum construenda erat, quemadmodum Angelus apud Zachariam fuculamentum ejus ab Oriente usque in Occidentem extendit.*

Again, *Eph. 3. 10.* To the intent that unto the principalities and powers in heavenly places, might be known by the Church, the manifold wisdom of God. This Church was not a particular Congregation, neither was it the Church of the elect, neither doth *Beza* so expound it (as is alledged) for he speaks here upon of the government of it *sub variâ Oeconomâ*: neither was it the Church of the Gentiles only (which yet is more than one Congregation) neither can the circumstances carry us beyond controul, as is alledged, because of the mysteries here spoken of, that “were kept secret since the beginning of the world, and

“and the multifarious wisdom which was now made known by the  
 “Churches, but were before made known to the Church of *Sect. 4.*  
 “the Jews, as Mr. Hooker conceives, pag. 271. For the mysteries  
 revealed in the New Testament, were never known to the Jews  
 before. *Ego* never saw them, nor ear heard them, nor entered it  
 into the heart of man to conceive of them. But hee that is least in  
 the kingdom of the Gospell, knows more then John the Baptist. But  
 it was the Church Catholick under the Gospell, whereof Paul  
 was made a Minister, as it is verse 7. It is that body of Christ,  
 the Church, whereof Paul was made a Minister, as himself saith  
 more fully, Colos. 2. 24. 29. which must needs be the external, vi-  
 sible, organick, Catholick Church of Christ, consisting of Jew and  
 Gentile.

Again it is said in 1 Corinth. chap. 12. 28. God hath set some in *Sect. A.*  
 the Church, first Apostles, secondarily Prophets, thirdly Teachers. The  
 Church here spoken of, is not the Church Triumphant, for that  
 hath no officers but Christ the head, there shall be no Pastors  
 and Teachers, *quæ facti*, yet such are in this Church verse 8. nei-  
 ther shall there be any gifts of healing, tongues, miracles, Dea-  
 cons, or ruling Elders. Neither is it the Church, *as invisible*, con-  
 sisting of the elect onely: for the invisible Church *quæ invisible*,  
 hath no Officers neither.

For though intensionally they are indeed given for the good  
 of the Elect, yet they are set in the visible Church. For both  
 the ordinary and extraordinary Officers were visible messen-  
 gers; and some of them but visible-believers onely, for *Judas*  
*had obtained part in the Apostleship and Ministry*, and was sent to  
 preach and work miracles: and many Prophets were not of  
 the invisible number: for many shall say, Lord, Lord, we have  
 prophesied in thy name, &c. and yet shall not be saved. But to  
 be sure they were sent to afford the Saints visible communion in  
 Ordinances.

Again, This is not meant of the Church Extrinsic, which is  
 a *similitudo*, and (as I may say) an *homogeneall* body, every  
 member as a member being equal, and of the same capacity: but  
 it is meant of the Church Organick, an *heterogeneall*, dissimilar  
 body, because here are set down the Officers. I mean *dissimi-*  
*lar and heterogeneous* in regard of the *integral* parts, *viz.* the se-

Chap. 2.

veral Congregations, because they all have or ought to have the same kinde of Officers and members, as to many flocks of sheep under severall shepherds. Therefore the severall particular Churches are called by some, an *Epitome* of the great body: now the *Epitome* hath no other parts then the great body hath: *Neither is here meant a particular Church*, but all collectively, that were within the bounds of the Apostles commission, which was the Church in the whole world, *Go teach all Nations, &c.* and all the Churches which have teachers over them, which all Churches in the world have, or ought to have, and yet all these are called but one Church, *One body*, *verf. 20.* And this whole is one *Organicall body*, *verf. 12.* *As we have many members in one body, and all members have not the same office: so we being many, are one body in Christ, and every one members one of another* *Rom. 12. 4, 5.*

M. Hooker hath two Expositions of, or answers to this place. First, that the Church here meant is *totum universale*, existing and determined in its actings by the particulars.

Answer. That cannot be, for *genus quod genus* can have no officers, seeing it is a second notion abstracted only in the mind: therefore the Church *quod totum universale* is no existing politie: if it hath Officers it must be considered as an *integrum existens*.

And as for *totum genericum existens*, it is nothing else (as I conceive) but *integrum simile*. For *genus* existeth not as *genus*, but onely under distinct specificall forms, and is abstracted from the *species* or individuals by the understanding. Now that which hath no existence of its own, can have no existing Officers. *Omne corporeum existens, vel est integrum, vel membrum.*

Neither will it help the cause at all to say, that *Apostles, Prophets, Evangelists*, were extraordinary temporary officers. First, here are ordinary Officers inserted also, given to the same Church, as *Teachers, ruling-Elders, Deacons*. Secondly, a *genus* admits of no variations in regard of time or place, or any other accidents: nothing extraordinary can betide a *genus*, but an *integrum* or existing being. *Genus, ut est aeterna veritatis, sic est*

*aeterna.*

*æterna identitatis. Genus is abstractum quid, non concretum, but the Church-Catholick is concretum quid, & conflatum, & aggregatum ex membris, non ex speciebus; as shall be shewed more fully afterwards.* Self: 4.

His second Exposition is, that the Apostle points at one particular, but includeth all particulars, by a parity and proportion of reason.

*Answ.* This cannot be; for this Church here meant is the political body of Christ, as M. Hooker himself expounds it, as I shewed before. Now all the members of a particular Church (as suppose Corinth) are but members of a part of that body, as I shewed before.

Secondly, God did not set all these in every particular Church. Had every particular Congregation Apostles, Prophets, miracles, gifts of healing, diversities of tongues? yea, take the constant Officer, the teacher, and ordinarily, one Congregation hath not teachers, but only one teacher: therefore this parity of reason cannot hold, except all these Officers were in the plurall number in every Congregation. And if the Apostles, Prophets, Evangelists, were Officers of every particular Congregation, quæ particular, then all those incongruities which our brethren bring against Presbyterial government; of choice, ordination, maintenance, honour, from the particular Congregations to them, and their constant teaching, watching over, and ruling of them, fall directly upon these Officers. I suppose many Congregations never had all these kinds of Officers among them. If it be meant distributively, some to one, some to another, then it should have been said Churches, not Church.

This place being a main fort that stood in M. Ellis's way, he laies his main battery against it: and gives many answers thereunto, which yet are not subordinate or subservient one to another, nor yet consistent one with another: but if any one will serve the turn to batter it down, it matters not (it seems) what become of the rest. He parallels this place with Ephes. 4. ver. 4, 5. And saith, that one body or Church here and there spoken of, is meant in the same sense that One faith, One Baptism is, viz. one in kinde; and as there are many single faiths, hopes, baptisms, though one in kinde, so there is one body in kind,  
but

Chap. 2.

but many singular bodies. *vind. pag. 34.* But M. Ellis might have seen, that if he had run his parallel a little further, he had run over shoes and bodices too. For there it is said, that there is *One Spirit, one Lord Jesus, one God and Father*, not in kind, but in number; and why may not the Church, in which there is one individual doctrine of faith, and body of laws, and in which there is one manner of inrowlment by baptism, and in which onely there is hope of salvation, be one numerically also: especially considering that as the head, the Lord Jesus Christ, is one in number: so his body the Church can be but one in number also: For Christ hath not more bodies, in the same respect then one.

But even his granting of a *numerical oneness in Essence*, drives him to "grant *nothing*, that this *does imply an union visible also, as much as may stand with the institution of Christ, and the edification of the Church*, pag. 34. And I think the Presbyterians desire no more.

Also he saith, "The Church is one as the worship and government is one, *in nature and kind*, in the substantial of it, or that general platform of 1s. 18. &c. but as the Church is not one visible polioy or corporation in number, so neither is outward government of it, *vind. 35.*"

*Answer.* The Presbyterians do acknowledge many distinct particular Corporations of particular Churches, exercising government actually and constantly by their own Officers. But as this oneness in kind of worship and government, giveth every private Christian, whose constant actual exercise of publick worship is in one Congregation, an habituall right to worship God, and communicate in any (though never so farre remote) Congregation, if occasion serve: and makes him liable to reproofs and suspension there: If there bee known cause: why shall not the Officers also whose constant actual exercise is but in one Congregation, have the like priviledge to exercise their office in any remote Congregation upon an occasion, or call to it.

But there were two Objections *vind. pag. 35.* which played so hard upon him, that they beat him from that battery, and therefore he betakes himself to another, mounted much higher.



"I grant (saith he) the Apofile speaks of the Church, whether  
 "visible or invisible, universal or particular; but not of it in *Self. 4.*  
 "these respects; but *mystically* and *totally*, as comprehending  
 "those in heaven also, and this sense I will stick unto, p. 35.  
 "Now in this *body*, or this *Church*, as *Ephes. 3. 6.* or in this fa-  
 "mily in heaven and earth, as *vers. 15, He hath set some Apo-*  
 "*stles, and some Pastors.* Though they have exercise of their fun-  
 "ctions only, in that part which is on earth, and in that part of it  
 "on earth which is visible: yet they are placed in the whole,  
*pag. 36.*

But here M. Ellis grants more then was desired. I fear this  
 opinion will prove but a novel opinion: and he will have but  
 few fellows to stand by him in managing this piece of battery.  
 For as it expressly crosseth D. Ames before cited, who saith,  
 the Church-Catholick is one in regard of its external and acci-  
 dental state, and not internal and essential: so it crosseth him-  
 self, who holdeth that the Officers of a particular Church are  
*Officers only in their several Churches, vind. pag. 8.* Therefore not  
 set in the Church Triumphant. Certainly there they are where  
 they were set, but they are in the Church visible militant onely:  
 the Church Triumphant hath no Officers. This opinion will  
 make all the Ministers notable *Non-residents*, who never come  
 at the place where they were set, all their life time. It were a  
 happy turn for the Ministers if they were all placed in the  
 Church Triumphant as well as militant: I am sure many of them  
 will never come there. The Saints in heaven have no hand in  
 the election of Officers here below, which by his arguing they  
 ought to have, as well as the Church-Catholick in the election  
 of every particular Officer, *vind. pag. 40.* The Church in heaven  
 have neither word, Sacraments, nor discipline, which are count-  
 ed the notes of the Church where the Ministry is placed. The  
 Ministers preach not to them, pray not with them, have no ex-  
 ternall communion with them, watch not over them, neither  
 admonish nor censure them, nor perform any part of their mi-  
 nisteriall office to them. Nay, the Officers are not so much as  
 placed in the invisible Church on earth; for as invisible it hath  
 no Officers, but as visible onely. It is true they are set for the  
 good of the invisible Church, and for the perfecting of the  
 G Triumphant,

Chap. 2.

Triumphant, but they are set onely in the visible, and they are altogether visible, and many of them onely visible, and yet are true Ministers. Are the gifts of tongues, and of healing, and Deacons, set in the whole Church Triumphant, as well as Militant?

Are all that are baptized into one body, baptized into the Triumphant as well as militant? I think you will not say so. But how are we flown from a particular, visible Congregationall Church, to the Triumphant on a sudden, from one extreame to another? Remember that of the Poet, *Ne si dimissior ibis, Unda gravet pennas, si celsior, ignis adarat. Inter utrumque vola. Medio tutissimus ibis.* It is clear the Apostle speaks of that body wherein is suffering, and rejoicing onewith another. But Abraham is ignorant of us, and Israel acknowledgeth us not.

It is contrary to reason it self, that the Officers reckoned up in 1 Corinth. chap. 12. ver. 28. and Ephes. chap. 4. ver. 11. should be set in the Church essentially taken; for discipline is not essential to the Church, but for the *beneficence* or well-being of it. Considering also that by those Officers the Church becometh political. It were a paradox to say that a King, Judges, Justices, and Sheriffs and Laws, &c. are given to a Kingdom essentially, and not as it is a polity; for they are the very *formalis ratio*, and finews of the polity thereof; without which it might indeed have an essence but no polity. Our brethren for Congregationall Churches hold that there may be a Church Entire or essentiall, before they choose any Officer, else they were in no capacity to choose them; how then can Officers agree to them essentially? But it is contrary to sense to say they are set in the Church Triumphant.

But fearing that he cannot keep this battery, he retreats to a third, and that is a double one. In the generall he saith, "Should I grant (which I do not) that the Apostle is to be understood of the Church on earth, yet hee speaks as well of a particular Church as of the generall. And to avoid the dirt of this Fort or *Achileum* (as hee calls it) viz. 1 Corinth. 12. ver. 28. He brings in two significations of the word *Apostle*: "which word alone (saith he) is the ground of the Objection. "And saith, if we take the word for such Officers as were sent out

"with

“with commission from any Church upon special occasion, which  
 “is the literal signification of the word, and is so taken, 1 Cor. 8. *Sect. 4.*  
 “ver. 23. of Barnabas, and Phil. 2. 25. of Epaphroditus; so the Argu-  
 ment hence were voided.

*Ans.* But there is not the least probability that the Apostle in setting down the Officers of the Church, both extraordinary and ordinary, should set down occasional messengers first, before Prophets and Teachers.

And in Ephes 4. vers. 11. keeping the same Order, should preferre them before Prophets, Evangelists, Pastors and Teachers. And leave out in both places the highest Office in the Church, viz. Apostleship, especially considering that the Apostle there doth not set down the Officers *raptim*, promiscuously, but ad-deth an ordinall numerall with them, *first Apostles, secondarily Prophets.*

But again, “If it be taken properly, in that he applieth  
 “his speech particularly, though not exclusively, to the *Corin-*  
 “*thians*: ye are the body of Christ (to wit, ye are a particular  
 “body) and members in particular, and so Chap. 3. vers 21.  
 “22. All are yours, whether Paul or Apollos, or Cephas, or life  
 “or death, all are yours, and ye (Corinthians) Christs. Where  
 “all are the whole Churches, and each Churches in particular,  
 “as their occasions require; each in their order (He might also  
 “have said, and each particular member). So that the sense is (saith  
 “hee) he hath given or set in the Church, *s. c.* in this Church  
 “of Corinth, and so in that of Ephesus, &c. Some Apostles,  
 “&c. as their need shall require: yet not therefore making  
 “them one externall society (among themselves) As some  
 “generall Officers make not England and Scotland one King-  
 “dom.

*Ans.* M. Ellis goes upon a mistake in all his book. The Presbyterians say not that the Church-Catholick visible is one externall, constant, actual society, but *habituall*; or in *actu primo*: for constantly and actually, in *actu secundo sive exercito*, the regiment is exercised in the particular Churches or vicinities: yet hath the whole Church, or some great parts of it: some common interests that may require to be handled in Synods and Councils, by their combined or delegated Officers

Chap. 2.

occasionally: and those Officers therein, act not as private men, but as Officers, and may exert their indefinite habitual power annexed to their office, for the good of the whole, or of so great a part of the Church Catholick as did delegate them.

And as for the paralleling Apostles and Prophets in this case with life and death, it is not equal: for God did not see life and death as Officers in the Church, but they are general accidents to the whole world, over-ruled by God for the good of his people. *All things work together for the good of them that love him.*

But in that he grants the word *Church* to extend to *Corinthians* and *Ephesians*, &c. he must grant it to comprehend all the Churches as well as them, and that they all are one Church habitually, having then some general Officers over them, viz. Apostles, Prophets, Evangelists and Teachers, and the same Apostle, the same Prophet, and the same Teacher (if need required) in any of them.

But fearing he could not keep that bareness, he retreats to a fourth, and saith, "that though by Church were meant the Church-Catholick visible, yet it follows not that because it was so then, and in respect of the Apostles, that therefore it was so to the end of the world, and in it self."

*Ans.* It is true, it was not Christ's minde that the extraordinary office of Apostleship should continue, there were to be no more such men of extraordinary gifts, and divine immediate mission, of an infalible spirit, that had a full regiment over the Churches of the whole world, without any delegation from others, but by immediate commission from Christ. But how comes that which was an *integrum* in the Apostles days, to be now sublimated into a *genus*, and lose the integrality, and so prove a second notion, existing only in *intellectu nostro*? Did it cease to be one body as soon as the Apostles were all dead? seeing the same doctrine, worship, laws, discipline, enrolment by baptism, confirmation and communion in the Lord's Supper continued still: and the liberty of all the members of the whole Church to communicate in these, in any place of the world,

world, where they become (though but occasionally) continue still. And by the same reason the habitual power *in actu* Sect. 4.  
*primo* which the Officers have to dispense the Ordinances of God, may be drawn forth in any part of the Church, *in actu secundo*, upon an occasion and call, according to their measure, which the Apostles had habitually and actually, every where, both in *actu primo & secundo*, extraordinarily.

Yea, that (saith he) the Churches were not one in themselves, but one in the Apostles, and that by accident, as *England and Scotland* were one in the King, because he governed both; *Israel and Judah* in *David*: the whole world one in *Nebuchadnezzar*. But they are not therefore one, considered in themselves, *vind.* pag. 37.

*Ans.* I grant, the Church was but accidentally and temporarily one in regard of the Apostles, but integrally one in it self. It was not one, because that they were set over it, but it was one in it self integrally, because Christ is set over it, and therefore they by commission from Christ, were set over it extraordinarily, for the present good and necessity thereof. An Empire being made one under one Emperor, hath Imperiall laws and constitutions; which being divided under divers governours it loseth again, and ceaseth to be an Empire, but the Church hath the same laws under the same head that it had then, and ever shall have. The world was one Empire under *Darius* by Imperiall laws, not because the three Presidents were set over it, neither did it cease to be so by their death or ceasing. So &c.

But Fifthly, saith he, though we grant, that while the Apostles were living, there was one body of Officers over the whole Church; and so in respect of them the Church might be said to be one governed body, yet it was never one governing body: for whilst the Apostles lived, the universall governing power was committed to the Apostles onely, and not with them to any other Officers or Churches, no not to the Churches together, but they with their Officers were all in subjection to them.

*Ans.* I acknowledge the Church-Catholick was never one governing body: although M. Ellis is pleased to set down that  
 G 3 expression

Chap. 2.

expression in capitall letters, in the frontispiece of his book, and upon the top of every page, and in diverse other places, as the opinion of the Presbyterians. But where doth he finde any such expression in their writings? It may more truly be affirmed to be the opinion of some of our brethren of the Congregationall way, who put government into the body of the Congregation (whether *M Ellis* be of that opinion or no, I cannot say) and so they are a particular governing body, and if all the Churches in the world were of that way (as certainly they desire) and these Churches might in any sense be called one Church (as is confessed by all that they may) then they must needs be one governing body. But as they are now, they not only govern their own body, but passe the censure of *Non-communication* against all persons, nay whole Churches, if they judge there be cause.

But the Presbyterians hold that governments belong to the Organs, i. e. the Officers of the Church, not to the body. It is for good of the body, but belongs not to the body to exercise. The Church-Catholick is the subject *in quo exercetur*, or *cui datur quon ad utendum, sed ad fruendum*.

Neither are the Officers of the Church-Catholick one constant collective governing body actually; but habitually; for constantly and actually they are distributed into severall Congregations for the exercise of government there. But if the necessity of the whole (when it could be) or of any great part of the body, call the Officers of many particular Churches together (which may be by themselves or their Commissioners) then can they exercise their office collectively *conjunctim*, yet only according to the Word of God. And this *M. Ellis* granteth in effect pag. 7. 8. only he saith their power being met, is onely consultatory and suafory, not obligatory: it is the acting of officers, but not as officers: but I suppose he cannot think, that consultatory and suafory power, is sufficient to cure the Church of the malady of obstinate hereticks, whose mouths (saith the Apostle) must be stopped. And though the universall, constant, actuall power of government was given to the Apostles only, yet we see they did join with the particular Elders in the government of their Churches, when they were among them: and did also

also join them with themselves in making decrees to binde the Churches, *Act. 15. 6. and 16. 4.* Self. 4.

But fearing lest he had granted something too much in his former answer, he plucks away a part of it in his sixth, and saith, that the Apostles were not one joint Ministry. For besides that each had intire power; some had one part committed to them, and some another, *Thomas sortitus est Parthiam, Andreas Scythiam, Johannes Asiam, &c.*

*Ans.* The Apostles did first act in *Jerusalem* as one joint combined ministry: and did afterward disperse themselves into several parts of the world, according to their commission, yet retained their power of uniting and acting together jointly without any delegation or commission from any Churches, and this power of theirs no ordinary Ministers lay claim to. And though the planting and watering of Churches required this dispersion, and several were voluntary, yet were they fixed in no Congregation, as Elders are.

Seventhly, He denyeth the consequence of a Church-Catholic visible, from that place, and that he proves by a parallel, supposing such like words had been said of the whole world for civil government: his words are these; If it follow not, when we say, God hath set in the world, some Emperours, some Kings, some Princes, some inferiour Officers and Magistrates, therefore the world is but one governing Kingdom, and all particular Kingdoms do but govern in the right of the Kingdom of the world in common; the Officers whereof are the Kings of the severall Kingdoms, &c. Neither doth it follow, that because the Scripture saith, God hath set some in the Church, Apostles, &c. therefore the Church throughout the world is but one Congregation, to whose Officers first, as the generall Officers of the whole Church, not by way of distribution, but as a notionally (at least) collected body of Officers, the power of government is committed, &c.

*Ans.* He hath not paralleled the question rightly, but it should run thus. Suppose there were one Emperour over all the Kingdoms of the earth, and he should set down one form of government and enrowlment for freedom in the whole world, for such as will be his subjects, and should first set

Presidents

Chap. 2.

Presidents over the whole world, to abide so for their life time, as extraordinary Officers, and for ordinary standing Officers, should sit in the severall Provinces or Kingdoms, severall Officers that should rule under him or them, in their severall places: and yet appoint, that as every free member of the whole, though his fixed habitation be in one place, yet is free of the whole habitually, and upon occasion can make use of it, to trade freely in any place: so the severall governours, though ordinarily, fixedly, and actually, they constantly govern their own Provinces, yet upon occasion of difference, danger, or for the good of the whole, or any great part of the same, they shall have power to convene, either all, if it may be, or some of them by way of delegation, to act for the good of the whole, or so many Provinces as the matter concerns, and their delegation is for. Whether would not this prove the world one entire Empire, and body politick habitually? And so is the case of the Church-Catholick.

But take earthly monarchies as they have been on earth, and we finde that the severall kingdoms of the Empires did enjoy their severall liberties, with respect had to the whole, that nothing should be prejudiciall to the Empire, that the Emperour should have no damage, Dan. 6. ver. 2. And yet in reference to the Emperour, and some certain common laws, they were one monarchy. Because the Emperour could send messengers and Officers of any country, and commands to them all, and all were to take care in their places for the whole (though happily there was no generall convention of all Officers) and to keep as much as lay in them neighbour Kingdoms from rebelling, even where they had no ordinary jurisdiction, and to subdue them to the Emperour if they did rebell, and yet not retain ordinary power over them. Now these things agree to this spirituall monarchy the Church; yea, and much more. For they are all one in the head, one in the laws, and in one form of government; and ought all to do what they do in reference to the whole; as to admit every where into the whole by baptism, to eject out of the whole by excommunication, to keep any neighbour Church from defection, and to reduce them if fallen off, though they have no ordinary jurisdiction over them.

Christ



Christ can send a Minister out of any Kingdom into any, not only occasionally, *pro tempore*, as a messenger, but settle him there as an Officer, and call back or remove him any whither else. And therefore the Church Catholick is one Kingdom in general, and yet particular rights and liberties of particular Churches be preserved, so far as may stand with the good of the whole. Sect. 4.

There is one obiection which M. Hooker in *Surv.* c. 15. p. 273. hath against this proof in this text, which is of some difficulty, *viz.* That Church where Deacons are set is not an unlimited Church: But ordinary Deacons were set in the same Church wherein the Apostles were set, as in the place, 1. *Corinth.* 12. it is affirmed jointly and indifferently of them both. Therefore that Church doth not argue an unlimited power.

*Ans.* It is not affirmed that the Church-Catholick hath an unlimited power, but unlimited extent of the power given them by Christ, in regard of place within the compasse of the Christian world; and so I conceive M. Hookers meaning is.

But to the Objection it self, First premise, that Deacons were not primarily set in a particular Congregational Church, but 7 of them were at the first institution of the office set in the Church of *Jerusalem* over Jewes and Grecians, where there were many Congregations, and therefore a Classial, Presbyterian Church divided into many Congregations necessarily, at least for some Ordinances (as the Lords Supper, &c.) yet governed by one common Presbytery, and yet alwaies called one Church. But whether their Officers were fixed in the several Congregations or no, I know not, neither do I think it can be proved. X

Secondly, The subject about which their office was exercised, was not the Ordinances of worship or discipline, as the other officers were, but about alms, which in their own nature are or ought to be, and were then, voluntary. And in regard those alms come not by divine dispensation, as the immediate gift of Christ to the Church, though they be commanded indeed by Christ, but out of mens purses by contribution, being a money matter,

chap. 2.

matter, in which the Congregation hath, or had propriety, there may be something said for the limitation of that office in their act of ordinary distribution to the members of that single or combined Church contributing, that it may be performed according to the will of the donors, to whom also the Deacons are to render an account.

Thi dly I define the manner of the Apostles speech in setting down Deacons and governours, may be considered, not adding an ordinal numeral unto it, as to Appostles, Prohepts and Teachers, but *ἑσχα* and *ἔτα deinde*: and Secondly interposing two extraordinary endowments of miracles, and gifts of healing: and Thirdly the change of speech from the concrete to the abstract, *helpers, governments*. Which though they imply men by whom they are to be exercised, *viz*, helpers and governours, yet are not so set down: what the meaning of the holy Ghost is herein I cannot affirm, but I conceive that the Office of Apostles, Prophets, Teachers, is of somewhat more large extent then the other two, because they were executed as well without the Church (though set in it) as within it, *viz*. among heathens for their conversion: And in *Ecclesia constituendâ*, the other in *constitutâ* onely: And the exerting of the Deacons office not so usually and frequently out of the limits of their particular Churches, as theirs that are intrusted with the preaching of the word: nor yet their call thereunto so facil as the others: for to the exerting of government there is required a voluntary combination of many instituted Churches, and for distribution to other Churches there is required a more then ordinary necessity, and the consent of the particular Church contributing: but no such solemn call is required to the preaching the word in any other Church or Churches.

But fourthly, more directly to the Objection: Though alms, which is the subject of the Deacons office, be not reckoned among the Ordinances given by Christ, but are the gift of particular men in particular Congregations, as the rest of them: yet the necessity, command, and distribution of them, may extend further then the particular Church, and in that regard the office of Deacons, which is to collect and distribute, extends itself equally. We are bidden to do good to all, but especially

*pecially to the household of faith* (i. e. as we have occasion and ability) which is as extensive as the Church-Catholick. Any foreign Church may stand in need of our contribution and distribution. And even the Law of our land enjoyneth, that if any Congregation cannot maintain their poor, there should be help by collections from other neighbouring Congregations. And the maimed souldiers of the whole County, are maintained by constant collection from every town in the County, and there are County Treasurers that receive it, which are (as it were) County-Deacons. And if a great Town be visited with the plague, or suffer losses by fire, &c. it is frequent to make collections for them in many Counties. Yea, for whole Counties, as the whole Kingdome, hath lately done for *Lancashire*; yea for a whole Kingdome, as for our own Kingdom under war; yea for forreign Kingdoms, as *England*, yea, and the *Neiberlands* (though under another civill regiment) have done for *Ireland*. And we read what the Churches of *Asia* did for the Churches of *Jernsalem*. And we have had contribution to redeemed captivated Christians under the *Turk*, and not onely of our one Nation, but other Nations, sometimes *Grecians*. Now though these contributions and collections run among us in another channel, viz. through the hands of Church-wardens, Over-seers, Constabler, Collectors, yet this is the proper work of the Deacons; and therefore that office in regard of the extent of their possible object, may well be said to be habitually Catholick, or given to the Church Catholick, though their constant distribution should be limited to their own Congregations.

Another proof is from 1 Tim. 3. 15. *These things I write unto thee, that thou maist know how thou oughtest to behave thy self in the house of God, which is the Church of the living God, the pillar and ground of the truth.* This Church must be the visible Church where he and others must exist, and converse together, and carry themselves in mutuall duties. Also it must be an organick Church, for the Epistle containeth directions about Bishops and Deacons, yea, even in the context. Neither can the directions be solely concerning *Ephesus*; for they are written to *Timothy* an Evangelist, the limits of whose office are commensurable to the Apostles, though under them. Neither do they

Eph. 2.

concern Ephesus in any especial manner, but all Churches where ever *Timothy* should come. Therefore not to it particularly. For he prescribeth canons concerning publick praise; and the habit and carriage of women in the Church: concerning the office of Bishops and Deacons: concerning the censuring and reproof of all degrees; the Ordination and maintenance of Elders: the choice and provision for widdows: concerning the duties of servants: and a charge to rich men, not of *Ephesus* particularly or onely, but every where. Neither did they concern *Ephesus* primarily, for the Officers were already set in that Church; *Paul* found Elders there *Act. 20. 17.* In his visitation of them, and had lived there three years, *vers. 31.* as himself acknowledgeth. Primarily therefore these canons concern the whole Church. The manner also of the Apostles speech is to be attended; he doth not say *the Churches, houses, pillars, grounds*, to be ordered *pari ratione*; but in the singular number *house, church, pillar ground*, *ἐκκλησία, οἶκος, στύλος, κτήριον*, as if there were but *one Church, one house* (whereof *Ephesus* was but *one room*, and that already furnished) *one seat, one large pillar*, that hath the same truth written on every side of it, which holdeth it forth unto others, both Jews and Gentiles, within the Church and without, *more forensi*. And as *Timothy* being an Evangelist conversed with many Churches, so it is like did the members of the Church of *Ephesus*, *The English Annotations on this place are these.* "As the Catholick Church is, as it were, the whole house of God; so every particular Church, as this of *Ephesus* was, in which *Timothy* resided, was a part thereof, and by a Synecdoche (*totius*) may be called the house of God, &c. The words also of the following verse will lend us some light, *Great is the mystery of godliness: God manifested in the flesh, justified in the spirit, seen of Angels, preached unto the Gentiles, believed on in the world, received up into glory.* This is the truth supported by this seat, and holden forth by this pillar. Doth this concern *Ephesus* solely, or particularly, or primarily? Is there not a larger subject expressed, *viz.* Gentiles and the believing world? All these are the family and household of God, *Eph. 2. 19.* and *3. 15.*

Again, it is the Catholick visible Church that is so often in  
Scripture

Scripture called the *Kingdome of God*, Mat. 4. 26. 30. And the *Kingdom of Heaven*, Mat. 13. 24, 31, 33. 47. Christ calls them not *Kingdoms*, but the *Kingdome*. And compares this *Kingdome* to a *field of wheat mingled with tares*; This must be the Church visible in this world, because it is where the sower ordinarily soweth his seed visibly and audibly, *vers.* 8. which is the preaching of the Word. And because here are good and bad, wheat and tares, and the tares visibly discerned after the wheat. And it is the *Catholick Church*, for Christ himself expounds it so, *the field is the world*, not of the Jews onely, but of the Gentiles also, *Job.* 3. 16. and 17. 11. 15. And this must be the Christian world; for the other is a field of tares onely, where there could be no danger of plucking up of wheat, because none grew there. They shall sever the wicked from amongst the just. And in this field, particular Churches are but as particular ridges, enjoying the same tillage, seed, fencing, watering. *It is a barn floor with wheat and chaffe. It is a draw-net, gathering together good and bad. It is a marriage, where wise and foolish virgins, some had oil, and some onely lamps of profession. It is a feast, where some had wedding garments, some had none.* Now these things cannot be spoken solely, or primarily of any particular Congregation, but they agree to the Church-Catholick visible, this *Kingdom* is here spoken of as one, and to particular Churches as parts thereof: and this is also an organical body, therefore called a *Kingdome*. Here are servants sowing and viewing this field, proffering to weed it. And this weeding must be by Ecclesiastical censures, not the civil sword; they were not so void of reason as to go ask whether they should kill all the the world besides the godly, with a civil sword: then these tares must be members of the Church, else they were not capable to be cast out, if never in. Here were fisher-men (officers) that cast this net: and servants that invited these guests; every where in high-waies and hedges, *Luk.* 14. 23. indefinitely, without respect of Country or Town.

That which is objected against this by M. Hooker is, "That the *Kingdom of Heaven* beside other significations, as the *Kingdome of glory*, &c. it doth by a *metonymy* imply the word of the *Kingdome*, and the dispensation and administration

Chap. 2.

"of the Gospell in the Churches, and the speciall things appertaining thereunto. And citeth these parables for that sense.

*Answer.* I deny not the severall significations of those words *the Kingdome of heaven*, in severall places. But they cannot signifie so in the fore-cited places. For it is said, *the Angells shall gather out of his (Christs) Kingdom, all things that offend, and them which do iniquity, and shall cast them, &c.* can this be meant of the *Word or Gospell*? Is there any thing that offends therein, or doth iniquity that shall be cast, &c.? Is there any tares, any chaffe, any rubbish there? Or can it be meant of *the dispensation thereof*? Should finfull or erroneous dispensations of Gods Ordinances be suffered to the end of the world, for fear of plucking up good dispensations? Why do we then endeavour a reformation? Doth not *Paul* say false teachers mouths must be stopped, and witheth such cut off? \*

It is clear the texts speak of a Kingdome consisting of persons, the tares; chaffe, rubbish, foolish virgins, and evill guests, *are the children of the wicked one, men that offend, and do iniquity, that shall be gathered out of Christs Kingdome*, therefore they were in it. And the wheat, good fish, wise virgins, and good guests, *are the children of the Kingdome*, without respect to any particularities, of Town or Country, much lesse of any Congregation.

And when we say, *Thy Kingdome come*, we pray not only for the conversion of the elect, nor onely for the coming of the Kingdom of glory, but also for the Church-Catholick visible, that it might be enlarged, and have freedome and purity of Ordinances, which are things that concern it as a visible, organick Kingdome because the dispensations therefore are by Officers.

Again in *1 Corinsb. 15. 24.* it is said, *Then shall Christ deliver up the Kingdome to God his Father.* This is not the naturall or essential Kingdome, which he hath with the Father and holy Ghost as God: for that he shall never deliver up. Neither is it the *Kingdome of grace* which he by his Spirit exerciseth in the hearts of the Elect, for that shall continue for ever, and be more perfect in heaven. For the Kingdome of grace here, and of glory afterward

afterward, differ onely *gradu communionis*, as Ames tells us; here the degree is imperfect, then it shall be perfect, both in graces and joyes. *But it is the Kingdom exercised in the visible Church-Catholick, in the Ordinances of worship and discipline,* wherein our communion is mediate with God; which shall then cease. For as the Evangelical external service and manner of communion with God, thrust out the legall and ceremonial: so shall the heavenly immediate, thrust out the Evangelical. Self. 5.

But this Kingdom (saith M. Hooker) cannot be the Catholick visible Church, because that consisting of sound-hearted Christians and false-hearted hypocrites, these are not delivered up into the hand of the Father, that he might be all in all to them. *Surv. p. 276.*

*Answ.* I do not conceive by *Kingdom* to be meant the children of the Kingdom, but the external donative regiment of Christ over his visible Church-Catholick dispensed by Ordinances and Officers here below, which shall then cease. And "though the Ordinances (as he alledgeth) are distinct from the Kingdom in sense and signification. Yet they strongly argue a Kingdom constituted and governed by them: as the Kings laws argue a King and Kingdom. As from *helps* and *governments*, 1 Cor. 12. 28. we gather the consequence of *helpers* and *governours*, as officers in the Church: so from the external laws of this Kingdom, we necessarily conclude there is such a Kingdom commensurable to the extent of these Laws, and that external, *Organical* and *Catholick*, which is spoken of *Isa. 9. 6*. And the 25. ver. makes it plaine, *for he must reign until he hath put all enemies under his feet*; which reigning relates to professed Subjects as well as professed enemies; and these Subjects comprehend in a Kingdom.

Again *Heb. 12. 28.* *Wherefore we receiving a Kingdom which cannot be moved, let us have grace whereby we may serve GOD acceptably, with reverence and godly fear.* This Kingdom cannot be meant of the *internal Kingdom of grace* in the heart, for that was also exercised by Christ in his people hearts, under the old Testament, but it is meant of the external, unalterable, perpetual Ordinances of worship and government, which differed

Chap. 2.

ed from those under the Law: else the Apostles *antithesis* of the Church under the Law, and the Church under the Gospel, had not been good, which are the things he compares in that place. Externals under the Law are opposed to externals under the Gospel. It cannot be meant of the *Kingdom of glory*, for they had not yet received that. And it is plain he speaks of a Kingdom wherein we may *now serve God acceptably*, with reverence and godly fear. Now these Ordinances of worship and discipline being Catholick or universal, and relating to a kingdom, and therefore set down under the name of a Kingdom, by a *Metonymy* of the *subject* for the *adjunct*, the Kingdom for the Ordinances of the Kingdom, do strongly argue the being of the Kingdom. Can we conceive that the holy Ghost would chuse to use such a *metonymy* of the *subject*, where there is *no such subject*? It is true (as is alledged) the unalterableness lyeth in the adjunct Ordinances, *i. e.* in regard of God, who will not alter them: and that the subject or kingdom may be moved and shaken by persecutions or heresies, and so may the Ordinances also, and have been we know; but that kind of alteration, moving, or shaking, is not meant in the text, neither was intended by me. I have the rather mentioned this text, because I find one of our brethren for Congregational Churches, *viz. M. William Sedgwick*, giving this exposition of it in a Sermon of his in print, which was preached before divers members of the House of Commons.

Sect. 3.

Again 1 Cor. 5. 12. The Apostle saith, *What have I to do to judge those that are without?* The preposition or adverb *ἐν*, I desire to know what it doth relate unto; Is it not meant *ἐν τῇ ἐκκλησίᾳ*, without the Church? And can we think that that Church was the Church of Corinth only? Had Paul nothing to do to judge any that were out of the Church of Corinth, when he was an Apostle all over the Christian world? This could not be meant of the *invisible* company only: what? had Paul nothing to do to censure any but invisible members? Why did he then excommunicate *Hymeneus*, *Philetus*, *Phigellus*, *Hermogenes* and *Alexander*? And saith, I would they were cut off that trouble you. Also it must be meant of an *Organical* body, because here are censures mentioned as belonging to all within.

And



And therefore it must be meant of the Church-Catholick visible Sect. 6.  
Organical: What have I to do to judge those that are not  
brought into the Church? They are not under my power or  
cognizance, but belong onely to the civil Magistrate.

And we usually speak of the Countreys that are within the  
*Pale of the Church*, and those that are without. And we have  
an axiome, *Extra Ecclesiam non est salus*; which cannot be  
meant of any particular Congregation in the world, but is true  
of the Church-Catholick visible, typified by the *Arke of Noab*,  
without which ordinarily and visibly there is no hope of salvati-  
on. *Extra ejus gremium non est speranda peccatorum remissio.* Calv.  
Inst. l. 4 c. 1. S. 4.

Again, *Eph. 4. 4, 5.* The Apostle proveth the Church to be  
but one by divers Arguments, First, saith he, *There is one body*  
of Christ, which is therefore called, *Eph. 3. 6. Σώμα*, both of  
Jews and Gentiles, i. e. the same body. And this an Organical  
body, because *Paul* addeth, *ver. 7.* whereof I was made a Mini-  
ster. Secondly, *there is but one spirit* in that whole body, which  
is as one soul in one body. Thirdly, *there is but one hope of their*  
*calling.* Fourthly, *there is but one Lord*, or King over the whole  
Church. Fifthly, *there is but one faith*, i. e. One religion, do-  
ctrine, worship, the same Commands and Statutes for all.  
Sixthly, *There is but one Baptism*, to admit into this Church.  
Now if the whole world were under one King, and governed  
by one Law, and all one body, and all capable of the same  
priviledges, and all made Denizens by the same way of enrowl-  
ment, it would make but one Empire; yet so it is with all the  
Christians and Churches in the world; they have the same King,  
Law, Word, Sacraments of admission and nutrition, which  
they visibly subject themselves unto and receive, therefore they  
are all one visible Church. Upon this text, *ver. 12. Beza* in his  
*large Annotations* hath this note. "Being the Church is to be  
"considered, either as a *Communality of a sacred Common wealth*,  
"or as a *spiritual Temple*, or as a *mystical body*, the ministry of  
"the word ought likewise to be referred to these three heads,  
" &c. All which 3. considerations shew the unity and integrality  
of the whole.

And that this is meant of a visible Church, and not invi-  
sible

Chap. 2.

visible or Triumphant, as M. Ellis conceiveth, appeareth, because it is the Church to whom Officers are given, *ver. 11.* to be edified, *ver. 12, 13.* compacted together by joints, *ver. 16.* of whom mutuall duties both religious and civill are required, for such are set down in that Chapter, and the following. And so M. Hooker understands it, *Surv. p. 3* where he cites this text for the political body or Church visible of Christ, ruled by the donative, delegated power of Christ, and that visibly by his Ordinances and Officers. It is therefore the militant visible Church which holdeth forth the truth, *Phil. 2. 16.* contending for it *Jude 3.* Into which the thief may possibly enter. *Joh. 10. Act. 20. 29-30.*

Again Christ saith, *Mat. 16. 18, On this rock will I build my Church, and the gates of hell shall not prevail against it.* Was this a particular Congregation? No surely, but the Church Catholick, for any particular Church may be prevailed against, but the whole shall not, The place is meant of a Church future, to be built, which Christ then intended to set up, which was the Evangelical Catholick Church, consisting of Jews and Gentiles as one body, and not Catholick (as some take it) for the Church past, present, and to come, for these already in heaven are out of gunne-shot of assault, but it is meant *de Ecclesia vivorum, de militante, de Ecclesia quam Christus erat edificaturus.*

*Objection.* O! but this place is meant onely of the Church invisible, for they that are onely visible may be prevailed against?

*Answer.* It is true, that any particular meerly visible member may be prevailed against, yet all shall not; and even the invisible members which cannot be prevailed against (so many as are left in any, though never so generall and fierce persecution) shall remaine visible. For *Ecclesia nunquam desinit esse visibilis.* Therefore Satan or men shall never so far prevail, as to cut off all visible members. And though heresies should come that deceive all but the elect (which is not supposable) yet as long as the Elect are nor deceived, there remaineth a Church Catholick visible, still in their visibility. But it cannot be affirmed that all are invisible members that are left, or hold out.

out in the hottest persecutions, or subtlest heresies: strong en-  
lightnings and convictions, and struglings of conscience, and  
other by-ends may do much. Latent members may not be in-  
visible. Sec. 6.

But the reasons which induce mee to think that this text is  
meant of the Church visible, are these; two I finde in the con-  
text. First, because this Church is built upon this visible or au-  
dible profession, *That Christ is the Sonne of God*, which Peter  
made; The rock there spoken of, is not an indefinite *Messiah*  
to come, for so the Church from the beginning of the world was  
built on that work: but the profession and doctrine that the  
*Messiah is already come*, that this *Jesus is the Messiah*, and this  
*Jesus the Messiah is the sonne of God*. It is the confession that  
*Jesus Christ is come in the flesh*, 1 Joh. 4. 2, 3. And the believing  
that I am hee (saith Christ) *Joh. 8. 24*. And therefore the Jews  
that believed before in an indefinite *Messiah* to come, were upon  
their conversion to the Christian faith built upon this rock, and  
by a new Sacrament admitted into this Christian Church, as  
well as the Gentiles.

Secondly, Because Christ immediately in the next verse affix-  
eth officers to this Church, by promising the keys of the King-  
dome of heaven unto Peter (and not to him onely, but to the rest  
also, as appears in other places) which keys are an Ensign of  
office in that Church which Christ would build.

Thirdly, because the admission into this Evangelical Church  
was upon a visible profession of their belief of this doctrine,  
and a visible receiving of a visible external badg of Bap-  
tism.

Fourthly, Because this Church is assaulted by visible adver-  
saries, viz. persecutors and hereticks, and that visibly, and though  
they shall never wholly prevail against it, yet visibly waste great  
part of it many times.

And M. Hooker himself acknowledgeth, that hee doth incline  
to this judgment of this text, viz. That it is the visible Church  
that is there meant. *Serv. c. 15. p. 278*.

Onely hee objecteth against a reason which I brought of it,  
which was to this purpose. If all the visible members should  
fail, then all the invisible must needs fail also, for none are in-  
visible

hap. 2. visible (In the Church I mean) but must bee visible also. His Objection against this is, because an invisible member may bee justly excommunicated, and so cast out of all the visible Churches in the world, and so bee no visible member, and yet remain an invisible member still, for that membership cannot bee lost.

*Answer.* It is very doubtfull to mee how farr excommunication casteth a man out of the visible Church; it debarrs him indeed from the Lords Supper, because it is a seal; and from familiar intimate society with Gods people, because hee is an infected member, and so doth a notorious sinner, though the man bee not excommunicated. But I conceive it cuts him not off totally from the visible Church; For first, the seal of Baptism remaineth on him, and therefore is not iterated at his re-admission. Secondly, he is admitted to hearing the Word, and Prayer, and conference with Gods people. Hee is a diseased leprous member under censure, shut from the most intimate actual communion, untill he be cured and cleansed. That which is done to him is under consideration of discipline, as to a member now diseased, in order to cure, not as to one that is damned, or to one that is under the sin against the holy Ghost, as *Julian* the Apostate was. And if any godly person through weakness of judgement concerning Churches not rightly gathered, refuse to bee baptized (as *M. Hooker* suggesteth) hee is indeed no compleat member in that regard, but hee being converted by visible means, and making visible profession, hee is an incomplete visible member of the Church-Catholick Entitive.

Again, Excommunication in 3 Ep. *Job.* ver. 10. is called *casting out of the Church*, What Church is that; It cannot bee the invisible Church, for all the censures in the world cannot cast a man out of that, if once he be in; therefore it is the visible Church. Then I would know whether a man truly excommunicated in one Church or Congregation, is not thereby, excommunicated from brotherly fellowship with all Congregations, yea, and Christians not gathered yet into Congregations? Or whether the delivering up to Satan, by the Officers of a particular Congregation, bee onely within the bounds of one Congregation, or in reference to their members onely;

do that if he remove out of such a circle or circuit of ground to another, or from those members to others, he be out of Satans bonds again, and may communicate there de jure? Sect. 6.

"This M. Hooker saith, is per Synecdochen generis pro Specie, that particular Church where Diotrefes usurped preheminence is understood. For when a person is justly excommunicated from the Congregation in which hee was, it follows of necessity that all that fellowship he might enjoy by vertue of communion of Churches, must of that necessity be denied unto him, and hee justly deprived thereof, because in the vertue of his fellowship with one, hee gained fellowship with others.

Answer. Whether the word Church be there properly, or per Synecdochen generis, or, Synecdochen Integri. I shall not now enquire, but refer it to a Chapter by it self, in which shall be enquired whether the Church-Catholick be a genus or integrum. But I question much whether a mans fellowship with one Congregation be the ground whereby hee gaineth fellowship and communion with others. For then how came the Apostles and Evangelists by right of communion with any Churches, seeing they were fixed members of none? and how could the 120. and 3000. converted by Peter have right of communion, and breaking bread together, before any Congregations were set up or settled? Therefore I conceive the primary right to communion is gained by being of the visible body, not by being of this or that Congregation; By being within the general Covenant, not by any particular Covenant. And I conceive, that Baptism and excommunication run parallel herein; for as by Baptism a man is admitted externally into the whole visible body, and then may have fellowship with any part of the body: so by Excommunication a man is cast out from communion with the whole, and therefore may communicate with no part. This is Apollonius his assertion. Sicut per Excommunicationem legitimam excommunicatus non tantum ex hac vel illa particulari Ecclesia ejicitur, sed ubicunque terrarum ligatur, & ex communicatione fraternâ universalis Ecclesia excluditur. Mat. 18. 17. 18, Ita & per Sacramentum Baptismi, & sacra Eucharistia,

Chap. 3.

*ristia, homini communio Ecclesiastica, non tantum in particulari, sed & universali Ecclesiâ obsignatur. Confid. quarund. contro. c. 2. Art. 3.*

And though the power of Excommunication lyeth in the particular Congregation, where a person enjoys his membership under the Kingdome of Jesus Christ, as M. Hooker saith, yet the Officers of that particular Church dispense that censure in reference to the whole body, whereof hee that is so censured was a member, as well as of that Congregation, for beeing cast out of that, let him bee or go where hee will, hee is under the Kingdome of Satan, and all Churches should look at him as a Traitor against Christ, and so deal with him as one incapable of Church-Communion. *Serv. c. 15.*

So on the contrary, though Baptism bee administered in a particular Congregation, yet a man so admitted in any Congregation, ought to bee counted a subject to Christ, and not to be denied fellowship in any other Congregation, beeing a member of the visible body, except hee some way forfeit his right. So that both admission into, and ejection out of the Church, though performed by Officers in a particular Congregation, yet relate first to the whole body.

### CHAP. III.

*Proofs by Arguments and Reason, that there is a Church-Catholick visible.*

Sec. 1.

**T**He first Argument is from Gods donation unto Christ, and it stands thus. If the donation of a Kingdome by God the Father unto Jesus Christ bee universal and Oecumenical, then his Kingdome (which is his Church) is also universal and Oecumenical. But the donation was of an universal Oecumenical Kindome: Therefore there is such an universal Oecumenical Kingdome or Church.

The major proposition is clear: for whatsoever God the Father gave or promised unto Jesus Christ, that he performed. The  
minor

minor or assumption is proved out of divers places of Scripture. *Self. 6.*  
 As *Psal. 2. 8.* Ask of me, and I will give thee the heathen for thine inheritance, and the utmost parts of the earth for thy possession. Which is spoken of the donative Kingdome of Christ given to him as his asking, and not the essentiall or natural Kingdome as God, *Psal. 72. 8.* He shall have dominion from sea to sea, and from the river unto the ends of the earth. Where is mentioned the externall worship and offerings given unto him. The like promise wee find *Isa. 49. 6.* It is a light thing that thou shouldest raise up the Tribes of Jacob, I will give thee for a light unto the Gentiles, that thou maist be my salvation to the ends of the earth. Also *Daniel 7. 14.* And there was given unto him (Christ) dominion, and glory, and a Kingdome, that all people nations and languages should serve him, his dominion is an everlasting dominion, and this Kingdome that which shall not be destroyed: Which is meant of the donative Kingdome given to Christ incarnate at his ascension, answering to *Eph. 4. 8.* where the officers of his Kingdome are set down. And to *Phil. 2. 9.* This is not onely the internal Kingdome in the heart, for that he exercised from the beginning, but also an external Kingdome, or Church-politie over all nations, after the ruine of the four Monarchies, which should be exercised over those Kingdoms which formerly were subject to those monarchies: which Kingdome is that little stone cut out of the mountain without hands, which became a great mountain, and filled the whole earth; which the God of heaven should set up visibly in the stead of those Monarchies. *Dan. 2. 44.* not in a civill power of this world, but in spirituall and divine Ordinances, which all Kingdoms that should be converted to the Christian faith should submit themselves unto. And this one mountain filling the whole earth, must needs be one Church-Catholick visible, submitting visibly to Christ. 2. If Gods intention in sending Christ, and the tenour of Gods donation, and exhibition of Christ, and redemption by Christ in his revealed will, be generall to the whole world, then the visible Church is to be Catholick. But the former is true, and therefore so is the latter. I mean by *general, Generibus singulorum, non singulis generum.*

• The donation of Christ and redemption by him was not to the

chap. 3.

the Jews only (as the Jews conceived) but to the whole world. *Job. 1. 29. Behold the Lamb of God which taketh away the sins of the world. Job. 3. 16. God so loved the world (not the Jews only) that he gave his only begotten son, that whosoever beleveib in him should not perish but have everlasting life, i. e. that whosoever in any part of the world, of what nation soever, should believe, should have everlasting life, That the world through him might be saved, ver. 17.* The Antithesis is not between the elect and reprobate, that whosoever of the elect beleve, as the *Arminians* make our sense of the words to run ridiculously (though I confesse the elect only do truly beleve) but it is between the Jew and the rest of the world. So *John. 4. 42. Job. 6. 33. 51. 2 Cor. 5. 19. 1 Job. 2. 2. a propitiation for the sins of the whole world. 1 John. 4. 14. The Saviour of the world.*

Now though many of the benefits purchased by Christ for his elect be spirituall and invisible, and obtained onely by the invisible company, yet Christ himself and his death were visible, his righteousness visibly performed, his active and passive obedience were visible, and multitude of benefits that the external Catholick Church receive thereby are visible.

3. If the Gospel of the Kingdom, the seed and means of converting and bringing in (not onely of the invisible company, but) the visible Church, be Catholick, and univerally preached and received, then the Church so converted and visibly brought in, is Catholick also. But the Gospel is a general gift, and is scattered like seed indefinitely in all the world, and worketh a visible conversion of the whole world, in Scripture phrase. Therefore the Church is Catholick also. The major is clear of it self. The minor is proved *Mat. 24. 14. This Gospel of the Kingdom shall be preached in all the world, for a witnesse unto all Nations, Mar. 14. 9. Wheresoever this Gospel shall be preached throughout the whole world, &c. Rom. 10. 18. Col. 1. 6. The Gospell is come unto you, as it is to all the world, and bringeth forth fruit. Also Tit. 2. 11. appeared unto all men.*

5. If the Charter whereby the Church is constituted, be Catholick, then the Church constituted thereby is one Catholick body: But the Charter constituting the Church is Catholick. Therefore, &c.



The major is clear of it self, One Charter makes one polity. *Sec. 2.*  
 The minor will appear by those places of Scripture wherein the  
 right of all Nations indefinitely is set down, *Mat. 28. 19. Go  
 teach all Nations, baptizing them, &c. Mark. 16. 15. John 3. 16.  
 Ephes. 3. 6. That the Gentiles should be fellow-heirs and Σύσσωμα, of  
 the same body, and partakers of his promise in Christ by the Gospel,*  
*whereof I was made a Minister.* When the partition wall was  
 broken down between Jew and Gentile (and then the Church  
 began to be Catholick) what second limits did God set unto  
 his Church? None, except men would sever themselves by re-  
 jection of the Gospel, but external vocation and submission gave  
 right in *foro Ecclesie* to be admitted members of the Church,  
 and that was universall. If there be any particular Charter  
 by which any particular Church was constituted beside the ge-  
 neral, let that be produced, I know none. For if there were, then  
 that particular visible Church could never fail, or else a Gospel  
 Charter must be lost. But all particular Churches hold their pri-  
 viledges by the general Covenant applyed to themselves, as all  
 the twelve Tribes did theirs by the Covenant made with  
*Abraham* and his seed. And all the several promises, which  
 are as *appendices* to the Covenant, are made to the whole  
 Church-Catholick, and commensurable therewith, respectively,  
 without any respect to any particular Congregation or mem-  
 bership therein.

Fifthly, if there be Officers of a Church-Catholick visible, then  
 there is a Church-Catholick visible. But there are Officers of a  
 Church-Catholick visible. Therefore, &c. The major cannot  
 be denied. The minor appears by the donation of the Mini-  
 stery to the Church-Catholick visible, *Mat. 28. 19. Go teach all  
 Nations, baptizing them, &c.* They are not circumcised or limited  
 to any one place, but are sent into the whole world to all Na-  
 tions, *1 Corin. chap. 12. 28. God hath set some in the Church, first  
 Apostles, secondarily Prophets, thirdly Teachers, Ephes. 4. 11. He  
 gave some Apostles, and some Prophets, and some Euangelists, and some  
 Pastors and Teachers, for the perfecting of the Saints, for the  
 work of the Ministry, for the edifying of the body of Christ.*  
 These two last places *M. Hooker* himself confesseth to be means  
 of the externall, politicall body and Kingdom of Christ. Now  
 these

chap. 3. these extraordinary Officers, Prophets, Evangelists, were Officers of the Church-Catholick visible; for they had no limits of place, but were over all the Churches, and yet are said not to be set in the Churches, but in the Church.

And this granted by some of our brethren for Congregational Churches, that they were Catholick Officers, and therefore did not baptize in reference unto particular Congregations. And this M. Cartwright also in his Catechism acknowledged. The Apostles are usually called *apostoli universales* universal Judges.

M Hooker in answer to this Argument, *Ser. c. 15. pag. 272.* First, mistakes my words and meaning, for whereas I proved the universality of their office from the unlimitedness of it, hee conceives it of having no limits in their works, and so set down, but I meant no limits in regard of places. And then hee saith the reason of their unlimitedness arose from their *commission*, because it was general, beeing immediately called by God to preach to all nations, and they had virtually all Church power in them, but this did not issue nextly from the Church in which they were firstly set.

*Answer.* I confesse it did arise from their commission which commission being general, made them general Officers, for what more can be required to make a general Officer but a general commission? it did not issue nextly from the Church, I confesse, neither doth the power of any particular Minister, but his power is given him by Christ, and not from the people, but is annexed unto his office, onely the exercise thereof is drawn forth by the people, *pro his & nunc*, and so the necessity of the the whole Church drew forth their Apostolical Office into execution, and the necessity of a greater part of the Church may draw forth the exercise of any particular Ministers office beyond the limits of his Congregation occasionally.

6. If there be a general, external vocation, wherewith all Christians are called, and a general external Covenant whereinto all Christians voluntarily and externally enter, and are therein bound up in an unity, then there is a general external Catholick-Church. But there is such an external general visible vocation, and external individual visible general Covenant, &c.

Therefore

Therefore, &c. I mean by *general*, Catholick, Univerſal, Occumenical, in regard (not only of kind, but) of places. Sect. 2.

The major appears by evidence of reaſon and experience; for one Covenant with one King in any extent of compaſſe, makes it one Kingdom. So, &c.

The minor appears as evidently: For firſt, there is but one external general vocation divine, diſtinct from all other particular vocations, not onely civil but Eccleſiaſtical, which is uſually called our general calling: and this is external, elſe none but inviſible believers were members of the viſible Church, which is that we ſpeak of.

And there is one individuall expreſſe externall Covenant, not onely on Gods part. *Acts chap. 2. verſe 39. The promiſe is to you and to your children, and to as many as the Lord our God ſhall call.* Which is an externall Covenant and call relating to Baptiſm, which they were invited to in the former verſe, yet not excluding the inward Covenant or call, but oft ſeparated from the inward, and yet the right to Baptiſm remain in *ſoro Eccleſie*. But alſo it is one externall viſible Covenant on mens part, which all Chriſtians as Chriſtians enter into, by their profeſſed acceptance, and expreſſe reſtipulation, and promiſed ſubjection and obedience: though not altogether in one place, or at one time.

7. If the initiall viſible ſeal, admittance and enrowlment, be Catholick and Occumenical, then ſo is the Kingdom into which members are ſo initiated: But the initiall ſeal, admiſſion and enrowlment by Baptiſm is Catholick. Therefore, &c.

The major is clear without controul, he that takes up his freedom into a whole Corperation or Kingdom, is free of the whole, and in every part thereof, and hath right to all the general priviledges and immunities thereof.

The minor alſo appears, both by the patent for Baptiſm, *Go baptize all Nations*, And by the conſequences and priviledges thereof, they that are baptized in any Church are accounted viſible ſubjects of Chriſts Kingdom in all places of the Chriſtian world, no new baptiſm is required of them upon any removall: and alſo by the tenor thereof, for they are not baptized into the particular Congregation, but into the whole

chap. 3.

visible body, and into the generall Covenant, not into any particular Covenant.

8. If there be an externall Catholick union of fraternity between all visible Christians in the whole world, there is one external visible Catholick Church. But there is but one external Catholick union of fraternity between all visible Christians in the whole world. Therefore, &c.

The consequence of the major appears, because this fraternal union ariseth from the unity of the Church, which is constituted by one Covenant, into which they are all entred visible. They are not made brethren by being invisible believers only, or in the same respect, for then onely invisible believers were brethren, in the Scripture sense. If any one that is called a brother, be a drunkard, railer, extortioner, &c. 1 Corin. 5: 11. Now few true believers are fornicators, idolaters, drunkards; therefore this brotherhood is in regard of a visible profession and membership.

X The minor appears, because where-ever the Apostles came, if they found any visible believers, they are said to finde brethren, Acts 28: 14. And it is the most usuall term, that the Christians were called by, both in the *Acts of the Apostles*, and in the *Epistles*; not because they were of one particular Congregation, but because of the Church Catholick, which are also called the household of faith. *Do good unto all* (i. e. though heathens) *but especially to the household of faith*, Gal 6: 10. The household is commensurable to the entertainment of the faith: Not the invisible members only, for they could not be known as such; but all the visible members.

Ninthly, If the same individual systeme or body of external laws, under one command, whereby all Churches equally should walk and be governed, be Catholick, then the Church is Catholick. But there is the same individual systeme or body of external laws under one command, whereby, &c. Therefore &c.

The major is proved by evidence of reason, and experience of all bodies politick.

The minor is undeniable. For the same individuall systeme expressed in the Gospel *totidem verbis* governs and guides the whole Catholick Church, It cannot be said the same in kinde only,

only, but the same for matter, manner, end, method, and express words: unless we can say the several copies are several *species*, and then we in *England* have so many *species* of laws as there be copies printed of our laws. Neither is it the law *written in the heart, and put in the inward parts*; but the external systeme given to the Church as a body politick. Neither is it the moral law *quâ moral*, but that in the hand of a Mediatour, with other positive laws added thereto. Sect. 3.

Neither is this subjection unto these external laws arbitrary by the concurrent consent of divers Churches out of Custome, or because of the equity and conveniency of them, *vi materie*; as diverse Kingdoms now use the civil laws, or for intercourse with forreign Churches; but by virtue of the command of the author of them. Neither have particular Churches any municipal laws divine of their own superadded to distinguish them, as *England* and *Scotland* have, but are wholly ruled by this Catholick systeme.

Tenthly, if there be a Catholick external communion, intercourse, and communication between all the members, and in all the particular Churches in the world in worship, doctrine, and sign or seal of confirmation, nutrition, or commemoration of the same redemption visibly wrought by the same visible Saviour; then all those members or Churches, having this external communion, intercourse and communication, are one Catholick Church: But there is such a communion, &c. Therefore, &c.

The consequence appears, because communion ariseth from membership; there is an union presumed, before there can be a communion admitted, especially in the Lord's Supper, which is a seal, and if an union, then a membership, for thereby they are made of the body: and if the communion be visible and external; then so is the union from whence it floweth, for *qualis eff. Cus talis est causa*. And though there may be an admittance of a heathen to be present at the Word, singing, prayer, yet it is not an admittance into fellowship, for then we should have spiritual fellowship with idolaters; they may come and see what fellowship Christians enjoy with Christ, and one with another, but they are not admitted into that fellowship while heathens and idola-

Chap 3.

ters, but after conversion, professed subjection and believing. After the three thousand were converted by Peter, and were baptized, *they continued stedfastly in the Apostles doctrine and fellowship, and in breaking of bread and praier*, Acts chap. 2. verse 41. 42. And yet were not of one particular Church, as our brethren themselves tell us, as I shewed before, therefore as members in generall. And nothing is more usuall then for members of one Congregation to join in the fellowship of the Word read and preached, in singing and praier with members of diverse Congregations together, as at Lectures or other occasions, and frequently also at the Lords Table, even among our brethren in *New-England*, members of far distant Congregations do communicate occasionally. Also all the visible Churches on earth pray publickly, and give thanks, and on occasion may fast for the welfare of the whole Church on earth.

As for the evasion which some of our brethren have, that this communion of strangers with them is by virtue of a particular, present, transient membership with them; I conceive it of no force, nor warranted in the Word of God. Then should those men be members of two Churches at once, then ought they to contribute to that Minister, then ought that Minister to take the charge of them, then (by some of our brethrens positions) should the whole Congregation have a hand in their admission. Also if there be any Ecclesiasticall admissions or censures, or transactions, or contributions that concern that particular Congregation, they also ought being members to have their vote and consent and hand therein. And then by the same reason all that came to a Lecture which is a Church-fellowship in divine Ordinances of singing, praier, preaching, and blessing the people, must so many times turn members of that Congregation, where such a meeting is, And then is it a dangerous thing to hear a Lecture in a Congregation where the Minister or people are corrupt, for we thereby make our selves members of that Congregation, and so put our selves under that Pastor and those Elders for the present, and thereby give our allowance of them. It is not a subitane, occasionall meeting, that can make a person a member of a Congregation, but constancy, *quoad intentionem*

*sententiam falem*, Yaith Ames in *medulla*, lib. 1. cap. 32. Sect. 21. And for communion of Churches, I shall speake of it afterward. Sect. 3. And by this that hath been said, I suppose the minor is cleared also.

11. If the censure of excommunication of a person in one Congregation cuts him off from the Church-Catholick visible in regard of communion, which formerly hee had right unto, then is there a Church-Catholick visible: But excommunication doth so, &c. Therefore, &c.

The consequence appears, because the ejection (being a casting out of the body) cannot extend it self beyond the body, but ejection is general, therefore so is the body. The privation cannot extend it self beyond the habit: if therefore the extent of the depriving censure be Catholick, the habitual body is so also. There is not onely a *potentiality* of right to communicate every where, while a man is a member, but an *habitual right*, not rising from courtesie, but from membership, not particular membership, for then none could communicate but particular members, but from a general habitual membership, to which the communion belongeth. So farr as the expulsion or disfranchisement reach, so farr the Corporation reacheth, and as the particular ward or street (where such a man dwelt) loseth a particular member, so the whole Corporation loseth a member of the whole. So is it in this spiritual Corporation of the Church-Catholick visible. There is not onely an habitual fitness and capacity lost, but an habitual general right lost, during the censure. The man is said to lose a member, when the hand loseth a finger, therefore the finger was a member of the whole man, as well as of the hand in particular. So is this case of excommunication.

12. If there bee parts and members of the Church-Catholick visible, then there is a whole Church-Catholick visible: but there are parts and members, &c. Therefore, &c.

The consequence is undeniable, for whole and parts are *relata*. *Pars est qua continetur a toto, membrum ab integro*. The minor is proved also, because particular Congregations and particular Christian families and persons are parts and members of the Church-Catholick visible. Either they are parts and members,

Chap. 3.

members, or they are none, and so out of the body, and *without* in the Apostles sense. If no members, then no right to Ordinances, for right ariseth from membership, membership from qualifications. The same relation that particular believing persons bear to a Christian family, and which Christian families bear to a Congregation, the same relation by proportion do particular Congregations bear to the whole Church-Catholick, or any great part thereof. But particular persons are members of families, and particular families of Congregations, and therefore Congregations are members of the whole body of the Church-Catholick visible. The family consisteth of the persons, the Congregation of the families, and the Church-Catholick visible, or any great part thereof, of the particular Congregations. A *Genus* cannot be said to consist of *species*, but to give essence to *species*. *Animal rationale*, or humanity, doth not consist of particular men, but exist in particular men. But whether the Church-Catholick be a *genus* or an *integrum*, or both, I shall handle in the next Chapter.

I might urge also the several metaphors whereby the Scripture setteth out the whole number of visible believers under an unity. As *Revel. chap. 12. verse 1.* by a woman clothed with the Sun, (the righteousness of Christ) and the Moon (all terrestrial things) under her feet: or clothed with the Sun, the purity of doctrine, and the Moon (as some interpret it) discipline under her feet: or as some others expound it, Idolatry, whereof *Diana* the Moon was chief and most general: or by Moon some understand the legal ceremonial service which was guided much by the Moon, under her feet, *i. e.* now abolished. So *M. Mede*. Now this was a visible Church, because it is said to be seen, and is opposed either to the Jewish Church that had these ceremonies formerly on her back, or to the Jewish Christian Church, which could not for a long time cast them off; but this Christian Church did. Surely it was not a particular Congregation that *John* saw, nor is it meant of diverse particular Congregations, for then it should have been *women*, not a *woman*, therefore it was the Church-Catholick visible bound up in an unity.

Also *John 20. 16.* It is set out by one sheep-fold. *Other sheep I have which are not of this fold, them also I must bring, and there*



Sect. 4.

there shall be one fold, and one Shepherd. Which is by all interpreted of the union of Jew and Gentile, which are the two integral parts of the Church-Catholick. And though by sheep should be meant the elect, yet they are considered as visible, because brought into a fold in this world, and such a fold as the thief may enter possibly into, as it is in the former verses, yea, and the Wolf also, *Act. chap. 20. ver. 19.* Beganoteth upon that place in *John*, that by sheepfold is not meant the flock it self, but something that holds them together, and makes them one flock. *Camertius* on the place. *Est Indictum Ecclesia sancta Catholica in toto Orbe terrarum, &c.* And *Salmasius*, *Ut una est Ecclesia, ita unus est grex Christi, vel unum Ovile. Portiones gregis illius, sunt greges civitatum particulares. Hinc grex & Ecclesia idem sunt, tam in generali, quam speciali notione.* *Salmas. apparatus. 263.*

Also it is called the body of Christ, *Rom. chap. 12. ver. 5.* As we have many members in one body, and all members have not the same office: so we being many are one body in Christ, and every one members one of another. This was not meant of the particular Church of Rome, for the Apostle puts in himself into this body, who had as then never come at Rome, therefore it is the Church-Catholick there spoken of, whereof Paul was both a member, and a Minister. And this body is a visible body, because it is Organical, and organical because the Apostle thereupon reckons up the several offices in the Church, as teaching, exhorting, giving, ruling, shewing mercy, which some compute to be an exact distribution of Church-Offices. So called also *1 Cor. 10. 17. 1 Cor. chap. 12. ver. 12, 13. Ephes. 4. 4.* Also the house of God; as I shewed before, *1 Tim. 3. 15.* And a great house, *2 Tim. 2. 20* which sets out the Church-Catholick. Now had these places been meant of particular Congregations, then they should have been called bodies, houses, sheep-folds. But as many members in a body hinder not the unity of the whole, and many Towns in a Kingdom, and many houses in a city, and many rooms in a house, or in the Ark, hinder not the unity thereof; so many particular Congregations hinder nor the unity of the Church-Catholick. *Est una sola Christi Ecclesia, qua ob id etiam dicitur Catholica Particulares Ecclesie non sunt impedimento quin una sit Ecclesia, Zanch. de Ecclesia.*

## Chap. 4.

*My Dove, my undefiled is but one, she is the only one of her mother, Cant. 6. 9. She is the Lil'y among the thorns, Cant. 2. 2. which is the Church militant. She is called the Spouse of Christ, Can. 4. ver. 8, 9, 10. Again, Cant. 6. 4. Thou art beautiful, O my love, as Tirzah, sovely as Jerusalem, terrible as an army with banners. These things are spoken of the Church militant: and though some things here mentioned be spoken in regard of the invisible company onely, the better part, yet to them as visible, and as terrible by discipline. And 2 Thes. 2. 4. It is said of Antichrist, that he as God, sitteth in the Temple of God. By Temple is meant the Church of God, and this a visible Church, yet no particular Congregation, but the generall Church-Catholick, or at least the greatest part of it, for it is said, Rev. 13. 3. All the world wondered after the beast. And Rev. 17. 1. She is said to sit upon many waters, which are as is expounded, ver. 15. Peoples, and multitudes, and Nations, and tongues. And Rev. 18. 3. It is said, that All Nations have drunk of the wine of her fornication, and the Kings of the earth have committed fornication with her.*

Yea, the holy Ghost chooseth to join many particular Churches together by *Nouns collective*, Nouns of multitude in the singular number. Remarkable is that 1 Pet. 5. 2. where writing to the strangers scattered throughout Pontus, Galatia, Cappadocia, Asia, and Bithinia, he calls them all one flock, *Feed the flock of God which is among you.* And from this place M. Bayns granteth, that all the Churches of the world may be called Oecumenicall, Bayns Dialect. Tryal. p. 12. conclus. 1. And so Acts 20. *To the Elders of Ephesus.* The Churches of Galatia are compared to one lump. Gal. 5. 5.

## CHAP. IV.

*That the Church-Catholick visible is one Integral, or totum Integrale.*

**N**OW because I see it is much stumbled at, that I made the Church-Catholick to be *Totum integrale*, and because it will

will let much light into the Question in hand, I shall endeavour to prove that the Church-Catholick visible is an Integral, or *totum integrale*. Sect. 1.

• And first negatively; that it is not a Genus. First, a Genus is made or drawn *per abstractionem Logicam* (vel metaphysicam, as M. Ellis conceiveth :) but an Integral is made or constituted *per conjunctionem sive appositionem physicam, vel politicam*. Now the Church-Catholick visible is not made or drawn by logical or metaphysical abstraction, but by political conjunction, combination or apposition of the parts and members thereof. So Ames. medul. lib. 1. cap. 33. Sect. 18. *Sicut per fidem Ecclesia habet statum essentialem, & per combinationem, integralem, sic etiam per ministerium habet Organicum quondam statum.*

Secondly, A Genus hath no existence of its own, but so hath the Church-Catholick visible, viz. *Per combinationem, sive aggregationem*. No genus can be capable of combination or aggregation, for that is an accident belonging to an integral.

Thirdly, it appears by the definition of a genus both according to the Ramists and Aristotelians. The Ramists say, *Genus est totum partibus essentiale*. The genus is essential to its parts, i. e. species. But *Integrum est totum cui partes sunt essentielles vel integrales*. Now the several Churches are integrant to the Church-Catholick visible, they make and constitute the Oecumenical by aggregation.

And according to the Aristotelians, *Genus est totum quod de pluribus specie differentibus potest predicari in quid*. Now this cannot agree to the Church-Catholick or Oecumenical, for the particular Churches do not differ *specie*, by any specific forms, but onely by accidental and numerical differences. Unless you will say that *Individua sunt species*, which as it is generally denied, so it is most unlikely in similar bodies of all others. And if the single Churches be *Individua*, then at the most the Oecumenical can be but a species, yea, species *infima*. So Ames med. cap. 31. sect. 18. *Ecclesia hac (viz. Cath.) est mystica ratione una, non genericè, sed quasi species specialissima, vel individuum, quia nullas habet species propriè dictas*. And yet I acknowledge he

Chap. 4.

saieth, cap. 37. sect. 5. *Ecclesia particularis respectu communis illius naturae qua in omnibus Ecclesiis particularibus reperitur, est species Ecclesiae in genere, sed respectu Ecclesiae Catholicae quae habet rationem integri, est membrum ex aggregatione variorum membrorum singularium compositum, atque adeo respectu ipsorum est etiam integrum.*

A similar totum differs much from an universal, similarity of parts doth not at all hinder integrality, but universality is of another nature, being an abstract second notion. Society or polity is a *Genus*, and is divided or rather distinguished into *civil* and *Ecclesiasticall*: now indeed *civil* polity hath distinct species, viz. *monarchical, aristocratical, democraticall, and mixed*: but *Ecclesiasticall* polity hath none of Gods appointment. Indeed there is Papall, Prelaticall, and Presbyteriall, but the former are humane, the last (as I conceive) divine. I confess also this last is in dispute whether it be combined or independent, but this distinction our ignorance hath brought forth, there is but one by Gods institution. It is true also, that some members are invisible, and some visible onely; but the invisible have their externall communion in Ordinances *quae* visible; as they are under Ecclesiasticall polity they are all considered as visible: but this distinction makes not two species of Churches or polities, for as invisible members they have no officers, but as visible.

I acknowledge there may by the minde of man, a community of nature be abstracted from any similar bodies, and so consequently from the similarity of Congregations, but whether that be sufficient to make a *genus*, where there are no distinct specificall differences under it, I shall leave to the Logicians to dispute it out. And to make this *totum genericum existens*, is beyond my apprehension, seeing *genus* being a second notion existeth not, but *in intellectu nostro: habet fundamentum in rebus, non existentiam*. For as it doth exist it is an Integral, and loseth its abstract nature, wherein the universality doth consist. That which existeth in the individual is not *totum*, but *pars essentialis individui*. As it is abstracted by the minde, and relateth to the *Genus*, it is but *symbolum causa materialis*, as it is existing in the individual, it is *ipsa causa materialis Individui*. And therefore

fore though it be said that *tota natura Generis conservatur in una specie*, and by this rule in *uno individuo*, it must be *fundamentaliter* only, *non formaliter* for there is no such universality formally in *specie*, & *male minus in Individuo*. As the nature of a flock is not retained in one sheep, or a corporation in one man, to use M. Hooker's own words *Surv. c. 15. p. 261*. One Church also may be more pure than another, and larger than another, but these accidents vary not the *species*. Sect. 2.

But Secondly, I shall prove the Oecumenical Church is an Integral.

First, because it hath an existence of its own, which no *Genus* hath. And this existence appears because it hath an external form and state which no *Genus* can have. This Ames confesseth, as I shewed before, yea, the Church-Catholick visible had an existence before it was divided into particular societies, in the beginning of it, in the Apostles days, as I shewed before, and that not as Entitive only, but under the general Officers, with whom they did communicate, in doctrine, fellowship, breaking of bread and prayer.

Secondly, because the several and singular Churches do constitute and make up the Oecumenical, as members of it, *now membra & integrum sunt relinca*. A *genus* hath no members. The particular Churches are integrant to the whole, and the whole results out of them. Hence Salmasius hath this passage, *Universum Ecclesia corpus in majora membra divisum*. Appar. 285. Every particular Congregation contains part of the matter and part of the form of the whole, I mean with Ames in respect of the external state of it. But a *Genus* hath no external state. *Quod habet partes extra partes est Totum integrale, sed Ecclesia universalis visibilis habet partes extra partes*; Ergo. The *major* is the very definition of *totum integrale*. The *minor* is clear, for the particular Churches are different one from another & *situ & ordine*, & *singula sua prædita sunt quantitate*, & *non se invicem permeant*. They are not only distinct in consideration, but in existence, and exist one besides another as Towns in a Kingdom.

Thirdly, nay, it appears further to be an Integral, because it is made up not only of the particular Congregations, but of individual Christians, not onely such as are particular members of particular Congregations, but such as are not members of

chap. 4.

any particular Congregation, as I suppose all Christians are not fixed members, nor can be, as I could give diverse instances, as in regard of habitation, peregrination, banishment, want of opportunity, scrupulosity. If such be not members of the Church-Catholick because not fixed, then the Apostles themselves and Evangelists were none, for they were not fixed: but we find that they were not only members, but Officers, and so related to the body as organically. A Corporation or City consisteth not only of streets, wards, and companies, but of persons within their liberties though dwelling alone. Now if the Church-Catholick be a *genus*, it cannot be abstracted from them both, if it be abstracted from particular Congregations, and so be a *genus* of societies and polities, then it doth not contain such as are not in any societies or polities: if it be abstracted from them as particular unfixed members, then it is no *genus* of particular Churches for they are none, nor of any. But as the Church is an *integrum* it may be made up of both, and result out of both.

Fourthly, that which hath inherent accidents and adjuncts existing in it, as its own, that is an integral, for a *genus* is not capable of them: But the Church-Catholick visible hath accidents inhering, adhering, and betiding unto it and existing in it. Therefore it is an Integral.

The major is undeniable. The minor appeareth by instance. Beauty, strength, offensive, defensive, purity, terribleness with banners (*viz* of discipline) conspicuity, order, visibility, &c. are accidents that may and sometimes have been, and some of them are still existing in the whole Church, as belonging to the whole: therefore it is an Integral.

Again, that which is capable of being *major* and *minus*, *i. e.* is sometimes greater and sometimes lesse in extent, that is an Integral, but so is the Church-Catholick or Oecumenical. The consequence is clear, because a *Genus* can neither be greater or lesse then it ever was. *Animal* was as great a *Genus* when there were but two men, and a few beasts in the world, as it is now there are many millions: for the greatness of the *genus* is not measured by continuous or discreet quantity; but the nearer *Ens* it is, and the further from Individuals, the greater the *Genus* is, *i. e.* the more comprehensive; and the further remote

remote from *Ens*, and the nearer the Individuals, the lesse the *Genus* is, *i. e.* the lesse comprehensive. But the Oecumenical Church *Self* is measured by quantity continuous in regard of place wherein it is, and discreet in regard of number of the Churches and members thereof: sometimes the bounds thereof are enlarged, and sometimes streightened. There is an augmentation by addition of members, a diminution by subtraction, and the whole resulteth out of the aggregation of the parts, not by local contiguity always, but by political, Ecclesiastical, habitual consociation and union in the same external profession, subjection, and fraternity.

Again, that *totum* which is mutable and fluxile, is an Integral, for a *Genus* is immutable, constant, permanent, *eterna veritas*, But the Church Oecumenical is very mutable and fluxile, sometime flourishing, sometime under persecution: sometimes conspicuous, sometimes it may be latent: sometimes more pure, sometimes more corrupt: sometimes it hath more beauty and strength, and sometimes lesse: and though this be in the parts and members, the particular Churches, yet it may be in the whole, and the beauty and strength of the parts of a natural or civil body is the beauty and strength of the whole man, City, Kingdom: every member hath its own beauty and strength; and out of them all resulteth the beauty and strength of the whole.

Again, that *totum* which is measured by time and place, is an Integral: for *Genus* which is a notion is capable of neither of them; but so is the Church Oecumenical: Hence we divide the Church into primitive and successive. From the time of John the Baptist the Kingdom of Heaven suffers violence, *Mat. 11. 12.* Sometime the Church hath been planted in the Eastern parts of the world, and now is more Westerly, and is in likelihood still going more Westward. We use to limit the Church within the pale thereof, though potentially, in regard of permission, and (haply) promise, it may be actually over the whole earth. *Amplitudo & vastitas sunt accidentia Ecclesie visibilis.* See Cameron de consp. Ecclesia.

Fifthly, that *Totum* whereinto there is admission, wherein there is nutrition and edification, and out of which there is rejection, that

Chap. 4.

is an Integrall: But there is admission into the Church-Catholick visible by Baptism, nutrition and edification by the other external Ordinances, and ejection out of it by excommunication: Therefore it is an Integrall. For a *Genus* is capable of none of these. Indeed if you consider this society in reference to other societies or religions, it is a distinct kinde, in regard of the Authour, laws, qualifications of members: but in reference unto its members it is an Integrall: If this be all that is meant by *totum genericum existens*, it may passe without any damage to this question. So the severall companies in *London* are distinct from other companies, yet in reference to their own members they are Integrals, and in reference to the whole they are parts.

Sixthly, that society which hath not only a head or government in heaven, of the same nature as man: but Officers on earth, which are indefinitely and habitually Officers to the whole, that is an Integrall: but so hath the Oecumenical Church, therefore it is an Integrall. A *Genus* is not capable of Officers: But the Church-Catholick had once (by *M. Ellis*'s own confession) actual, universal Officers, and was then one governed body: and still the Officers are indefinitely and habitually Officers to the whole, as shall be proved in chap. 7. And the visibility of the head in c. 5. S. 6.

Seventhly, that which hath actions and operations of its own, that is an Integrall, for a *Genus* is not capable thereof; but the Church-Catholick or Oecumenicall hath or may have actions, operations and effects of its own. Therefore, &c.

The minor, upon which all the weight of this argument lyeth, is proved thus. The Church-Catholick visible may by their delegates meet in a generall Council, about the affairs that concern the whole, and though their power therein were but only consultative and suasive (as *M. Ellis* grants) yet it is an act of the whole, and the acts of a Kingdom represented in Parliament are said to be nationall acts; but I conceive they may do more, even make decrees, as well as the Synod, *Act. 15*. They may confute and suppress generall heresies and disorders. Yea, and the whole Church-Catholick may yield consent, submission, and obedience thereunto, as their acts, finding them agreeable to



to the Word of God. There may be a generall humiliation of the whole Church-Catholick visible, or a generall thanksgiving, as occasion may be offered. There may be a generall confession with the same hereticks, and renouncing of their errors, a generall suffering under, and conflict with, and conquest over the same adversaries, as suppose Antichrist, and Triumphant over them. See *Revel. 19. the seven first verses*; All Gods servants both great and small are called to it. *I heard as it were the voice of a great multitude, and as the voice of many waters, and as the voice of mighty thundrings, saying, Alleluiah.* This was not the act of a particular Congregation, but of the Church-Catholick, and yet all these are *vers 8.* bound up in an unity, and they are called the *Lambs wife*, and unto her was granted, &c. The Church-Catholick visible also conquereth and subdueth spiritually the rest of the world, and bringeth them into externall subjection to Christ, and leaveneth them with the doctrine of Christ, and uniteth them to themselves in this spirituall society, so that they become *adversus*, one body. And though this be done by particular members and Churches, yet that hinders it not from being the act of the whole, as when an army of souldiers of one Kingdom conquer neighbour Kingdoms, and add them to their own (as the *Romans* did all the world) it is accounted the action of the whole nation, or a nationall act; so is this case though the conquest differ in kinde. And this may serve for an answer to *M. Hookers Query, Surv. chap. 16. pag. 256. 259.* "Whether the Church-Catholick can be considered as distinct from the particular Churches (not by separation of the whole from the parts, but) in apprehension, by presenting some distinct Officer, or act, operation, which do not pertain to the particular Churches. For as there is a head and King of the whole, as visible, and one systeme of laws, and habituall, indefinite Officers of the whole, so you see there are acts and operations of the whole, both by their delegates, and by themselves, which though they be performed by particular persons belonging (happily) to particular Churches (as the souldiers making up an army belong to several Towns) yet do not perform them as particular members of the particular Churches, but of the whole, neither do they convert into the particular Churches,

Chap. 4.

but into the whole: as such souldiers fight not as members of such a Town, but of such a Kingdom, and conquer not to enlarge their several Towns, but the Kingdom in general. And for constant actual Officers, and distinct services, such as the National Church of the Jews had, because they could meet together three times every year, and oftner upon occasion, they cannot be expected in the Oecumenical body, it being too large for such constant meetings.

If the Church-Catholick can bring forth sons, then it can perform operations: But it can bring forth sons. This M. Ellis himself confesseth by consequence, for in the close of his Epistle Dedicatorie before his *vindicte Catholice*, he subscribes himself *a son of the Church*. What other Church can he mean but the Catholick? If he meaneth the particular Church whereof he is Pastor, he is not a son but a father, and governour of that: and then he should more properly have said, *Son of a Church*, not *Son of the Church*, for there be more Churches then this, unlesse he means the by-way of eminency. He cannot mean of the Church of England, for he denies all Nationall Churches, therefore it must be of the Church-Catholick, and yet he denies that there is any such thing visible, and that which he doth acknowledge he makes a *Genus*; which is a second notion without existence, and then, as himself confesseth, *Non existentis nulle sunt operationes*. The *species* or *Individuals* cannot be sons of the *Genus*. And therefore he should more safely have subscribed himself a member or Minister of the Church; and yet that must have proved the Church-Catholick: or of a Church, and then he might have meant his own.

Eightly, It will appear by the several appellations which are given to the Church-Catholick in Scripture. For in Scripture it is called a *Body*, yea, *Σώμα*, one and the same body, which hath one head or governour, which hath constant influence into that body: even into those that are onely visible members in common works, and into the invisible members in saving works, and governs both by external laws. Now a *Genus*, though it hath subordinate *species*, yet is no body, nor hath any head or governour, nor any influence given unto it, neither is it governed by any external laws, for then it must exist. Yea, the Church-Catholick

Catholick visible is called a *body fitly joined together and compacted*, by that which every joint supplyeth, Ephes. chap. 4. ver. 16. which appears to be the externall politicall Kingdom of Christ, as M. Hooker calls it, and applyeth this Chapter, because here are the Officers reckoned up, yea, the extraordinary generall Officers. *Ubi omnes partes existunt simul compactæ, ibi totum integrale existit; Sed omnes partes Ecclesia Catholica visibilis existunt simul compactæ. Ergo totum integrale totius Ecclesia Catholica visibilis existit.* This M. Hooker saith is true of a *Totum genericum existens*, but not that all particular Congregations do exist aggregated together, as members of the Catholick, pag. 288. But how a *Genus* can be a body, and the particular *species* *fitly joined together and compacted*, by that which every joint supplyeth, I cannot understand. The relation between a *genus* and *species* cannot be compared to joints compacting and joining a body together, but most properly relateth to the union of an *Integralum*.

Also it is called a Kingdom, as I shewed before, *The Kingdom of his dear Son*, Colos. 1. 13. The Gospell is called *the Gospell of the Kingdom*, Mat. 4. 23. And the *word of the Kingdom*, Mat. 13. 19. And such as are onely visible members are called *the children of the Kingdom*, Mat. 8. 12. And this Kingdom hath a King and Laws and Officers in it; now a Kingdom or society is no *Genus*, but an *Integral*. It is also called a *Tabernacle*, Rev. 21. ver. 3. which was a thing coupled together with tenons, sockets, loops, and taches, and so an *Integral*; no *Genus*, nor could signifie any. It is called also an *house or building*, 1 Tim. 3. 15. *The Church which is the house of God*, 1 Cor. 3. 9. Yea are Gods building, Ephes. 2. 21 *In whom all the building fitly framed together*, &c. which is the Catholick Church visible consisting of Jews and Gentiles, built on the visible foundation of the *Apistles and Prophets*, Jesus Christ being the chief corner stone. And a *household*, Gal. 6. 10.

Also it is called a *Temple* in the fore-cited Eph. 2. 21. 1 Cor. 3. 17. 2 Cor. 6. 16. Now the Temple was an *Integral*. Also it is called a *City*, and the members thereof Jews and Gentiles are called *fellow-citizens*, Ephes. 2. 19. Also an *army terrible with banners*, Cant. 6. 10. Also it is called a *sheep-fold*, a *wheat-field*, as *barn*.

Chap. 4.

barn-floor, a drag-net, a loaf of bread made up of diverse grains, 1 Cor. 10. 17. Now all these, and many more appellations have no analogy to a *Genus*, but to an *Integral*. Therefore the Church-Catholic visible is an *Integral*.

Ninthly, It appears to be an *Integral* from the words which the Scripture useth to express the Church and union of the members of the Church-Catholic together. As *Apt. 2. 41. There were added about 3000 souls*. They were put unto them, as an increase; now a *Genus* is not capable of addition by numbers, but an *Integral* only. Also *Eph. 4. 12. The Officers* (generall as well as particular) are given to the whole exterrall political body of Christ (to use M. Hookers own words) for the perfecting of the Saints, *ἐπεὶ οὗτος ὁ ἑκκλησιαστικὸς οὐρανός, ad coagmentationem sanctarum*. It signifieth properly to make a thing perfect by filling of it up. *inhibere numerum, absolute non dedit, or as some render it, to set in joint again*. All the significations agree onely to an *Integral*. And for the edifying of the body of Christ, *ἐκδοὺς τὴν ἑαυτοῦ τὴν ἑκκλησίαν*, i. the building up of the body, relating to the whole Church. This is proper onely to an *Integral*. A word also much like this, and more significant for the purpose in hand, we have *Eph. 2. 22. In whom all ye are builded together for an habitation of God, &c. ὡς οὐρανός, eis utrumque, which signifieth a knitting together in a building*. Also *ver. 21. In whom all the building fitly framed together groweth unto an holy Temple*. Here are three words note Integrality. First, the whole building, *οὐρανός*; Secondly, fitly framed: *κατασκευασθέντες*; Thirdly, growth, *αὔξη*. So *Eph. 4. 16. From whom the whole body fitly joined together and compacted by that which every joint supplyeth, according to the effectually working in the measure of every part, maketh increase of the body, unto the edifying of it self in love*. Here are diverse words which properly notifie an *Integral*: First, *ὅλην τὴν ἐκκλησίαν*, the whole body. Secondly, *συνεκροτηθέντες*, fitly joined, *congruente proportionem constructum, uel conuolutum*. Thirdly, *συσπασθέντες*, compactum, compacted. Fourthly, *ἐκαστος ὁ ἑαυτοῦ τὴν ἐκκλησίαν*, per omnes commissuram suppeditat equis, uel iuncturam subministrat. Fifthly, *ἐκ μέτρον ἕκαστος ἕκαστος*, in mensura unusquisque, membra. Sixthly, *αὔξη*, augmentum corporis. Seventhly,

ly, *οἱ ἀσώματοι οὐρα, in edificationem sui*. The like we finde Col. 2. 19. *From whom all the body by joints and bands having nourish-* Sect. 30  
*ment, ministred and knit together increaseth with the increase of God.* The words are most of them the same with the former in the Original. There is First, a whole body. Secondly, joints. Thirdly, bands, *σύνδεσμοι*; and nourishment ministred *ἐν ἰσχύϊ καὶ χάριτι*. Fourthly, knit together. Fifthly, increaseth with increase, *αὐξάνει τὴν αὐξάνειν*. And though much spoken in these places seem to be applicable to the invisible company, yet to them as visible, receiving edification from their Officers, and having visible communion one with another: and the Apostle speaks indefinitely of the Church under their Officers, without making any difference of kinds of believers. Also *Act. 17 34.* certain men clave unto him *ἀσώματος αὐτῷ* were glued unto him, i. e. Paul. And in the Old Testament, *Isa. 14. 1.* *The strangers shall be joined with them (Israel) and they shall cleave into the house of Jacob.* מִלְכֵּי וְעֹפְרָיִם & copulabit se & adherent. All which and many more words in Scripture about the Church, shew it to be an integral.

Tenthly, If the invisible Church be one body of Christ (as in the primary sense they are) then by the same reason the visible also (as visible) are one body, for the only difference between them (as to this purpose) is in regard of the manner of communion; the one invisibly and inwardly, the other visibly in outward Ordinances. The invisible are called Christs body in allusion to a natural body more properly; the visible in allusion to a political body. The invisible Church are only in reference to Christ their head and fellow-invisible members, but have no Officers under Christ (quæ invisible): the visible are one in reference to Christ their professed King, and his written Laws, and fellow-visible members, and indefinite Officers under Christ. The invisible body might with better reason be called a *Genus*, because their unity is only in the head, and in one kind of nature, and in spiritual relation to invisible brethren; and therefore if they be called one body: then much more the visible Church, whose union is in King, laws, the same qualifications, and external relation to visible brethren, under indefinite Officers.

M. Hooker takes much pains in *Serv. chap. 15.* to prove that the Church-Catholick visible cannot be an Integral. To which I

Chap. 4.

shall answer under the severall heads as they come in the Thesis.

His main Argument is because that an *Integrum* resulting out of the members, is *Symbolus effectus*, and so is in consideration after the members whereof it is constituted, and out of which it doth result, and so that crosseth the second part or predicate of the Question. This I shall refer to the second part of the Question.

Secondly, That it will then require one visible head over it. This I shall refer to that Objection in chap. 5. S. 6.

Sect. 4.

Thirdly, That which he objects against the visibility of the Church-Catholick I shall refer to the next Chapter. Cha. 5.

An Objection may be raised here, That the Church-Catholick may by persecutions, wars, &c. be brought into a narrow room, and haply to one Congregation.

*Ans.* It is possible, yet all the essence and priviledges of the Church-Catholick visible are *contracted and reserved therein*, and from them conveyed and derived ministerially to those whom they shall convert, and so shall dilate it self again.

To this M. Ellis replyeth first, with little better then a scoff. "We see (saith he) what straights this large conceit of the universal visible Church doth drive unto: *vind. pag. 58.* But I let that pass. He answers secondly, that this answer implyeth that the Church-Catholick is a *species*, and the particular Churches the severals of it: this confoundeth universal and particular.

But how doth this imply it? Suppose a City should by pestilence or fire, &c. be brought to the tenth of the buildings, and men that sometime it had; yet retaining the same Charter, and Officers, and priviledges, it is still the same City, though not so great as before: and must this imply that the City is a *genus* or universal, and the particular streets the *species* or particulars under it? no, but the City was the Integral, and they the parts: it is now mutilated and maimed, but it may be re-edified, and grow populous again: and so may the Church though much wasted. Nay, it implyeth that it is not a *genus*, for that cannot be contracted or dilated, for it is a notion not existing, as M. Ellis himself confesseth, *vind. p. 58.*

M. Hooker also *Surv. 260, 261.* hath an Objection much to the same

same purpose, and to that the same answer shall serve.

But he further objects, That this contracted Church extends *Self. 4.* not it self to all persons and places, as was said of the Church-Catholick before.

*Ans.* Actually the Church Catholick did never so extend it self when at largeit, but *potentially* in regard there is liberty for all to accept it and enjoy those priviledges, and so there is still left.

O! but this Congregation may fail, the Catholick cannot.

*Answer.* The whole may in it self, but is kept by Gods power and promise, at least some remnants of it. For it cannot wholly fail.

O! but an *Integrum* cannot be reserved in a member of it.

*Ans.* It cannot be so large an *Integrum*, nor every way the same, yet the whole being similar, though great part be taken away, yet the remainder is an Integral to the parts that are left, though but a member to what was formerly.

I shal here also consider a little that notion whereby he would seem to untie the knot of this difficulty, p. 259 and 260.

“That only (saith he) which put fair colours upon this false conceit, is the misapprehension of some particular examples, *vix.* when they say, that any portion of water divided, every part of it is water, and hath the name and nature of it. The answer is, that the predication or affirmation of it is not by virtue of that division of a portion of water that is made, as *Integri in membra*: but because the nature is preserved in the least portion of it, and thence this predication, this water is water, is made good, because a *Genus* and *Species* are there preserved and attended, going along with the division of *Integri in membra*. For when we say *Hac aqua est aqua*, the Arguments are *Genus* and *Species*.

*Ans.* That it is an essential predication it cannot be denied, but this doth not necessarily make them *genus* and *species*, for there is an essential predication of *species infinita* on all the Individuals, as well as of the *genus* on the *species*, but there is a great difference between the *species* and *Individuals*; for the *species* exist not, and therefore cannot be brought into an integral, but the individuals may: as we see many great integrals of

Chap. 4.

of water in the sea and rivers, &c. which contain many individuals in one integral, but not many species: as may be shewed both in natural and political bodies.

It is true, the predication is not by virtue of that division of *Integrū in membra*, but because the form of water, to which the properties of water do belong, is retained in the particular parts or members. And so every visible believer is called a Christian, and a member of Christs visible Kingdom, because the form (*viz.* visible believing) common to all Christians and all members, is found in him: and every particular Church is called a Church, because the form common to all Churches is found in it: to which forms all the priviledges and properties and promises of a Christian or of a Church, as members of the whole body, do belong.

Now hence ariseth another Question more likely to decide the controversie, *viz.* whence this right in this common nature doth arise? whether from its self, or by virtue of a Covenant? If by virtue of a Covenant, then whether by a Covenant between man and man, or between God and man? If by virtue of a Covenant between man and man, such as is the Covenant of particular Congregations (which our brethren make the form thereof) which the particular members enter into: then none that want particular membership, or are not invested thereunto by that particular Covenant, can have any right to any priviledges or promises of the Church. Then the Apostles, Evangelists, &c. either wanted right to the Ordinances, priviledges and promises, or had their right by virtue of some particular membership of, and Covenant with the Church of *Jerusalem*, or some other particular Churches; but wee read of no such thing.

Then how can a man converted from heathenism have right to Baptism, which is a priviledge of the Church, and an Ordinance of God, seeing he is no member of, nor in Covenant with any Congregation, neither can be untill baptized, as I conceive, See *Qu. 2. S. 4.*

If this right come by the generall visible Covenant between God and all visible believers, and all these visible believers by this general visible Covenant are made an external body and kingdom



kingdom of Christ, then all their privileges, and promises belonging to visible believers are given first to the whole body, and secondarily to the members thereof. The being a member of a particular Congregation, giveth only opportunity of enjoying the privileges of the external body, but not the actual immediate right therunto, for that they had before any such admittance or combination by virtue of their being visible believers, and so being members of the body, in the generall externall Covenant. No man will say, that this particular drop of water is cold and moist, because it is a part or member of this particular pond or river, but because it is a part of the element of water, unto which primarily those properties do belong, and yet the element of water is not united into one body, by any Covenant, as the whole Church is.

But if this be true that *hoc aqua est aqua*, be *genus* and *species*, then it followeth that there are so many *species* of water as there be drops in the whole element of water, and so by consequence a hundred thousand *species* of water in every pail-full; and as many *species* of wine as there are drops of wine, and so many *species* of milk as there are drops of milk, for it may be said of every drop of water, wine, or milk, they are water, wine, or milk.

Can the variation only of situation, or accidents vary the *species*? This man is a man, there is *genus* and *species*. 2. This man is an English man, there should be another *subaltern* *species*. 3. This English is a Suffolk man, there should be another inferior *species*. 4. This Suffolk man is of such a particular hundred, there should be another inferior *species*. 5. This man is of such a Town in that hundred, as suppose *Wymch*, there is another inferior *species*. 6. This *Wymch* man is of such a Parish, there is another *species*. 7. This man of such a Parish of such a Street in the Parish, there is another inferior *species*. 8. This man is of such a Family in such a Street, there is another inferior *species*. The like description may be made of particular Churches. By this reason man will prove a very large *Genus*, that hath so many *subaltern* *species* under him, and many more may be made by the same reason. Yea, the same man will vary his *species* as he varies his place, I conceive this proposition

chap. 4.

tion *Hæc aqua est aqua*, will at best be but *species infima* & *individuum*: and the like of *hic homo est homo*: but the predication of this man by the severall particular divisions and subdivisions of the Kingdom will prove *denominatio ad unam personam a subjectionis*: and this division of a Kingdom into more particular parts, will rather prove a division of *integri in membra* than *generis in species*.

But suppose this should be granted (which Logicians will not) yet it must also be granted, that as there may be such second notions of *this man*, or *this Church*, raised by *logical abstraction*, so there must needs be an integrality resulting out of *physical contiguity*, or *political conjunction* and aggregation of places, persons and Churches.

But let it be supposed, that by logical abstraction we may draw a notion of a *genus* from the similarity of all Churches, or community of nature in all Churches, though the Churches differ not from each other by any essentiall, different, specificall forms, but onely accidentally, as individuals: yet also it must be granted that by the onity of the Covenant and Charter wherein they are all bound up in an unity, and by political combination which necessarily followeth thereupon, we may raise an integrality, for they are all members of the Church-militant, of Christs external Kingdom on earth; and so they become really and necessarily members of a *political integrum*. And on this Integral were the privileges of the Church bestowed primarily, and on particular visible Churches but secondarily, as members of the whole body. Let it be granted that these privileges are bestowed by God upon such a sort of men, so and so qualified (*viz.* visible believers) and from their similarity of disposition, may be drawn a community of nature or disposition, yet the privileges of the Church do not accrue unto them, because so and so qualified, but by virtue of that one external, individual Covenant of God, made unto such qualified persons, by which external Covenant they are made externally one habitual, external, visible body.

And if the same company of men so qualified can make a *Genus* by abstraction (though there be no specificall distinct subaltern forms) and yet be an Integral because of the external

nal visible Covenant under one head, into which they are all entered, which is the fountain of all their priviledges, I shall yield the Church-Catholick visible to be a *Genus*, as well as an *Integrum*: and call it with *Ames*, *Unversaliter Integrable*. But if such an use can be made of that logical tenet, that *Individuales are species*, (which yet most Logicians do deny) that those individuals cannot be political members of one greater body, I fear it will prove more prejudicial to policy, then beneficial to Logick. Self. 5.

Again, that which M. *Hooker* makes peculiar to an Integrally from that which we call *totum universale* is, that *what belongs to this, doth not belong to all its members*, Sur. c. 15. p. 256. Is true onely of *Integrum dissimulare*, for it is not true of *Integrum similare*. for as a whole pintre of water doth moisten and cool, so doth every drop in its measure and proportion. And so it is peculiar only to a dissimular Integral.

I shall note also two things in that Chapter wherein M. *Hooker* mistaketh my meaning. First, in the seventh proposition which he call-eth out of my Thesis set downe, p. 252 *Every particular Church partaketh of part of the matter, and part of the form of the whole*. which p. 261. he makes use of again, and renders it thus, *Ecclesia Catholica giveth part of the matter and part of the form to all particular Churches*. But my meaning was, it doth consist of part of the matter, and part of the form of the whole as a room in an house consisteth of, and so (in that sense) may be said to partake of part of the matter, and part of the form of the whole, not as a *species*, but as a member of the house. Self. 5.

A second mistake of my meaning is, that he conceiveth I accounted the Jewish Church the Catholick Church, because I defined the Church-Catholick to be *the whole company of believers in the whole world*. p. 263. And thereupon undertakes to prove that the Church was *in populo Israelitico*, and not *in populo Catholico*. But this never came into my thoughts; but I acknowledge the Jews to be a national Church. But my description of the Church-Catholick was of the Church as it is now, since the partition wall is broken down, for then it became Catholick. I conceive there were believers of the sons of *Keturah*,

h. p. 4.

that did not partake of all the priviledges of the Jewish Church, except they became profelytes. It is the Evangelical Catholick Church which my Question is about; into which the Jews themselves being converted, were admitted by a new spiritual feale, viz. Baptism, and did not stand in it by their former national membership, but received a Catholick membership by baptism.

And hereupon he undertakes to make out my method of conveyance of the right of Church-priviledges to civill Gods method. He sets down my method thus. First, when a man is converted to the profession of the Gospel, and so becomes a visible believer, he is then a member of the Church Catholick. Secondly, He hath by this profession and membership with the Church Catholick right unto all Church-priviledges. Thirdly, he then becomes a member of a particular Church, but hath no right to Church-priviledges because of that, but because of his former membership with the Church Catholick.

I shall own this method rightly understood, though they were not my words, but only collected out of them. I conceive that a man of any Nation converted to be a visible believer, is a member of the Church Catholick entire, being within the generall covenant of covenancy, and hereby hath right to all Church-priviledges, that belong to the whole Church, and that his particular membership which he comes to next, doth not afford him his right, but opportunity only.

But when Mr. Hyett comes to shew how this civill Gods method, he only sheweth that it quodeth the method that God used in the national Church of the Jews, which being in populo Israelitico must needs differ from the method in populo Catholico. A person being a visible believer, must first hairent to the Jewish Church before he can partake of their priviledges, because he priviledges by Gods Covenant were so given, but now the Covenant is Catholick, it is sufficient to be in the generall Covenant to make a man have right to our priviledges of the Covenant; opportunity indeed cometh by joining himself with some particular Congregation, where the Ordinaments are administered, or some particular priviledges, belong to the generall.

For my part therefore I conceive and conclude, that the Church

Church-Catholic visible is *Totum integrale*, and the particular Churches are *partes singulares*, or members thereof, and parcels thereof. As the Jewish Synagogues were of the Jewish Church, though with some more privilege for both Sacraments. And therefore *John 2: 18*, the Apostle calleth a Christian Assembly a Synagogue, in the Greek. *If there come into your Synagogue snakes with a gold ring.* And *Heb. 10: 23*, The Apostle calls their assembling in Christian Congregations *ἐκκλησίαν*, a coming together into a Synagogue. See *Tylman to Synaga de Eccl. dis. 1. Tit. 3. Quare in Eccl. sa. ad universales aliter fit pro Christianitate, quam in Synagoga, tamēn ne hinc quidem appellationem respiciat Scriptura. Cum enim utriusq; Testamenti Eccl. sa. una eademq; sit, secundum essentiam; uno eodemque nomine utrumque populum indigitare nihil verat.* Neither am I averse from the opinion of such who make the several Synagogues of the Jews several depending Churches; for they had there the Word read and preached, and prayer, and there they kept days of holiness, and there they had their Officers of the Synagogue, and the dispensation of discipline, even of excommunication, *Job. 9: 20*. Only the censures were with liberty of appeal, in case of misadministration. And they are called by the Psalmist, *the house of God*, *Psa 83: 13*. And the Apostles separated not from them any where, until they persecuted them.

*Totum essentiale* for *genericum*, doth not comprise the form of the species in it self, but giveth the matter or common nature to the species; but the Church-Catholic is made up of the matter and form of the particular Churches conjoined, as a whole house of the particular rooms lieth: and the particular Churches have in them, and consist of part of the matter and part of the form of the whole *quoad statum externum*. And these parts are limited and distinguished from others by prudential limits for convenience of meeting and maintenance, and conducting of business: and every Christian is or ought to be a member of the Church in whose limits he dwells, being already in the generall Covenant by baptism. I do not hold (as Mr. Hooker conceiveth from my words) that *inter-communication* doth give a Church membership upon a man, for then a Heathen, Turk, or Jew, should be a Church-member, if *communicatio* with a

Church;

Chap. 4.

Church: but I expresse the condition of being baptized, and so in the generall Covenant, and then he ought to associate with the Church where God layeth out his habitation, and they ought not to refuse him, except there be sufficient cause of censure. For of any Christians dwelling in any City or Town, where there was a Church, and he not to be a member of that Church, or to be a member of another Church in another Town or City, and reside in his own but *per accidens* (as some distinguish) hath neither example nor warrant in the Scripture. And must imply either that he holdeth them not to be a Church and sonnet of the Kingdom of Christ, or else such a corrupt part that he dares not joyn himself with them. And as a man that comes to dwell in a Town ought not to refuse to be a member of that Town, but shall be ruled by the Officers thereof in civil affairs, and if he like not, he may, yea, must remove from them, if he will not submit himself; and if he continue with them, he will be liable to punishment or restraint, by those civil Officers, if there be just cause: so I conceive if any professed subject of Christ's Kingdom shall sit down, and cohobate with a Church within the civil limits allotted for such a Congregation, he not onely ought associate with them, but the Officers of that Church ought to take the inspection of him, and if he be dangerously heretical or prophane, and thereby dangerous and offensive, they ought to take care of his cure, and the preservation of the rest of their members, by censuring of him, whether he will or no, in regard of his habitual general membership, and their habitual indefinite office. And though civil prudential limits, wherein a Congregation dwells, give no formality to the Church being heterogeneous, yet as the limits of the particular seas, and their names, are from the shoars and lands they are bounded by, though heterogeneous: so may particular Churches well be bounded and denominated by their civil limits. We find frequently in Scripture, the Church which was at *Jerusalem*, *Antioch*, *Corinth*, *Ephesus*, and *Gedreus*. And so it is in *New-England*, the severall Churches are limited and named by the precincts, and names of the civil divisions of Towns. The Christians of *Boston* associated together, make the Church of *Boston*: if there be any not associated,

yet

yet it is their duty to joyn, and they ought to be received, except as I said before. Sect. 1.

## CHAP. V.

*That the Church-Catholick is visible.*

I now proceed to prove the Church-Catholick to be *visible*, which is the thing so much denied by many Divines. There is indeed an invisible Church of Christ, and that Catholick, but if you take Catholick for Orthodoxal, and also for Universal, and that in the largest sense of all, comprehending all places and all times, both past, present, and to come, some militant, some triumphant, for whose sakes principally Christ dyed, and the Ordinances were given, and the visible Church was instituted. Which invisible company are onely known to God, and are given by the Father to Christ to redeem and save. And these persons though they be visible in their generations, and enjoy visible communion in the visible Church, whereof they are ordinarily visible members, yet besides that they have invisible grace, and invisible communion with Christ their head, by faith on their parts and the Spirit on his part, and only these shall be saved: yet that is not the Church that is meant in this question, but the external Church of Christ consisting of true believers and hypocrites; in which sense the Scripture oft takes the word Church, I say, the external, political body and kingdom of Christ, as M. Hooker calls it. Sect. 2.

The same Church which *Vallo Messalinus*, or *Salmasius*, *Apolonius*, *Spanhemius*, and *Cameron de regimine Ecclesie*, and *Pollinus de Ecclesia visibili universali*, and M. *Rutherford*, Mr. *Richard Hooker*, and M. *Parker*, and diverse others, mean in their tractates of this nature, wherein hypocrites as well as true believers are partakers of externall Ordinances of worship and discipline. And of this Church it is that *Cameron* saith, *Non negamus simpliciter Ecclesiam esse visibilem, quæstio est quomodo sit visibilitas, quatenus, quando, & quibus.* Cam. de consp. Ec. p. 248. And

Chap: 5. And he addeth that this visibility rather sheweth, *Quid sit Ecclesia, quam quæ sit.*

Now visible is that which may be seen, *Visibile est quod videri potest*, i.e. that which hath a capableness in it self to be seen: herein it differs from *visum*, for that is that, which is actually seen. Now as Cameron and others of this subject do distinguish, things may be said to be visible either *per se & primario* and so only light and colour are visible: or else *per accidens*, and so figure, magnitude, motion, and all other things, which we say are visible are seen: a man is not seen *per se*, but *per accidens*. The second kind of visibility is meant in this question, *viz. per accidens & per effectum*, as all other societies are visible.

Secondly, a thing may be said to be visible, either *distincte* or *confuse*. The Church-Catholick is visible in the second sense, which Cameron also granteth, p. 248. And *aliquatenus, aliquando, & aliquo modo, & aliquibus*. p. 247-1

Thirdly, a thing may be said to be visible either *uno intuitu*, & *simplex*, or *secundum partes*, at severall aspects. The first way only one side of a thing can be seen, *viz.* one plain, and small superficies. The same man cannot be seen at the same view in all his externall parts, nor yet the Sun which is most invisible. The Church-Catholick cannot be seen *uno intuitu*, but *secundum partes, five membra*.

Fourthly, some things are visible only by the eye, and judged of by the common sense; but some other things require an act of the understanding to put those visible parts together, to apprehend the unity thereof. The unity of a man or a tree the very beast can discern, but the unity of a society or Kingdom, though it be visible, they cannot discern, because they want understanding to put the parts together.

And in this last sense the Church-Catholick is said to be visible, as a Kingdom or Empire is; the eye and common sense alone cannot discern the unity of it, but there is requisite an act of the understanding to put the visible parts together in apprehension. No man will deny an Empire to be visible, because he cannot see the union of it with his eyes.

Again, I did not take visible in the strictest sense, *visibile est quod radiat per medium, ut luminosum, & coloratum*, but for that which



which is perceptible by any of the senses; yea, to the perceiving of which there is required an act of the understanding also, to conceive of it, and put the parts together, yet not by logical abstraction, but mental apposition and conjunction, as we must do to perceive the unity of a Kingdom. The nearer the parts lie, the more is the visibility; and the further off, the less. A Congregation is more visible (in this sense) than a National Church, and a National then the Oecumenical. The more visible the *capula* or bond is, the more visible the thing is. Sect. 2.

Having shewed you what Church-Catholick is visible, and how the Church-Catholick may be said to be visible; I come to prove by arguments that it is visible or perceptible. But indeed the difficulty lieth not here, but in the integrality; for if the Church-Catholick be an integral, it will easily appear to be a visible one.

First, if the subject matter, the persons of whom the Church-Catholick doth consist, be visible, the whole Church is visible also: But they are all visible: Therefore so is the whole Church.

That the whole Church consisteth of men and women who are visible believers (not visible as men, but as believers also) none will deny. That the visibility of the whole will necessarily follow, is as undeniably true; for what makes a thing visible, but the visibility of the materials? The essential forms of the most visible things are not visible; as of a stone, or a man. Nothing can be said to be invisible, whose materials are visible.

Secondly, if the conversion into the whole Church be visible, then the whole Church is visible. But the conversion is visible. Therefore, &c.

That conversion into the visible Church is visible, none can deny. The Apostles made a visible conquest of the world by their preaching. They were charged by *Demetrius* to have turned the world upside down, *Act. 17. 6*. They turn'd men from *Idols*, to serve the living and true God, *1 Thes. 1. 9*. That this conversion was not into a particular Congregation, but into the external visible body and kingdom of Christ, is as clear; and the gathering them into particular Congregations, and sitting El-

Chap. 5.

ders over them was a second work. And the consequence will follow, for such as the conversion is, such is the Church into which they are converted; visible conversion makes no man a member of the invisible body, but of the visible only, invisible grace is required for that.

Thirdly, if the profession, subjection, obedience, and conversation of the members of the whole Church be visible, then the whole Church is visible. But they are visible; Therefore, &c.

The assumption none will deny. It is called a *professed subjection*, 2 Cor. 9. 13. and Rom. 16. 19. *Your obedience is come abroad unto all. Let your light so shine before men, that they may see your good works*, Mat. 5. 16. It is toward God in duties of the first table, and towards men in duties of the second, in charity, chastity, equity, truth, humility, meekness. *Phil. 1. 27. 2 Pet. 3. 17.* yea, visible to them that are without, 2 Pet. 3. 11. Now what reference hath this profession, subjection, obedience, conversation to the particular Congregations? Do they profess, subject themselves to the laws of Christ, and yield obedience thereunto in a godly conversation, because they are members of this or that particular Congregation, or because they are entered into the general Covenant, whereby they are made subjects and members of Christs Kingdom? Is the particular confederation the ground and cause of their profession, subjection, obedience, and godly conversation? Were not these found in them before they were thought meet to be entred into the particular confederation? Were they not judged to be subjects to Christ, and visible members of his body, and in external Covenant, before their admittance? How then could that be the ground thereof? Indeed there are some particular duties and priviledges which relate in an especial manner to the particular Congregation, and a particular unity of a particular Church, as a member of the whole body resulteth therefrom, but not the general duties, priviledges, or membership.

Suppose a man be a freeman of some Corporation, as *Middwich*, though thereby he hath the priviledges of the particular Corporation belonging to him, and particular duties belonging

ing to the Corporation are required of him, and he requires and receiveth the privilege of a subject, the execution of the laws of the Kingdom there; yet he must be conceived a member of the Kingdom, before he can be admitted a free-man of the Corporation, and he receives the general priviledges, and performs the general duties in reference to that, and not in reference to the particular Corporation, and his membership thereof; though he hath the opportunity of enjoying the one, and performance of the other, in that particular society. And yet this doth not make the kingdom a *Genus*, and the Corporation a *species* thereof, but the kingdom an integral, and the Corporation a member thereof. So is the case between the whole Church and the particular. Yet with this difference, all the particular Churches are similar parts of the whole Church, so are not all Corporations, nor all villages, they differ sometimes in kindes of Officers, sometime in particular immunities,

Sect. 2.

Also the similarity of the parts of the whole Church, gives the same denomination to the particular Churches with the whole, the particular Congregation is called a Church as well as the whole, whereas no particular Corporation is called a Kingdom: and this is the cause why the particular Churches are deemed to be *species*, whereas indeed they are members of the whole, *vice*, because of the identity of denomination, but identity of denomination or similarity of parts, are not sufficient to make a *genus* and *species*, especially where the whole is constituted by an external Covenant.

¶ If the Officers which Christ hath given to the whole Church be visible, then so is the Church. But the Officers are visible, Therefore, &c.

That the Officers are visible none will deny, because they are visibly called, ordained, and execute their office visibly. That visible Officers argue a visible politie, is as clear, such as the Officers are (in respect of visibility or invisibility) such is the Kingdom. That the Ministry is given to the whole Church, as the Levites were to all Israel, and that they are all Officers of the whole, habitual, and habitually have power to dispense the Ordinance of Christ in any part of the whole Church upon a call, shall be proved. c. 6. f. 4.

Chap. 5.

5. If the admittance into the whole Church, and ejection out of it be visible, then the whole Church is visible. But admittance by Baptism, ejection by excommunication are visible. Therefore, &c.

That admittance and ejection being publick acts before the whole Congregation, are visible, none will deny. That such as the admittance or ejection is (in regard of visibility) such is the society or polity, is as clear. That the admittance is into the whole, and ejection out of it, hath been proved already, and shall more fully afterward. Either by Baptism men are admitted into the particular Church, or the whole Church, or no Church: but not into the particular Congregation, no man is baptized into the particular Congregation, it is not the seal of the particular Covenant: therefore it is into the whole or none. If a heathen be converted in a Congregation, first he receives baptism, afterward is admitted a member of the particular confederation.

6. If the Doctrine, Law, Ordinances, Charter, and Covenant of the whole Church be visible, then so is the whole Church. But they are visible. Therefore, &c.

That the Doctrine, Law, Ordinances, Charter, and Covenants of the whole Church are visible, none will deny: for they may be seen, read, preached, and heard. That they belong to, and constitute the whole, is as undeniable. Of the same nature that the laws and charter of a kingdom is (in respect of visibility) of the same nature is the kingdom. Now it is not the invisible law of nature written in the heart, that constitutes the visible Church, for the Heathens have that, Rom. 2. 15. nor is it the invisible law of grace, promised to be written in God's peoples hearts, Jeremiah 31. 33. for many members of the visible Church have not that; but it is the visible system of laws, and covenant given by Christ to his visible Church.

And these Laws, Charter, and Covenant are the very copula or bond of the external body and kingdom of Christ, and thereby they are bound to worship and discipline. Now where the copula or bond uniting visible parts together, is visible, there the whole is visible: And the copula or bond is visible. Therefore

Therefore so is the whole. A visible bond cannot unite invisible members. Self. 3.

Against this it is objected by Mr. *Hodge*, That diverse several kingdoms may be governed by the same laws, and yet remain several kingdoms.

*Ans.* It is true, it is possible that all the kingdoms of the earth may submit to, and be governed by the same system of laws, and many now are by the civil law, and yet remain several. But they arise not from the same fountain, the same King or Governors, nor bind not in subjection and obedience unto the same King, nor do mutual duties of subjects between themselves as fellow-subjects: but are embraced *vi materia* or *forma*, because found convenient, and receive a several stamp of authority from the several States or Governors, whereby they are obliging in the several kingdoms. But these laws proceed from the same fountain, the same Lord Jesus, the King of the whole, and are obliging from the same authority to all Christians in the whole world, therefore they are one visible Church or kingdom mystical. If the whole Church be a *Gemein*, it is constituted and united together by a visible external Covenant and Law, which is not consistent with the nature of a *Gemein* as a *Gemein*.

7. If all the administrations, and dispensations, and operations of the whole Church be visible, so is the whole Church. But they are all visible. Therefore, &c.

That they are all visible (being publicly done) none will deny.

*Obj.* But these administrations, dispensations, and operations are acted in the several Congregations, and are not actions of the whole Church.

*Ans.* So is justice administered at Assizes and Sessions in several Counties and Corporations, but it is the justice of the whole, because it is administered by the same laws, and by the same authority, and is common to all the subjects of the kingdom. A man dwelling in any part of the kingdom being tried at *Suffolk* Assizes may receive his sentence and execution there, & signify. So all Church-administrations are by the same laws, and upon the same command; and persons of any Church in the world may

Chap. 5.

hear, sing, pray, and communicate any where indefinitely upon occasion, though constantly the particular members only enjoy those particular administrations from those particular Officers.

I answer further, that the Church-Catholick may act visibly by their delegates (as a Kingdom in a Parliament) in a general Council, if they can convene: though their power were wholly consultatory and suasive (as some plead;) but it is more. All their debates, arguings *pro & con*, all their advice and decrees are visible: therefore the whole whose delegates they are, is visible also. The invisible Church (as invisible) send none.

8. If it be our duty to join our selves visibly to the Church-Catholick, then it is visible. But we ought to join ourselves to the Church-Catholick. Therefore, &c.

The Assumption none will deny. As soon as the 3000. were converted by Peter, they were added to the Church. Christians may not stand alone independently. Now that must be visible Church that we must join unto, for the invisible is within the visible, and cannot be known. God commands no impossibilities. It is true indeed we must join to some particular Congregation (as a forreigner coming over into England to inhabit, being naturalized, must dwell in some particular Town) but to that Congregation as a member of the whole, wherein we may enjoy the general privileges of subjects of Christ first, and the particular privileges of that Congregation secondarily. There is no particular command to join to this or that particular Congregation, but the whole; necessity compells us to choose one. Our particular joining to this or that Congregation is not in obedience to the command; for then, had we joined to another we had broken a command, therefore that is arbitrary and limited by civil habitation necessarily.

9. If the accidents of the whole Church be visible, then so is the whole Church. But there be visible accidents of the whole Church, Therefore, &c.

An invisible subject hath not visible accidents. But so hath the whole Church; as beauty, strength, order, amplitude, which may increase or decrease, and these are accidents of the whole, arising

arising and resulting from all the parts conjoined, and made up of the beauty, strength, order, and amplitude of all the parts. Self. 4.

Also there may be general visible opposition against the whole Church, not because in particular confederation; but the general. These persecutors are visible, their actions are visibly managed, by attachments, prisons, fire and faggot: their effects visible: fines, imprisonments, confiscation, banishment and death: and therefore the object hereof, the whole Church, must needs be visible also. And all this meetly because they belong to Christ, and have given up their names to him. And because they will not visibly run to the same excess of riot, or worship the same Idols that they do.

10. If the parts of the whole Church be visible, so is the whole. But the parts of the whole Church are visible. Therefore, &c.

By parts I mean not the particular persons only, but particular Congregations. Now none deny the particular Churches to be visible, neither our brethren for Congregational Churches, nor yet the separation. And Gerard though he will not grant the Church Catholick to be visible, yet saith, *Ecce si per particulares visibiles esse concedimus*, The consequence will necessarily follow, for the visibility of the whole results out of the visibility of the parts. An innumerable number of visible parts cannot make an invisible whole.

Against this M. Ellis vind. 59. allegeth that it is too late a Self. 4.  
medium in so weighty a subject as this is. "There is (saith he) great difference between natural and metaphysical, or civil and politick bodies. For in a natural body all whose parts and members are actually and naturally joined together, the whole is visible, because the parts are visible: but in a metaphysical body or totum or whole, that is in Generals, that are by the reason of man drawn from particulars, the case is far otherwise. Peter, James, and John are visible, but manhood which is the universal agreeing to them all is not visible. This being the same with my first Objection I set down in my Thesis, one answer shall serve for both.

Ans. M. Ellis knows I took not the Church-Catholick for a Genus.

## Chap. 1.

a *Genus*, but an *Integral*. But let it be supposed a *Genus* for argument sake, or as Mr. Hooper calls it, *Totum genericum existens*, which is something fairer then Mr. Ellis's grant; for by M. Ellis's reasoning the Church-Catholick should be a *Genus* drawn by the reason of man, and so existing only in *intellectu nostro*. I say, suppose the Church-Catholick to be a *Genus*, and the particular Churches *Species*, yet this is not sufficient to make the Church-Catholick to be invisible; Will any man say, that *Animal est substantia invisibilis*, because it existeth only in *homine & bruta*? Indeed animality in the abstract is invisible, but not animal in *concreto*: so *Ecclesiæ* (as I may say) is invisible, but *Ecclesiæ* is visible. Visibility is an accident belonging primarily to a higher *Genus* then animal, viz. *Corpus coloratum*, and though every Individual animal is visible, as John and James, yet not *quæ* John or James but as coloured bodies; and it a higher *Genus* be visible, which is nearer *Ens*, and further from *Indivisibile*, then much more animal. So in this case the Church-Catholick is a Society of men, and that M. Ellis denieth not; now every Society of men is visible, and therefore the Church which is a *Species* of Society must need be so also, for the visibility doth not *transire*, because it is a particular Congregation, but because it is a Society of men, which is a higher *Genus*: I mean this in a logical consideration.

Then he proceeds to deny a civil body or Corporation, if great, as an Empire, Kingdom, or large City, to be seen in it self, but in "the parts".

*Ans.* Here he confounds *visibile* and *visum esse intus*: and by this reasoning he should deny the visibility of the world, or any particular man, for all his parts cannot be seen *intus*. *Attamen infans qui natus est videre hominem*, saith Cameron. Yea, the Sun it self should not be visible by this reasoning, because we can see but the surface of it. He could not be ignorant that I did not mean that the Church-Catholick was actually *seen intus*.

And whereas I had said the whole is visible, because the parts are so, he saith it is untrue even in the smallest bodies, but where the parts are actually united together, not where they are thousands of miles asunder.

*Ans.*



*Ans.* It is true indeed in natural and artificial bodies, whole being or integrality consisteth in a corporeal continuity, or contiguity of parts; for if that continuity or contiguity ceaseth, the integral also ceaseth, except in *potentiâ*. Sect. 4.

But in politicall bodies joined together by laws, under one government, it is otherwise; the distance of place hinders not the integrality of the whole, and though it cannot be seen *uno intuitu*, by the same man at once (unlesse by way of representation, as in a Parliament or Common-Council, as M. Ellis saith) nor yet be perceived to be one without some act of the understanding, yet this maketh not the City or Empire invisible.

He confesseth the Church-Catholick to be visible in respect of the severall parts, and places where they dwell: but this (saith he) is to prevaricate, and to prove that which is not in question. But he might remember that I took visible in the explication of the terms of the question, to be meant in regard of visible communion in holy Ordinances, though the persons never congregate into one place, to be seen with one mans eye; but in opposition to inward invisible communion. Let him grant but such a visibility of the Church-Catholick as was in any of the four Monarchies, or a civill kingdom, which yet are seen but in their severall parts and places, and I contend for no more. I suppose no particular Congregation was ever seen together, in all the members thereof, *uno intuitu*: and yet is visibly one in regard of the particular confederation, and usual meeting of most of the members. Is not *England* a visible Kingdom, though seen but in the parts of it? was it not visible before there was a Parliament to represent it, or doth it cease to be visible in the intervals of Parliament? The visibility of it consisteth in the visibility of the Persons, Corporations, Places, Laws, Government. So is the case of the Church-Catholick whose Persons, Places, Laws, (which are the visible bond) and Government are as external and visible as those of the Kingdom, *i. e.* lyable to sense, and perceivable by sense, though not actually seen by the same man at once.

I desire it might be noted that the Church-Catholick which our Divines speak of in their disputes against the Papists, is not this

Chap. 5.

this Church-Catholick which we have now in hand, but that is the whole Church or company of the elect, both past, present, and to come. It is the Church taken in the first sense, in the explication of the terms of the Question, not the external, political, mixed Church or kingdom of Christ. Neither doth that Church agree with this, but only nominally and equivocally, in that it is called by the same name, but it is not the same in nature or sense; and therefore should that and this be used in a syllogism, there would be four terms. For that Church is neither external, nor visible, nor existent, nor organical, it hath no Officers, it is no polity: it is not that which M. Hooker calls *Totum genericum existens*: for many of them are already in heaven, and the spirits of just men made perfect; many not yet born, many not yet converted.

Now to make that the *Genus* of the visible, external, political Churches of Christ, were as absurd as to make the vessels of gold to be the *Genus* of the silver, brazen, pewter, wooden, stony and earthen vessels of a house, or a marble building to be the *Genus* of all the buildings of other stones, brick and timber. And therefore to dispute from that to this, is not *ad idem*. I suppose that neither M. Hooker, nor M. Ellis, meant that Church, no more than I.

If the *genus* comprehend only invisible members, the *species* should be only of invisible members also. The *genus* is of the same nature or predicament with the *species*, and all that is common to all the *species* is found in the *genus*, and fetched from thence. There is nothing in man, but it is in *animal*, except the specific form, whereby he differs from a brute, and nothing in *animal* but it is in man, except its totality or generality, whereby it comprehends man and brute, If *homo* and *brutum* be visible living substances, they received it from *animal*.

The *genus* giveth essence to the *species*, and is *symbolum cause materialis*: but the Church of the Elect giveth not essence, nor matter to the visible Church: for there are many members of this which are not invisible: neither are the elect members of this, *quà* invisible, but *quà* existent and visible. The visible and invisible Church are contra-distinct branches of a distribution *ex adjunctis, vel modo communionis*, therefore the one cannot be

be the *genus* of the other, for then the *genus* and *species* should not be of the same general predication or denomination; but the invisible should be *genus* of the visible; one branch be *genus* of the other, which is contrary to all Logick. Sect. 4.

The invisibility of this *genus* ariseth not from a separation of the invisible members from the visible, or the sheep from the goats, but ariseth from a mental abstraction; it is the invisibility of a notion, not of the persons: It is not by culling out such as have invisible grace, and leaving the rest; for that which is so culled out, is not comprehensive of them both. The *genus* drawn by logical, mental abstraction from the most corporeal, visible substances, is as invisible, *quæ genus*, as a *genus* of incorporeal, invisible substances.

Either that Church-Catholick which our Divines speak of, is the *genus* of particular visible Churches, or it is not. If it bee, then it must be an externall visible polity (in generall notion) which must comprehend all the external, visible, Ecclesiasticall Politicks on earth; and so hypocrites as well as the Elect. The *species* consist of such matter, and therefore so must the *genus*, in the notion, I mean: but that they deny of their Church-Catholick visible.

If it be not: then it is not the Church-Catholick which M. Hooker and M. Ellis intend; for they intend a generall Church which comprehends in notion all the visible Churches under it. And therefore they differ from our Divines in their meaning of the Church-Catholick, as much as I do; And so join not, nor concur with our Divines in the same subject, neither is it *ad idem*.

Now if we make the Church-Catholick an abstract, generall notion, comprehending all particular Churches under it as a *genus*, then we make Christs visible, external Kingdom on earth, onely a logical, non-existing notion; and the particular Congregations to be the several *species* of the Kingdom of Jesus Christ, all comprehended under one logical, comprehensive notion, and the particular Covenant or confederation of such or such a company between themselves, should constitute a kingdom of Jesus Christ. And so when a man removes from one Congregation into another, he should remove out of one *species* into another: and in the *interim* be quite out of the kingdom of

## Chap. 5.

Christ; because he is out of all the *species* of Christ's kingdom, and a particular member cannot exist under this *genus*, for it is a *genus* of Congregations, *quæ* Congregations; and not of single persons. And then it will follow, that many a visible believer shall be no member of Christ's visible external kingdom; or else that after he is a visible existing subject of Christ's kingdom, he may choose which *species* of Christ's kingdom he will exist in; and that is as absurd, as if there should be an existing *animal*, that will choose whether he will be a man or a brute: who seeth not that there is a visible existence of many a visible believer, who is a subject of Christ's visible kingdom, before hee bee admitted into any of those Congregations, which are (by this opinion accounted) *species*. Now if we account the particular Churches members of Christ's Kingdom, it is not absurd for any subject of Christ, to choose which part of Christ's kingdom, or which Ecclesiasticall Corporation hee will dwell in, or adhere unto, for the actuall enjoiment of the Priviledges, Laws, and Ordinances of Christ's Kingdom: no more then for a subject of a King to choose in what part of the Kingdom he will dwell. The Kingdom of *England* though a political body, yet containeth under, or in it; not only all Corporations and villages, but all single persons, that are subject to the King and Laws, though they be not fixed, and though they want by their unfixedness the particular priviledges of the particular Towns they might have inhabited; and so the actuall opportunity of enjoiment of the benefit of the Laws administred in such Corporations or Counties, yet have an habitual right to the general priviledges, by being subjects: so have unfixed members of Christ's externall Kingdom, which reacheth single visible subjects as well as combined. Nay, a man may better make the kingdom of *England* a *Genus*, and all the Corporations and villages *species* thereof, because they are many of them distinct and different in their constitutions, then the Church-Catholick a *Genus*, and the particular Congregations *species*, which are of one constitution. And if *totum generis totum existens*, can have any sense put upon it, it will agree to the Kingdom of *England* (or any other kingdom) for it consisteth of a sort of men (*viz.* English-men) existing in several Counties and Towns; but as that notion hinders not the integra-

integrality of the Kingdom ; so no more it will the Church-Catholick visible. Sect. 5.

*Obj.* Yea, but the Church-Catholick cannot be visible, because it *wants an existence of its own* ; and existeth only in the existence of the particular Churches, the members thereof. Sect. 5.

*Ans.* Where there are existing visible members, there must bee an existing visible Integral. *Omne membrum habet suum integrum.*

The same Objection lyeth as well against any aggregative body. A heap of stones may as well be said to exist onely in the existence of the particular stones, and a particular Congregation exist in the existence of the particular families, and particular families exist in the particular persons. But if the members exist *qua* members, the existence of the integrall results out of their conjoynd existence, and so doth the visibility.

An army existeth in the severall brigades, and regiments, and they are billeted and quartered in distant places, and yet having the same Generall, the same Laws martiall, the same cause, the same enemies, although they should never bee drawn up together in one body at one place, yet are they one visible Army. So is the Church-Catholick one, and that visibly (as I shewed in the beginning of this Chapter) though there goeth an act of the minde to the perceivance of the unity. It is a political union by the same visible Charter, and Laws, and way, under one Commander in chief, and therefore visible, *i. e.* perceivable by sense though not by sense onely; the very uniting bond, the Laws are visible : yea, the existence of it will more appear, because it hath priviledges belonging thereunto, which particulars have not, or but in part, and at second hand, as hath been shewed in the former Chapt. and shall more fully in the second Question.

This Objection Mr. Ellis vind. p. 5. 6. undertakes to set down, and marks it in the margin, as if he had cited my words, but misseth both my words and sense.

And then falls upon the Answer, and saith, that "it amounts not to an answer, for no collected body that is made up of several things, hath its being in these things severally consi-

hap. 5, "dered and apart, but as united altogether, it is not an heap of stones, if one lie at *York*, some at *London*, others in *France*, *Spain*, &c.

I answer, It is true, in bodies made up by physical or artificial aggregation, there must indeed be some contiguity or nearness of parts; but in political aggregation (and such *M. Ellis* acknowledgeth, *vind.* p. 5. l. 38.) it is not necessary. *M. Ellis* makes the Empire of *Germany* one by aggregation; and yet hath not (I suppose) cast those several territories one upon another; as the *Giants* are feigned to throw *Pelion* upon *Ossa*; but they lie further distant then at *M. Calamies* door, and *M. Hudsons*; as he is pleased to make the allusion, or illusion rather, *vind.* p. 35. One Kingdom may consist of diverse Islands, if under the same King and Laws, &c. and so may all the Churches in the world be one Church, though far distant; and visible, though not actually seen, because the persons and places are visible, and the things wherein, and whereby they are conjoined, as Profession, Laws, Doctrine, Seals, Worship, &c. are external, and so visible. And though an aggregative body is not made up of the severall parts considered severally and apart, yet out of the existence, and visibility of them conjoined, either physically or politically, &c. (according as the thing is) the existence and visibility of the whole will result, as I said before.

And Sir, I cannot but right my self from an injury which in your answer to this Objection, *vind.* p. 24. you offered me: by intimating bitingly, to delude your reader, and wrong *M. Calamy* (the licenser of that Thesis) as if he were the Authour of it, or partly the Authour, or at the fairest the inciter thereto. What other construction can these words of you bear? *A man, midwife may be father also.* And another jerk you give to the same purpose, *vind.* p. 80. in these words, *Moses mother was his nurse also.* But Sir, that which is mine I am not willing should be charged upon another; I owned it in print, and to put you and others out of doubt, I assure you that neither *M. Calamy* nor any other incited me thereto, neither so much as made or altered one sentence in the whole Thesis. Neither was it of such a texture, as that you or any man else, should suppose it had any other Authour or Authours, then a mean Countrey-Minister,

Minister, such as I acknowledge may self to be. You might have known who was the Authour thereof, if you would have been pleased to have come to our company, at the reading of it, as you were lovingly invited, out of desire to enjoy your society, for the learning and piety we conceived to be in you. Self. 5.

*Object.* If the Church-Catholick or Oecumenical be one visible Church, it is necessary that they should all meet together at sometimes.

*Answer.* It is not at all necessary, neither to the unity, nor yet to the visibility of the Church. It is sufficient that the persons be visible in their severall places, and that they be combined together under the same head, by visible laws and profession, under the same visible seal and enrowment, walk visibly in the same godly conversation before men, pray one for another, as fellow-members, rejoice in the well-fare, and mourn for the ill-fare one of another, and contribute assistance one to another, as occasion is offered. As therefore it is not needfull to the unity or visibility of a kingdom or Empire, that they should meet together sometimes: so is it not needfull for the whole Church: indeed there may be some convenience in both, *ad bene, vel optimum esse, sed non adesse simpliciter.*

This M. Ellis excepteth against *vind. p. 55.* First, he asketh whether ever there were such a kingdom in the world, that the members did not meet sometimes, if it be not a meer visible monarchy, as under Popery. If there be any liberty left to the Subjects, &c.

*Answer.* Let him shew that ever the four Monarchies did meet together respectively, either in their persons or deputies, or delegates from every Province, yet that hindered not their unity nor visibility. And his answer implyeth, that the Ecclesiastical Monarchy under Popery did never meet. He makes it but a sign of liberty to meet, not a sign of visibility. And for the point of liberty inherent in the subjects as their proper right, distinct from what is derived and given by Christ as their head, there was never any Monarchy so meerly depending on the will of the Monarch, as the Church-visible on Christ, for the Church deriveth all its power from Christ, and hath all its laws.

Chap. 5,

laws given and imp. sed only by Christ, without any vote of the Churches in the making of them. It is probable that the kingdoms under the four Monarchies had some enjoiment of their municipal laws, onely might have some imperiall general laws superadded: but it is not so in this, for the whole Church (as a Church) hath no laws, but of Christs arbitrary donation. Christians are not subdued by Christ as Englishmen were by *William the Conqueror*, viz. on condition that hee would suffer them to enjoy their former rights, and the Laws of *Edward the Confessor*, but absolutely to receive Laws from him: And yet this can neither be thought tyranny in Christ, nor yet slavery in us, for Christs Laws are more beneficiall to us, then any of our own making, and his service is perfect freedom.

And yet wee read of general Councils of the Church by their delegates, which were as it were a ministeriall Church-Catholick: which in former times of the Church under Christian Emperours were frequent; and there is no intrinsecall ket in the Church that they do not meet so still, but onely extrinsecall, and extraneous, by reason of the divisions among the civill Governours: but even in our days a great part of that great body hath met, as in the Synod of *Dort*, &c. by commissioners.

*D. Whitaker* and *Apollonius* acknowledge the meeting, *Act. 1.* to be a generall Council. The members were the Apostles, who were Pastors of the Church-Catholick, and brethren out of *Galilee* and *Jerusalem*. The work was to elect an Apostle, who was to be a Pastor of the universal Church: and they that undertake and dispatch such a business which concerns the extraordinary teaching and government of the whole Church, should represent the whole Church-Catholick.

*M. Ellis-vin. p. 25.* utterly denyeth that ever there was any general Council which might be said to be the Church-Catholick, viz. ministerially. But I took general in the usual sense of it, and not precisely considered. He knows the four Councils are known by the name of the four general Councils. And so himself calls them, *vind. p. 15 l. 37.* I took the term general in the sense that we call the four Monarchies, the Monarchies of the whole world, and



and yet we know there were many countries that were never under them. And as *Luke Act. 2. 5.* saith, there were dwelling at *Jerusalem* Jews, devout men out of every Nation under heaven: and yet there were many Nations where Jews never dwelt, some of which were discovered lately. But let him look into *Euseb. de vita Constantini*, lib. 3. and *Socrates Scholast.* lib. 1. cap. 8. and he shall finde from how many Countries the first Council of *Nice* was gathered. "There were gathered (saith he) together into one, the chief Ministers of God inhabiting all the Churches throughout all *Europe*, *Africk*, and *Asia*. "That sacred Synod framed as it were by the handy-work of God, received also both *Syrians* and *Cilicians*, and such as came from *Phenicia*, *Aegypt*, *Arabia*, *Palestina*, *Thebais*, *Lybia*, and *Mesopotamia*. There was also in this Synod the Bishop of *Perfis*, of *Pontus*, *Galatia*, *Pamphilia*, *Cappadocia*, *Asia*, and *Phrygia*.

Sect. 5.

Moreover the *Thracians*, *Macedonians*, *Achaians*, *Epirotes*; Also of the *Spaniards* there was an eminent man, ὁ πρῶτος ἐπίσκοπος. The Bishop of the Imperial City βασιλεὺς ὁ ἀρχιεπίσκοπος (viz. *Rome*) by reason of his old age absented himself, yet there were present of his Presbyters, which supplied his room. Diverse things *M. Ellis* excepteth against that Council, as some extraordinariness in the summoning of the members of it, without election and delegation of the particular Churches. And that *Constantine* was the visible head of it; and that he called for Bishops chiefly, if not onely, which will not be pertinent here to answer. Something there might be extraordinary in the summons: for the civil and Ecclesiastical State not concurring together until *Constantine*, haply there could not be a regular election. In extraordinary times and cases, our brethren will grant something may be done extraordinarily: as there is in the calling of this present Assembly, as is acknowledged by *M. Gillespy*. There were also others besides Bishops and Ministers. Neither did *Constantine* either sit as President of it, nor presume to be head: but confesseth himself to be ἐπισκοπῶν ὁ ἴσας not ὁ ἴσως: but by his civil sanction he did confirm their decrees, and send them abroad. Neither is there any ground that in that or any other Council, the members acted

Sect. 6.

onely

Chap. 5.

only each for his own particular Church that sent him ( as Mr. Ellis suggesteth ) but the whole for the whole, as far as their delegation was.

I acknowledge there is power given to every particular Church to rule it self, and exercise the discipline of the Church for the being and well-being of it ordinarily. Yet so as it is a part of the whole Church, into which also the censures there passed have influence. And on some great occasions there may be cause to seek help further, as *Cranmer* appealed to a general Council. But if that extensive power cannot be had, as now it is very difficult; then must the particular, national, provincial, diocesan, or congregational Church rest in that intensive power that remains within its own limits; or also if they stand so that they cannot combine with neighbors, or have recourse unto them. Extraordinary cases cannot be regulated by ordinary rules. And this I conceive is the reason why the Scripture hath not determined more particularly the Synodical Assemblies; but only given general rules that may be drawn to particulars, because all Churches and seasons are not capable of national or provincial Synods, in regard of many things that may be incident.

In some cases also all civil power must rest in one Congregation as if it were in a wilderness, where there were no neighbor Town or cities to which it might be joined. Yet it followeth not that it must be so in *England*, or any other kingdom, where there are Counties, Shires, Cities, great Towns, or a Parliament. Yea, I know not but a particular family may, yea, must be independent in such an extraordinary case, both in Ecclesiastical and civil matters altho yet it followeth not that there is such an inherent right in every town or family all over the world, and that therefore particular Towns and families in *England* are debarred of an inherent privilege belonging to them, because necessity may put such an independency on some; in an extraordinary case, as by shipwreck, or being cast into some Island not inhabited.

Here M. Ellis chargeth me to say, that the power of a general Council, ( or of a Church Catholick visible ) is but extensive, and only extensive, and not intensive, and the power of the

the particular Churches is intensive. But Sir, do as you would be done by. It is not fair dealing to note them as my words, which were none of mine, nor my sense. For first, I never conceived a generall Council to be the whole Church-Catholick visible, but only an Oecumenicall, ministeriall or representative body of Officers, or Organs of the Church, much lesse the prime Church to which the Ordinances and priviledges of the Church were first given, of which I spake, as appears in my second part. Secondly, I never said the power of a generall Council was onely extensive; for as the particular Officers have intensive power over their particular Congregations, so hath a generall Council intensive power also, but their power is larger in extension actually, then the particular Officers is, being Officers sent from a larger part of the Church-Catholick, and intrusted by more, and acting for more then one Congregation, or one Eldership. This distinction M. Parker de polit. Eccl. lib. 3. p. 121. setteth down in these words, "*Distinguo de potestate clavum, quæ intensiva aut extensiva est. Intensivâ potestate caret nulla Ecclesia prima (v. particularis) ne minima quidem; extensivâ verò ea caret, quam habet Synodus, cum potestas ad plures Ecclesias extenditur.*" And so it neither overthroweth my first nor second tenet, as he inferreth.

Obj. If there be a Church-Catholick visible here on earth, it is fit it should have a visible head over them, that so the body and head may be of the same nature.

Ans. This was indeed used as a main argument by the Pontificians for the supremacy of the Pope. The avoiding whereof made our Divines so shy of granting a Church-Catholick visible, but it was not necessary that they should deny upon this ground, as M. Hooker conceives, Surv. p. 251. I say it is not necessary to grant a visible head to the Church-Catholick visible, no more then to a particular visible Congregation, which our brethren hold to be a body of Christ. And though they call it a mystical and spiritual body, yet that doth not imply it to be invisible. The Sacraments are called mysteries, and mysticall, and the Ordinances are called spirituall, and yet are visible, though the grace signified or conveyed by them to the Elect, is invisible. They are spirituall in respect of the Authour God, and the di-

Chap. 5.

vine subject about which they are, in opposition to naturall and civill, and so our Ecclesiasticall Courts were called spiritual, though indeed as they managed them they made them carnall and finfull. The members of the particular Congregations are visible members, and their union and confederation is visible, and they are a visible body, mix'd of true believers and hypocrites, as *Gerard, Whitaker, Gæmeron*, and even *M. Barilett in his modell*, confesseth. And their communion is visible, and yet there is no visible head on earth required for them, and why then should there be for the Church Catholick? Such a head therefore, whether visible or invisible, present or absent, as will serve a particular mysticall body of Christ, as *M. Cotton* calls a particular visible Congregation, will serve the Church Catholick visible.

I answer further, that the Church Catholick visible hath a head of the same nature, consisting of body and soul, who sometimes lived in this visible kingdom of grace, in the days of his flesh, and did visibly partake in external Ordinances, though indeed now he be ascended into his kingdom of glory, yet ceaseth not to be a man, and so visible in his humanity as we are, though glorified and glorious, yet not lesse visible in himself for that, but rather more: and ceaseth not to rule and govern his Church here below, for it is an *everlasting Kingdom*, *Isai. 9. 7.* As when King *James* was translated from *Scotland* to *England*, and lived here, he did not cease to be King of *Scotland*: so neither doth Christ cease to be the head of his Church, though he be translated and ascended to his other kingdom, the kingdom of glory. And as for a Vicar or Deputy here below, it is not needfull. We confesse the government of the Church in regard of the head is absolutely Monarchical, but in regard of the Officers, it is Aristocratical.

This second answer is excepted against, both by *M. Ellis vind. p. 56.* and *M. Hooker Surv. p. 258.* "It is sufficient (saith *M. Ellis*) for Christ is head invisible, and thence our Divines affirm his body the Church to be mysticall also, and invisible as ken properly.

I answer, That Christ is not only head of the invisible company, which headship and body allude to the natural head and body,

dy, which is indeed the Church in the most proper and prime *Sect. 6.* sense, but he is head also of the visible company or Ecclesiasticall body, in allusion to a civill head or governour.

Christ not only affordeth invisible communion to his invisible members, but externally by Ordinances to both invisible and visible members of the Church, yet to both visibly. For Christ by his Ambassadors, and in his written word speaks externally to their senses, and they speak externally to him in prayer and singing. And as he was once visibly on earth in one nature, a visible head of his Church: so also, if the Millenary opinion be true (which some of this way hold,) he shall come again, and shall sit and reign a thousand years visibly. But whether that opinion be true or no (which I much doubt) yet he shall come again visibly, as the Son of man, at the end of the world, and take account of the managing of these Ordinances, and of the carriage both of Officers and private Christians, and the Elect shall be gathered together into heaven, and enjoy him visibly to all eternity, and he shall visibly condemn the reprobates, and every eye shall see him. So that this is but an intervall, wherein Christ though he be now visible in himself, yet appears not to us visibly, ordinarily, though he did to *Paul* and *Stephen*, even after his ascension. Yet, now he affords visible communion to his people by his Ordinances, and they do visible service unto him, though he resideth not with them. If the absence of the King make the Kingdom invisible, then *Ireland* is an invisible kingdom.

*M. Hooker* affirms this opinion to be not onely untrue, but very dangerous, to hold that Christ as meer man consisting of body and soul is a visible head of his Church. And thereupon citeth *Whitaker's* words, that Christ did not reside in the Church as a visible Monarch, nor came into the world to set up a visible Monarchy.

*Ans.* I do not conceive that Christ as meer man consisting of body and soul is the head of the Church, neither invisible or political, but as God-man, yet that person was visible, though but in one of his natures, and in but half of that neither, viz. his body. The visibility of one nature makes visibility to be predicated of the whole person, else no man is visible, for his soul

## Chap. 5.

is invisible. It is the meanest half of him that is visible, and so no earthly King should be visible. Christ is called *God manifested in the flesh*, 1 Tim. 3. 16. *And the Word became flesh, and dwelt among us, and we beheld his glory, the glory as of the only begotten of the Father*, Joh. 1. 14. *We are eye-witnesses of his majesty*, 1 Pet. 1. 16. *That which was from the beginning, which we have heard, which we have seen with our eyes, which we have looked upon, and our hands have handled of the Word of life*, 1 Joh. 1. 1. I hope these speeches are neither untrue nor dangerous. And for his donative power and authority, Christ saith of himself, Joh. 5. 27. *that the Father hath given authority to execute judgment because he is the Son of man: The Son of man hath power on earth to forgive sinnes*, and that was a kingly action. And the Apostle saith, Acts 17. 31. *God hath appointed a day wherein he will judge the world in righteousness, by that man whom he hath ordained*. It is true indeed all the virtue and power come from the deity to gather and perfect the Saints, forgive sins, raise the dead, judge the world; and by his deity only he is present with us now, yet as man also he is head of his Church and not as God only; for had he been only God, he could not have been a suitable head or second Adam, but that he became by becoming man, and taking our nature upon him. *The seed of the woman must break the Serpents head*. The governing power and wisdom of a King is in his invisible soul, yet he is a visible King. It is true also that Christ came not in the days of his flesh as a visible, temporall Monarch, in *Dauids* civill throne, yet Christ confesseth then unto *Pilate* that he was a King, though his kingdom was not of this world, i.e. civill, to oppose *Cesars*, yet it is in this world, and externall in this world also. God over-ruled *Pilate* to set a true title over Christ on the Crosse, *Jesus of Nazareth king of the Jews*. As a King he had all power in heaven and earth given him, Mat. 28. 18. 19. and immediately thereupon as a King he issues out his Commission to his Apostles, *Go ye therefore and teach all Nations, &c.* It is not because Christ died for all as a Priest, that this commission is so general, but because all power in heaven and earth was given to him, therefore as a King he summons in all, even the very rebels to yield obedience to his lawfull authority, but only such as yield

yield obedience and come in are saved by him. He set Officers and officers, and gave commandments to his Apostles, *Mat. 1. 2.* And appointed the form of Ecclesiastical proceedings in discipline, in case of scandal, *Mat. 18.* And this is no other doctrine than our reverend Assembly hath set out, both in their larger and shorter *Catechism*. That Christ our Redeemer execute the offices of a Prophet, a Priest, and a King, both in his state of humiliation and exaltation. Neither can I see any reason why Christ should be denied to execute his kingly office while he was here below, any more than his Priestly or Prophetical. If he was then a King and had all power given him, he did not suspend the execution of it, while he was on earth, *Job. 5. 17.* neither doth *David* think fit, *1. Sam. 15. 22.* cited by *M. Hooker*, deny Christ to be head at man, though he acknowledge him to be head as God alio. And though he saith, that he commands that degree of dignity to none else: He by these words includeth the Pope, &c. but not Christ's own humane nature; by which it is evident that we come to our union with God.

All this can only be alleged in this case, that Christ is now visibly seen as King with our bodily eyes, nor can we come to him bodily, nor receive any verbal commands from him, neither so we as from an earthly King. But how few subjects have that privilege in regard of their earthly Sovereigns: The legal commands are counted the King's commands, and not his verbal only, nor dilatory. Yet we find that Christ after his ascension did in *Rev. 2.* and *3.* *Chap.* write a Letter by *John* unto the 7. Churches of *Asia* and reprove or commend and exhort them particularly: and in the inditing of it appears as a man to *John*: and useth arguments therein from things befalling him as man: as that he was dead and is alive again, and washed us from our sins in his own blood, &c.

*Object.* Though there be a Church-Catholick, yet it is not visible, because it is the object of our faith, it being an Article of our faith, *I believe the holy Church-Catholick.* Now faith is the evidence of things not seen, *Heb. 11. 1.* Things seen are the object of sense and knowledge, not of faith. For what a man seeth, how can he be said to believ? faith and sense are.

Sells 60

Chap. 5.

are opposed each to other by the Apostle.

*Ans.* If indeed we take the Catholick Church in the largest sense, for the elect past, present, and to come, as some do; the Church-Catholick is invisible. Also the grace of such as are invisible members, is invisible: but that is not the Church we are speaking of: The Church we have in hand is the whole company of visible believers in the world, considered as visible.

Secondly I answer, It is not true that that which is in it self visible cannot be the object of faith. Indeed that which is actually seen is the object of that man's sense and knowledge that seeth it: but that which is visible, *i. e.* which may be seen, may be the the object of faith to him that seeth it not actually. I believe there is *Orbis universus* a whole world, but I never saw it, and yet it is visible. I believe that there is a kingdom of *Spain*, and Empire of *Germany*, and they are visible; but I never saw them, nor am ever likely to see them. I believe there are constellations about the South-pole, but I never saw them, and yet they are as visible as those about the North-pole: So I believe that the Church visible is now no longer included in the land of *Canaan*, but is spread over many kingdoms, and may be into all, but I never saw it in the extent thereof, and yet it is visible in it self. The extent of place though it lessens the visibility, yet it takes it not away. I know this was an argument of an eminent Divine of ours against a Jesuite, and it holds strongly against the visibility of the Church-Catholick taken in the first sense, but not in our sense. Yea, grant the Church-Catholick to be a *Genus*, yet the argument reacheth it not, for a *Genus* is not the object of faith, but of knowledge, because the assurance thereof ariseth not from the credit of any ones word, but from our own understanding.



CHAP. VI

*That the Church-Catholike visible is an Organical, yet similar body. Tea one Organical body.*

**T**HAT the particular Churches are or ought to be organized, *It is Organical* is not a thing questioned by M. Ellis or M. Hooker, nor any one that I know of. And therefore I shall neither trouble my self nor my reader about that. It may not onely be drawn from *Matt. 18. Tell the Church*, which cannot be referred onely or chiefly to the Church-Catholike, for that even in a general Council ministerially is seldome convened, and cannot be informed by every one that it scandaliz'd. But also from *Tit. 1. 5. I left thee in Crete, that thou shouldest ordain Elders in every city.* And *Heb. 13. 6. 17. 24.* Remember, obey, and salute them that have the rule over you. Of the Elders of *Ephesus* wee read, *Act. 20. 17.* And of the Angels of the seven Churches of *Asia*, *Rev. 2. and 3. Chapt.* And yet many of these were combined Churches of many Congregations, and might beso all for ought I know. And wee read of the Elders of the Church of *Jerusalem* in the *Acts*, but whether fixed to particular Congregations or no I know not, to be sure they ruled in common. Onely wee find *Rom. 16. 1.* Of *Phoebe* a servant of the Church at *Cenchreae*, which is the most probable example of a Congregational Church, as I said before, but not certainly. But I shall take that for granted that particular Churches ought to be organized.

But with what Officers? whether with a Pastor and a Teacher, or with preaching and meer ruling-Elders? Or by whom these ought to be elected or ordained, or how maintained? Or whether their power be from Christ immediately, or from the Congregation, the Officers being as their stewards and servants? Or whether the Congregation hath votes and suffrages in the dispensing of censures, and the Elders but their mouth to pronounce and execute theirs censures, as he that sits for judge and gives the charge at a Sessions, or a chair-man at a Committee is in regard of the rest of the Justices, or whole Committee to propound, gather their votes, and passe sentence accordingly?

Chap. 6.

cordingly ? whether their work in such Ecclesiasticall meetings be onely to convene and dissolve, and so bring things into order for the hearing of the rest ? are different questions, which are not to my purpose, and therefore I will not meddle with them.

Sect. 2.

It is similar.

Now seeing every part is or ought to be organized, the whole may be said to be Organicall in that sense. If all the *species* be organized ( supposing they were *species* ) the *genus* in a *logical consideration* must be said to be organized, because it is the common nature of the *species* so to be. Much more if we consider the severall Congregations as members, as indeed they are.

Now because I said that these particular Congregations thus organized, are similar, integrall parts of the whole, M. Ellis chargeth me with a contradiction to mine own end and scope, and disagreeing with *Appollonius*, vind. 54.

First, he thinketh he hath caught me upon the hip of such a contradiction against my self and scope, and that I can come off no otherwise then with a *Veniamq; damus, petimusq; visissim*, nor any otherwise be relieved but by the charitable benevolence of my readers ingenuity. But if there had been such a palpable contradiction, it is a marvell that reverend, judicious M. Hooker should not find it, and shew it as well as mee. If all the countries in the world had the same kind of civill government, both officers and laws respectively, though not dependent, were it a contradiction to say they were similar integral parts of the world ? And if all the Corporations in a Kingdom ( though organical bodies ) were of the same constitution, and had the same Officers, as Majors, &c. would they not be similar integral parts of the kingdom ? yea, even in physicall mixed bodies, as medicinall potions compounded of severall ingredients, yet because the mixture is alike in all parts, they may be said to be similar parts of the whole. *Materialia componentia sunt dissimilabilia, partes integrales compositi & constituti sunt similes.* So the Church-Catholike in regard of the constituent materials, or essentiall parts, viz. Officers and private Christians, is dissimilar, but in regard of the severall Congregations constituted, which are integrall parts of the whole, it is similar because they are similar. I did not mean by similar *quarto modo simile* ( as I may say ) in the strictest sense, as haply the pure element of fire is, but such a similarity

milarity as is consistent with a mixture of ingredient materials, *Señ. 2.*  
 Every Congregation in reference to other Congregation is similar, being of a like constitution, but in reference to it self it is dissimilar, consisting of Officers and private Christians.

This assertion need not seem so harsh, seeing D. Ames as I shewed before asserteth the same. And M. Bartlet in his *modell*, p. 45. confesseth the particular Churches to be similar parts of the Church-Catholike : and saith the Independents have left it upon record that they are so, and for that cites, *Ames. medul*, c. 32. And M. William Sedgewick in his Sermon before divers of the Parliament pag. 4. And chargeth the London-Ministers for an untruth in affirming ( in the preface of *Jus divinum* ) that they deny it. But the charge is unjust; they only set down the difference between the Presbyterians and Independents there to be in this, that the Presbyterians hold that there is one generall Church of Christ on earth, and that all particular Churches and single Congregations are but as similar parts of the whole : and the Independents ( say they ) hold that there is no other visible Church of Christ, but only a single Congregation, meet in one place to partake of all Ordinances. The London-Ministers affirm onely that the Independents deny one generall Church of Christ on earth, not the similarity of particular Congregations. But it will necessarily follow that they deny them to be similar parts, if they deny the whole to which the parts must relate. And if they make the whole Church a *genus* ( as they do ) then must they make the particular Churches *similar species*, which is little lesse then a contradiction, for the formality of a *species* lieth in dissimilarity and difference from the opposite *species*.

Now to shew that this assertion of the similarity of particular Churches crosseth mine own scope, M. Ellis sets down mine opinion, with a mark, as if the words were mine own which neither are my words nor my sense, viz. *That the Church ( visible Catholike ) is an Organicall, ministeriall, governing body, i. e. ( saith he ) not such a body as is the element of water and air, every part whereof is of the same nature, virtue and power in it self considered, but such a body as a man hath, which is distinguished by severall members, &c.* And such a body as all Corpora-

Chap. 6.

"tions are. Now this (saith he) contradicts plainly the former both opinion and expression, for if the Church-Catholike be a similar body, and all Congregations alike, and the whole nothing differing in nature or constitution from the parts, then the Catholick visible Church is no more the governing Church then a particular.

*Ans.* To let passe his unfair dealing with my self (and others) in misreciting my words.

I said indeed the Church-Catholick was an *Organicall* body but not a ministeriall governing body. For the scope of my Thesis was and is to prove the Church-Catholick as it consists of Officers and private Christians, to be the prime Church to which the Ordinances are given respectively, as the Officers or private members are capable; and to particular Churches secondarily. I spake not of the Organs or Governours onely. The body of Officers is indeed a governing body, called a ministerial Church, but the whole Church either particular or general, is no governing body, no more then a whole Corporation or kingdom can be said to be a governing body, but they are governed bodies, and so is the Church both particular and general.

Indeed I find the words ministeriall governing Church in *M. Rutherford in his due right of Presbyt.* 177, 178, 179. &c. but it is clear that he takes it not in *M. Ellis's* sense, but for a Church furnished with Officers, and having discipline and government exercised in it: for he was farre from making the body of the Church to be the receptacle of the keys, and having power of governing. He saith the keys were given for the Church, but not to the Church.

It is onely a Scottish expression not to be so expounded and strained, as *M. Ellis* doth; who bendeth his whole reply against a sense of it, which I believe was not *M. Rutherford's* meaning.

Neither did I make the whole to differ anything in nature, constitution or power from the parts; but said they have the same kind of intensive power, but in the Church-Catholick it is of larger extension. Similar bodies conjoined exert their power more intensely and extensively, then when single. All the water of the Sea will cool and moisten more and further then one drop; a great fire will warm, yea, burn more and further then

then

then a spark : a great heap of stones extends further and will *Self. 3.*  
weigh more then a little one. So al Churches (if they could meet)  
have no other power when met together, then a single Church,  
but being combined, the power both reacheth further in extensi-  
on of places, and is more august and solemn, and to be the rather  
respected and submitted unto.

But this (he saith) crosseth *Apollinus*, whom (saith he) I fol-  
low, but indeed I never saw his Book, nor heard of it, until a  
good while after I had composed my Thesis, and then inserted I  
think but 2, or 3. sentences of his. "*Apollinus* (saith he) saith  
" that *Eph. 4. 16.* is meant of an organical, ministerial body, dif-  
" fering in members, which *M. Hudson* expounds to be meant of  
" a similar body whose parts are all alike.

*Ans.* They are alike in the integrals, as I said before, but not  
in the essentials. But where doth *Apollinus* deny the particular  
Congregations to be similar integral parts of the Catholike ?  
There is therefore no disagreement among the Presbyterians in  
this point (as *M. Ellis* suggesteth, *viz. 54.*) that one of them would  
have one thing, another another.

But the main question comes now to be discussed, *viz. Whe- Self. 3.*  
ther the whole Church-Catholick visible bee one Organical bo- It is one Or-  
dy ? which if it can be made appear, will end the whole contro- ganical bo-  
versie. dy.

The Church is distinguished into *Entitive* and *Organical*.

The Church visible is called *Entitive*, not because of the in-  
ward grace which is essential to an invisible member, but from  
the reception and embracing the Christian Catholick faith, which  
is essential to a visible believer. And it is called *Organical*, in  
reference to the Officers thereof, which are the Organs of the  
Church, or in regard of the Offices which Christ hath instituted  
to be in his visible Church. This distinction halteth as much  
as that of the Church-visible and invisible ; for the *Organical*  
Church is also *Entitive*, *viz.* it is of such as have received and  
embraced the Christian faith, and is made up of such, and only  
of such : yet there is a difference in notion, but not in per-  
sons. Indeed in some sense a company of visible believers may  
be said to be a Church-Entitive, and not *Organical*, because they  
are not actually under any particular Officers : as a company

Chap. 6.

of visible Christians in *New England* inhabiting together to make a Congregation, but as yet have chosen no Officers, may in reference to other organized Congregations be said to be inorganical, and entitive onely : but this sense is not the most proper sense of the word. - For if they be, then but a Church-entitive, then also after they have Officers, if those particular Officers die, they should return to be a Church-Entitive onely again, in the *interim* before they have chosen any new ones.

Now though in consideration wee may distinguish between the essence of believers, as believers embracing the Christian faith, and their existence under Officers, especially under particular Officers : yet the existence of visible believers, members of the Church-Catholike, can hardly be without reference to Officers. For the ministry of the Officers is the usual means of their conversion : and to be sure they cannot be admitted to be actual members of the Church-Catholike by baptism, but by some of the Officers, though not considered as their particular Officers, yet Officers in general. And such persons as receive the doctrine of Christ which denominates them to be believers, are bound to receive his commands also, to submit themselves to his Ministers for their edification. And though they have no particular Officers, yet as they look upon the Church as a society of men and fellow-members to whom they joyn themselves in in the generall, though not as yet in any particular membership : so they look upon the Ministers as Christs Ministers to whom they are to be subject in the Lord, to receive their doctrine, exhortations and reproofs, and from whom also, if they prove scandalous, hereticall, infectious, or apostates, they must expect disciplinary censures, though they be no particular members, under a particular Minister.

There is a question whether the Church or the Ministers be first, because the Ministers are the instrumentall cause of the conversion of the Church, and the Church of the choice of the Ministers, which is something like that Philosophicall question, Whether the hen or the egge were first, for as the egge comes of a hen, so the hen comes of an egge. And as that is resolved by the consideration of the creation, and then God made the

hen

hen first : so is this question by consideration of the first institution and setting up of the Evangelicall Catholike Church ; and then wee find that Christ set up the Officers first to convert men to be believers, and they being converted to the faith of Christ are bound to submit themselves to Christs Ministers in the Lord. And because they will stand in need of constant inspection, teaching and ruling, which they cannot enjoy from Ministers in generall, as so considered : because they are dispersed into several places for habitation, and take particular parts of Christs Church to watch over ; therefore they are to desire and endeavour to have some of Christs Ministers to take the particular inspection of them. But wee know that at first they receive Baptism not from their own particular Minister, or not as so considered ; for being newly converted into the Church, and not baptized, they cannot as I conceive be members of a particular Congregation, untill after baptism, but they receive it as from one of Christs Ministers in generall, and are by him admitted into the the visible body the Church, and after this have liberty to choose under the inspection of what Ministers they will put themselves. See more of this *Qu. S. 2. 2. 4.*

Now before the proof of this assertion, it will be needfull to explain a little what I mean by one Organicall body ; I do not mean that there is one universal, visible, actual society, consisting of all such as are accounted or to be esteemed Christians, subjected actually to one or many universal, generall, actual Pastors or guides, from whom subordinates must derive their office and power, and with whom they must communicate in some generall sacred things, which may make them one Church as the Jews were. And which general sacred services or duties can be performed by that universal head or heads, and that Church only.

Such an universal Christian Church Christ never ordained, no, not in the daies of the Apostles, to whom the extraordinary care of all the Churches was committed. Nor that all the whole Church should be subjected to one supream Tribunal of Officers constantly erected, and continued among them. Nor yet to communicate with Christ himself ( though in some sense he may be said to be a visible head ) in some worship to be performed

Chap. 6.

formed by all joyntly assembled at some especial solemnity, as the Jews at the Paschever.

But an habituall, Politico-Ecclesiasticall society, body, flock, in one sheepfold of the militant Church, in uniform subjection to the same Lord, the same Lawe, in the same faith, and under the same visible seal of Baptism, performing the same worship and service in kind : and though the members bee dispersed far and wide, yea, divided into severall particular places, and secondary combinations of vicinities, for actuall, constant enjoyments of Ordinances ( as particular Corporations in a Kingdome which is an accidentall, not essential relation to them as subjects of the Kingdom ) yet still those Ordinances, admissions, ejections, have influence into the whole body, as it is a polity : and the members indefinitely may of right communicate one with another in any place, or any company of Christians, though every person so meeting but occasionally, may be of a severall particular Church, and the Minister dispensing, a particular Pastor to none of them all, yea, though none of them all be fixed members of any particular Congregation, nor the Minister dispensing fixed to no particular Congregation neither : by vertue of their general membership in the visible body and kingdom of Christ, and of the habituall indefiniteness of the Ministers office, and the common donation of the Ordinances by Christ to his whole visible Kingdome, and to all the subjects and members thereof, which have a common freedome therein. And in this sense the word Church is taken in Scripture. *His bodies sake which is the Church, whereof I Paul am made a Minister. The house of God which is the Church.* Now because there is no such civill society or kingdome that will in every thing parallel this : but there use to be some generall offices and officers, and some inferiour subordinate, receiving power and authority by descension, derivation, or subordination, and the inferiour Officers of lesse extent of place and power then the superiour. As the Lord chief Justice of *England* is above inferiour Justices, and his warrant can reach all persons in all the Counties of the Kingdome, and there bee constant Courts of Kings bench and Common Pleas for judicature for all the Subjects of the whole Kingdome (though haply it was not so in the four Monarchies )

this



this makes men stumble at the name and notion of a Church-Catholick visible. But as in other things Christs Kingdom is neither of this world, nor like unto worldly polities, so neither in this. But every Minister of the Church in his particular place serveth the Church-Catholick visible in admitting members to generall freedom in it, and ejecting out from generall communion, prayeth publickly for the whole body, and manageth his particular charge, in reference to, and so as may stand with the good of the whole body, whereof his Congregation is but a member. And the Ordinances therein administred, are the Ordinances given to the whole, not as to a *genus*, which is but a notion, and can have no Ordinances, but as to a spirituall kind of an habituat organickall body and polity; as to a sort of men so and so qualified, bound up in an union and unity of the same head, laws, seals, worship and communion.

Sect. 4.

Now the same arguments which prove the Church-Catholick an Integral, will serve to prove it one organical body also, and therefore I shall take some of them into consideration again, under this head, and in this notion.

First, it will appear by the names and metaphors whereby the Church-Catholick is called and set out in Scripture, which are taken from things which are not onely each of them an Integral, but each of them one Organical body: and in *ad formali ratione* lyeth the analogy between them and the Church.

Sect. 4.

It is compared unto a naturall body, which is an Organickall Integrall having many members and Organs, which though they lie indeed in the severall members, yet are Organs of the whole, and the severall members, members of the whole, and do their severall actions, and perform their severall offices for the good of the whole, and sympathize together, 1 Cor. 12. 13. *For as the body is one, and hath many members, and all the members of that one body being many, are one body: so also is Christ.*

This is not meant of the Church of *Corinth* onely, but of the Catholick Church, because it is the whole body to which Christ is the head, and Christs person as the head of the whole, and this whole body is called Christ, i. e. mystically,

Chap. 6.

the whole receiving denomination from the better part, the head.

And so M. Bartlet takes it in his *Model*, pag. 35. for the whole Church. And so all expositors that I have met with, except some few of late, who to avoid the dirt of this argument would have it meant of the Church of *Corinth*, as a particular Church. But it will sound very harsh, to make Christ and the Church of *Corinth* to be called Christ, when they are but the head, and a part of Christ's body. It is the body whereof *Paul* was a member, v. 13. *We are all baptiz'd*, where *Paul* puts in himself and all believers.

*Objection.* But this is meant of the invisible company of believers.

*Ans.* It is true, but it is spoken of them as visible, because it is brought in there to shew the diversities of gifts, offices, operations and administrations in the visible Church: there is an eye and an ear, &c. mentioned, and the Officers of the Church named; now there are no Officers of the invisible Church as invisible nor different administrations; as they are members of the invisible body they are all similar, and have the same standing and operations of their generall calling, as Christians, not as Apostles, Prophets, Evangelists, &c. And many that have these common gifts of the holy Ghost (which are by the Spirit of Christ) and the Offices there mentioned, were not invisible members of Christ, yet were not only members, but Officers in this body there spoken of. It is also the visible body there meant, because the two external seals, viz. *Baptism* and the *Lords Supper* are specified in v. 13. as means and signs of this union in one body, and they are visibly administered.

There is an invisible body of Christ and a visible, the invisible is inorganical, the visible organical; the invisible while they are in the visible Church are visible members thereof, and so put on the relation of Officer and private member. It is true, some things are spoken of the whole in reference to the better part, the invisible number; and as they all professed themselves to be of the invisible body, so the Apostle speaks of them, and so them, as if they were as they ought to be, and at least made a show as if they were. But that the place is meant of an organical

cal body as one, is out of question, and that the analogy between the Church and such a body, lay in the unity and organicalness, is as clear. Scilicet. 4.

The like is spoken, *Rom. 12. 4, 5.* For as we have many members in one body, and all members have not the same office; so we being many are one body in Christ, and every one members one of another. It is the Church-Catholick, not Roman particular Church; Paul puts in himself, yet had never been at Rome then. It is organical, for the Officers are there enumerated. It is one, for there is a sympathy of members spoken of. To this purpose is that of *Salmas. Retinebitur omnis communicativa, & ovata una inter omnia membra Dominici corporis, i.e. Ecclesia; que nisi una sit non potest esse vera*, Appar. p. 281.

Also it is set out by a political body. Sometimes it is called a *kingdom*, and the *kingdom of heaven*, as I shewed before out of many places of Scripture. Now a Kingdom is one Organical body; for so many men living together within the same limits make not a Kingdom, but as it is combined by the same Laws, under one Governour or Government. In the *Heptarchy*, this one Kingdom since, under one King and body of Laws, were seven Kingdoms. Now if the Church-Catholick bears such an analogy to one Kingdom as to be called a Kingdom, it is from this that it is one organized Integral.

It is also called a *City*, and sometimes *Jerusalem*, and as it is reformed it is called *new Jerusalem*, and the members both of *Jews* and *Gentiles* are called fellow-citizens, *Eph. 2. 19.* Now a City is one Organical body under one common Government: otherwise so many houses or streets and inhabitants being together, would not make them a City. Sometimes the buildings and inhabitants, which if under one government would make one city and corporation, being great and near, and haply contiguous, yet wanting a Charter to make them a Corporation are none; yet, by difference of Charter, Government and chief Governours are two Cities, as *London* and *Westminster*. The Church-Catholick therefore being one city, is one organical body.

Also it is set out sometimes by one martial or military body,

Chap. 6.

body, and is called an *Army terrible with banners*, Cant. 6. 10. which by some is interpreted Church-censures. M. Cotton indeed expounds it of the Church of the Jews, when they shall be called home by conversion to the Christian faith: to be sure it is the Church-militant: Now an Army is one Organical body under one General, and the same Laws martial, though quartered in diverse places: therefore so is the Church-Catholick.

It is also set out by an *Oeconomical body*, a family or household, Eph. 2. 19. Now a family is one Organical body, wherein are Governours or a Governour, and governed, an husband, father, or master; and therefore so is the Church-Catholick, else the analogy should not hold. All these metaphors and many more, whereby the Church-Catholick is set out, shew it one visible, organical body.

Secondly, that the Church-Catholick visible is one so, let it virtually and habitually appears, because by Baptism where-ever administred, the baptized visible believer is admitted a member not of the particular Church among whom he was baptized, nor to bear any speciall relation to the Minister baptizing him, that he must take a special inspection over him as one of his particular flock and charge, but into the whole general body of Christs kingdom visible. For, as I shewed before, there was Baptism administred as the seal of the general covenant, before particular Congregations were set up. See more of this, Qu. 2. S. 2. and S. 8.

And also because by excommunication a person is not cast out of that Congregation only where the censure was past, but out of general communion with all other Churches in the world, even the whole visible body of Christ. Certificates indeed we finde in Scripture to others, of their excommunication, that so others might avoid communion with them. As of the excommunication of *Hymeneus* and *Alexander*, 1 Tim. 1. 20. And so we read also of certificates of Apostates, who it is like were excommunicated. As of *Phigellus* and *Heremogenes*, 2 Tim. 1. 15. And of *Hymeneus* and *Rhiletus*, 2 Tim. 2. 17. The former of which was excommunicated, and it is probabl the latter also, by the same reason. The like certificate we find again of *Alexander*, 2 Tim. 4. 14, 15. But no new act of excommunication past upon them any where also.

Alexander

*Alexander Bishop of Alexandria* having excommunicated *Ensebius* Bishop of *Nicomedia* an Arian; writes an Epistle to certify it to all other Ministers. *Charissimis honoratissimisque fratribus, qui ubique gentium sunt nobiscum in Ecclesia ministerio conjuncti* *οὐκαλύπτει τοῖς ἀπαισχημένοις*. Cum in sacris literis sit unum corpus Ecclesia Catholica nobis traditum, &c. therefore he signifieth by Letters what he had done, *ἐν τῷ πατρὶ καὶ τῷ χάρει καὶ μέλει ἡ συμπάσχωμεν ἡ ἐνυχάρωμεν ἀλλήλοις*, *Socra: lib. 1. cap. 3.* Nine Bishops excommunicated *Jovinus* and *Maximus*, and that excommunication by *Cyprian* and others was approved as valid. The like we find of *Novatus* excommunicated at *Rome* by *Cornelius* and a Council there, and it was certified to *Fabius* Bishop of *Antioch*, and approved by him, and by *Dionysius* Bishop of *Alexandria*, to whom the Epistles came. *Enseb. lib. 6. cap. 35.* And *Samosatenus* excommunicated at *Antioch*, was so accounted of the whole world, *Niceph. 6. 28.* The *Novatians* excommunicated in *Africa* are so held at *Rome*. *Cyp. l. 1. Ep. 3. and 13.*

Thirdly, It appears to be one-organical body by the identity of the external Covenant, Charter, Promises, and Laws of the whole Church. The Covenant, Charter, and promises, are but one grant, not one Covenant in kind and many species thereof; but one individual Covenant of grace granted to the whole Church. This is not the Covenant whereby particular Congregations are said to be constituted, but the whole body. The Churches constituted by particular Covenants are alterable, divisible, extinguishible (as *M. Norton* confesseth, p. 30.) which this is not: they are many and particular Covenants, this one and general: they are accidental, humane, arbitrary, and superadded; this essential, divine, necessary, and prime. And though this Covenant may seem but to belong to the Church as Entitative, yet the Laws which are also one visible system, argue it to be organical, because they relate to Officers and discipline: and they bind all not onely *ut materia*, but as proceedings from the same fountain and authour, the King of the whole Church, not *quā* particular members, but *quā* members of the whole.

Fourthly, it appears by the general right of communion, that

Chap. 6.

that all the members have habitually and indefinitely to join in, as providence offereth opportunity, though not cast into a Congregational combination, as all cannot be. Any visible believer under the seal of Baptism onely, hath an inherent right to worship with any other visible Christians in confession, petition, thanksgiving, and praise; and to prophecy with them in the Apostles sense, *i. e.* join with them in partaking of that Ordinance, to sing with them, and receive the Lords Supper with them, and to be entreated by any Minister as an Ambassadour of Christ to be reconciled, 2 Cor. 5. 20. and is bound to submit to the doctrinal admonitions and reproofs of any Minister according to the word: and the reason why any Minister may not passe a judicial censure also, if there be cause (seeing the keys are commensurable) is not because he wants habitual power in discipline, as well as doctrine, but because that is to be performed in a Court of Elders, and a strange Minister wants a call to join with any such Court, to bring his habitual power into act: yet our brethren will non-communication, or deny communion with a stranger, if they have any thing against him which is virtually a suspension of him; yea, if they have not positive assurance by testimony (not of his being in the general Covenant, for that is requisite, but) of his being a fixed member of some other Congregation which they approve of, not onely for having the essentials of a Church, but as a pure Church: for upon that ground they deny the Communion to some members of our Churches that go over with certificates (though not to members of their own Churches) because they judge us as impure. Indeed certificates are requisite from strangers, to notify their general right by being in the general Covenant, and to notify their personal innocency from error or scandal which might debar them.

But they onely declare a right, they give none: neither doth their right proceed from the membership of the particular Congregation from whence they come, but from the general, which is implied in their particular membership, because Congregations consist onely of such, and they are witnesses of his godly conversation, he having lived with them.

As for judicial, Ecclesiastical censures, I confesse it is most orderly

derly to turn the accused person, and his accusations to his own Congregation, where an Eldership hath taken the particular inspection of him, and have power in *actu secundo* already called forth to deal with him: but suppose they will not, or neglect it, or he will not return, but abide still in another place; or suppose he be not a fixed member in any Congregation, but a wandering star, and yet is a baptized person, and is very scandalous, or very erroneous, and fit to infect the persons among whom he converseth; shall there be no remedy for that Congregation? For ought I know, they may put their generall, habituall power into act, and upon sufficient witness proceed against him, and finding him obstinate may excommunicate him, as well as a civil Officer will keep the kings peace in his own Town, by clapping an unruly, riotous, or traitorous stranger by the heels, if he take him within his limits.

Sect. 5.

Fifthly, I might argue also from the opposition of the adversaries of the Church, both Satan and persecutors, who oppose it not essentially only, but politically, their spite being against the Officers and Organs of the Church, not only *quà* Christians, but *quà* Ministers, not *quà* Ministers of this or that particular Congregation, but *quà* the Ministers of the Church, and not only as dispensers of Word and Sacraments, but as dispensers of censures especially, for they do most usually grieve men and move their anger. They look upon the Church as one body; and upon Ministers as Officers of the Church in a general consideration, and so may we.

Sect. 6.

Sixthly, it appears by the indefiniteness of the office of Ministers: which I reserved for the last, because I shall dilate a little more upon it than the former, And indeed upon this hinge hangeth the whole question of the Organical integrality of the Church Catholick visible. And turn the question which way you will, it will rest on this center, *viz.* Whether a Minister be a Minister to any but his own Congregation?

I find M. Ellis affirming that a Minister is an Officer onely to his own Congregation, *vind.* p. 8. And the answer of the Elders of several Churches in *New-England*, unto 9. positions, p. 8. Their words are these, "If you mean by Ministerial act, such an act of authority and power in dispensing of Gods Ordinances as a Minister

"Minister

Chap. 6.

“Minister doth perform to the Church, whereunto he is called to be a Minister, then we deny that he can to perform any Ministeriall act to any other Church but his own, because his office extends no further then his call.

So M. *Best* in his *Church-plea*, p. 30. saith, Officers of Churches may be helpfull to other Churches as Christians, but not as Ministers. To the same purpose M. *Bartlet* in his *Model*, p. 69. Hereby it appears they suppose the Ordination of a Minister to his office, is limited to the particular Congregation that call him. Indeed the call of the people exerts or calls forth the exercise of his office unto them in particular constantly, but his Ordination to his office is more generall, and giveth him habitual power *in actu primo*, to exercise and perform the acts belonging to his office elsewhere upon a call. Christ giveth the office, and hath annexed power of dispensing his Ordinances: the Presbytery ministerially admit this or that man into it, not as a Presbytery of that particular Congregation, for they may none of them belong unto it, but as a Presbytery of Christ Ministers having a call to give that Ordination in a regular way: and the particular Congregation, by desire and election give a call to the exercise of this power among them, *pro hic & nunc*.

“*Habitu & potestate omnes Episcopi sunt Episcopi cujusvis in orbe vel paracie, vel provincia, quia in quavis apti sunt, habiles, & idonei exercere Episcopalia sua munera, quando illuc legitime vocantur, ac mittuntur. Actu vero & quoad legitimum exercitium, ibi solummodo Episcopi sunt ubi per missionem & vocationem illam mediantur Dei, &c. huic illius Paracie, &c. præsuntur.* Crakenthorp. Def. Eccl. Ang. c. 28.

Now that a Minister is a Minister and so habitually in office to more then his own Congregation, and therefore indefinitely to all the whole Church, will appear by these proofs. First, because the donation of the keys, and the institution and commission of the Evangelicall Ministry was in reference to the whole. *Go teach all Nations, and baptize them.* When as yet there was no distinction of Congregations. God set some in the Church, first Apostles, secondarily Prophets, thirdly Teachers, 1 Cor. 12. 28. So Eph. 4. 12.

As God gave the Levites to the whole house of Israel, and they



They did at first in the white tesse leave all the Tribes *conjunctim*, *Señ. 5.* as one body of Officers over one combined large Congregation, but afterwards when the Tribes were dispersed in *Canaan*, the Levites were dispersed among all the Tribes, and exercised their office of teaching and judging in the severall places where they dwelt; yet this divested them not of their generall habituell power, this made not their office to stand in relation to the particular city or Synagogue where they did constantly exercise: and when they removed from place to place, as the wandering Levite, *Jud. 17. 8.* did, they still retained their habituell office and power, and needed no new consecration, but by vertue of their office did exercise the acts belonging to it where they had their particular station and call.

So is it with the Evangelicall Ministry of the New Testament: a Minister of the Gospel bears a double relation, one to the Church-Catholick indefinitely, another to that particular Congregation over which he is set for the constant exercise of his office. And if he removes to another place, he needs no new Ordination, for that continueth and abideth still upon him; it being to the essence of his office, and not in reference either to the place from whence he cometh, or to which he goeth only. A Physitian or Lawyer needeth no new license, or call to the Bar, though they remove to other places, and have other patients and clients. The Justice of peace who is in commission for the whole County, though he exercised it in one part of the County, while he lived there, yet if he removes to the other end of the County, he needeth no new commission to execute his office there, where he never did before, because it was habitual to the whole County, though actually exercised where he lived; so though a Minister removes, he needeth no new Ordination, but a new call to the exercise of his office there, no more then a private Christian by removing into another Congregation, needeth a new Baptism; because neither Ordination nor Baptism stand in relation to the particular Congregation, but the Church-Catholick. As he that is admitted a free-man in any Hall of any Company in *London*, is admitted a free-man of the whole City, as well as of that Company: and he that by reason of his birth hath right to be baptised in any

T

Congregation

## Chap. 6.

Congregation, is admitted a member of the whole society of the Church-Catholick visible, as well as of that Congregation: so he that is ordained a Minister as by the occasion of the call of a particular Congregation, he is ordained their particular Minister, so also is he ordained a Minister of Christ and the Gospel, and Church in generall. "Ordination (saith M. Rutherford) maketh a man a Pastor under Christ formally and essentially, the peoples consent and choice do not make him a Minister, but their Minister, the Minister of such a Church: he is indefinitely made a Pastor for the Church. *Ruth. peaceab. plea. 263.*

And to the same purpose it is that M. Ball saith. "A Minister chosen and set over one society, is to look unto that people committed to his charge, &c. but he is a Minister in the Church universall: for as the Church is one, so is the Ministry one, of which every Minister (sound and Orthodox) doth hold his part. And though he is a Minister over that flock which he is to attend, yet he is a Minister in the Church-universall. The function or power of exercising that function in the abstract; must be distinguished from the power of exercising is concretely, according to the divers circumstances of places. The first belongeth to a Minister every where in the Church, the latter is proper to the place and people where he doth minister. The lawfull use of the power is limited to that Congregation ordinarily; the power it self is not so bounded. In ordination Presbyters are not restrained to one or other certain place, or if they were to be deemed Ministers there onely, though they be set over a certain people. And as the faithfull in respect of their community between them, must and ought to perform the offices of love one to another, though of different societies; so the Ministers in respect of their communion, must and ought upon occasion to perform Ministerial offices toward the faithfull of distinct societies. *Trial of new Church-way. p. 33.*

To the same purpose is that of Crakersborp. "Episcopi omnes quæ Episcopi universalis Ecclesie pastores sunt, &c. per re Divino sic pastores sunt. Episcopus item unusquisque particularis sue Ecclesie pastor est, non quæ Episcopus sed quæ *manus,*

“ Romanus , aut Alexandrinus Episcopus , nec jure Divino  
 “ sed humano solum , & Ecclesiastico , pastor sic est. Cura om- Sect. 6.  
 “ nium ovium , quæ Episcopi sunt , ad omnes spectat , saith Sal-  
 mas.

“ Præter peculiarem curam quam singuli habent pastores sua-  
 “ ram ecclesiarum , generalem etiam quadamtenus habere censendi  
 “ sunt universalis Ecclesia in his rebus quæ ad salutem & bonum  
 “ omnium Ecclesiarum cedant, Apparat. 270. For, saith he, as in  
 the natural body, the particular members have a double of-  
 fice, one general and common for the defence and service of  
 the whole body, and another special and proper; *speciale ac*  
*proprium*; so it is in the Church. It was the commendation  
 of Athanasius by Basil in Ep. 72. *Tantum geris omnium Ecclesi-*  
*arum curam, quantum ejus quæ tibi peculiariter à Domino tradi-*  
*ta est.*

Secondly, It appears by the subject matter whereabout the Sect. 6.  
 office of the Ministry is exercised, viz, the Ordinances of God,  
 the Word and Sacraments, and Præter: the good news of the  
 Gospel, the profers, promises and precepts, which equally per-  
 tain to all parts of the Church-Catholick. Therefore their fun-  
 ction is set out indefinitely, in reference unto the subject matter  
 of it, and not the people to whom they dispense them. A Mi-  
 nister is an Ambassadour of Jesus Christ; and is in office habi-  
 tually to the whole Church: and though he be set to lie leiger  
 in a particular Church, yet the subject of his office reacheth to  
 the whole Church, and not that place onely; yea, to all that are  
 capable of reconciliation, for the Ministry is the Ministry of  
 reconciliation; and even when he delivereth his Embassage in  
 his owne Church, he is to deliver both profers, promises and pre-  
 cepts indefinitely to strangers of other Congregations, yea, of  
 forreign nations, if they come into his Congregation. Suppose  
 a Major of a Corporation should send abroad his Serjeants to  
 summon the whole Corporation to a great Court, and for  
 expediency should send one into one street, another into ano-  
 ther, a third into a third street: if any of these Serjeants in their  
 walks should meet a free-man that dwelleth in another street,  
 ought he to forbear to summon him, because he dwels not in his  
 particular walk, seeing he is an indefinite Officer to the whole

## Chap. 6.

Corporation, or is that summons without authority, because the man dwells out of his particular limits; leaving the business concerns all? Surely no, he ought to exert his general, habitual power of his office, and summon him. So seeing Gods message is general to all, though the Ministers (who are indefinite Officers) be settled in particular Congregations for expediency, yet they have power by virtue of their office to deliver it to any Christian that God offers them an opportunity to preach unto. It is unreasonable, that seeing the message is indefinite, and concerns all in general, the commission to deliver it should be put particular. But I shall touch upon this in the second question.

Thirdly, It appears by the end of the Ministerial function, viz. to increase and edifie the body of Christ, not only the invisible body but the visible also, by converting such as do not as yet believe the Gospel. And this was a great part of the work of the Ministers in the primitive times: but how could they baptize those they had converted, when the Apostles and Evangelists were dead, if they had power to baptize only their own members? And this work, as there is occasion offered, lieth on Ministers still; for the office of the Apostles and Evangelists is ceased; and yet many remain still out of the Church. Indeed while the Churches of New-England constitute Churches of members already baptized, this difficulty appears not; but if they come to convert natives, how shall they be baptized but by an Officer of the Church-Catholick? for they are members of no Congregation; either they must admit them members of their own Congregation, and then baptize them as their members, as I perceive their practice is; for which practice we find no precept or precedent or intimation in Scripture; or else baptize them into the Church-Catholick, and then admit them members of their particular Congregations; and yet that will not stand with this opinion: or else they must grant them liberty to gather into a Church-Entire (as some call it) and so make them capable of choosing Officers, and of being a political body before they be baptized; but neither will this stand with our brethrens principles, but should a hirelatter be granted, who shall ordain a Pastor over them? Shall unbaptized

sized persons lay on their hands on them? See more of this, *Seet. 6.*  
 Q. 2. S. 2.

Also the feeding and edifying of the body already converted, requires that this power of the ministerial function should be indefinite, for the Minister of any particular Congregation through sickness or absence, or the like occasions, may not be able to afford sufficient spiritual food to his own people, neither Word, Sacraments, nor discipline, without the help of single fellow-labourers, or a combined, classical Eldership. What shall become of a Congregation in the intervals between the death of a former Pastor and the election of another? or who shall ordain him if he be elected? seeing all Officers of all particular Congregations in the world, are but as private men to them; by this opinion.

The end of the Ministerial function is threefold, to convert into the visible Church, to convert into the invisible Church, and to edify such as are converted. Now this opinion cuts the two former ends quite off; for they suppose them both visibly and invisibly converted, before they think them fit matter for a Church, and so before admission into a particular Congregation, and then restrain the Ministers office only to the particular Congregation so constituted, so that his work is only to edify and govern such as are supposed to be truly godly, and train up their children. And by consequence it must follow, that all conversion must be by men out of office, or at least as so considered. But *Pro. 9. 3.* Wisdom sends out her maidens to call in those that are without, viz. the simple and that want understanding. The Ministers by virtue of their office may exhort and entreat and summon in, to submit unto Christ, such as refuse and are unwilling, and such as against whom (they continuing perverse) they are to shake off the dust off their feet, for a witness against them. They are *παράκλητοι* under-suitors for the Bridegroom, *Joh. 3. 19.* to woo such as are of themselves unwilling, and to make motions for Christ to such as either heard nor before of him, or had not before consented unto Christ.

Fourthly, It appears from the actions which every particular Minister doth perform, both in his own Congregation and out

p. 6.

of it. Every Minister both in his own Congregation serve the Church-Catholick, by admitting members into the Church-Catholike, and by preaching the word to strangers that come to his Congregation, both fixed members of other Congregations, and such as are not fixed in any, and administering the Lord's Supper to members of other Congregations, and in other Congregations by preaching or administering the seals there, upon a desire. And by excommunication they eject not onely out of their own, but out of the whole. They also can keepe lectures in other Congregations frequently. If it be objected, That this is occasionally done, and a charitative act, and not an act of office. I answer, indeed charity and necessity may be the occasion of the performance thereof *pro bic & nunc*, but that cannot enable them to do it, if their office did not give them right and power habitually thereunto, no more then to private Christians.

It is observable what M. Ball in his *Trial of the new Church-way* saith, p. 80. "That to suppose a Minister to be a Minister to his own Congregation onely, and to none other society whatsoever, or in what respect soever, is contrary to the judgement and practice of the universal Church, and tendeth to destroy the unity of the Church, and that communion which the Church of God may and ought to have one with another. For if he be not a Minister in other Churches, then are not the Churches of God one, nor the Ministry one, nor the flock which they feed one, nor the communion one which they had each with others. Again p. 90. he saith, If a Minister may pray, preach, and blesse another Congregation in the name of the Lord, and receive the Sacrament with them, wee doubt not but he being thereunto requested by consent of the Pastor and the Congregation, he may lawfully dispense the seals among them, as need and occasion require. That distinction of preaching by office, and exercising his gifts onely, when it is done by a Minister, and desire of none but Ministers, and that in solemn, set, constant Church-Assemblies, we cannot find warranted in the word of truth, and therefore we dare not receive it.

The Ministers are the light of the world, and though they stand like

like a light upon a particular Candlestick, yet are occasionally Sect. 6.  
 to enlighten all that they can, either that come to them, or  
 that they occasionally go among. Reverend M. Norton in his  
 answer to Apollonius saith, this is *mediantribus candelabris Ecclesi-*  
*arum*, His words are these, cap. 7. p. 19. "*Nobis ergo judicibus,*  
*Ministri ordinarij virtute muneris Ecclesiastici, sunt pastores*  
*certis Ecclesiis, & mediantribus candelabris Ecclesiarum, mini-*  
*stri omni creatura, pro occasione data. &c.* But this concession  
 is too narrow: for every Minister giveth light to others, not  
 only as he standeth in his own Candlestick, viz. when others  
 come to him; but also out of his Candlestick, when hee goeth  
 to them. And when he preacheth or administreth Sacraments  
 abroad, he doth it not as the Minister of such a particular Con-  
 gregation, but of the Church-Catholick; for the particular  
 Congregation hath nothing to do to send an Officer to exercise  
 his office in another Church, if it be confined and peculiar to  
 that particular congregation onely, no more then a Corporati-  
 on can send their Major to exercise his office in another Cor-  
 poration, no not *charitative*. It is therefore *mediante officio sive*  
*munere*, by reason of the indefiniteness of his office, not of his  
 particular station and relation, that he can dispense the Ordi-  
 nances to other Congregations. M. Norton p. 80. acknowledg-  
 geth that a Minister hath *potestatem exercendi actus officii chari-*  
*tative, & modo debito, in aliis Ecclesiis*, and that this mini-  
 steriall power whereby he exerciseth such acts, in an Ecclesiasti-  
 call power, p. 81. and that it is Ecclesiastical, not only in regard  
 of the dispenser and administrer (as it is when he preacheth to  
 heathens) but in regard of the receivers or people to whom  
 he doth dispense; and that Churches "*non solum sub ratione*  
*Christianâ exercent communionem Christianam, sed etiam quâ*  
*Ecclesie exercent communionem Ecclesiasticam inter seipsas,*  
*& in seipsis ad invicem: quare etiam Ministri, præcipue cum*  
*sint partes ejusdem totius organici, etiam quâ Ministri, actus*  
*ministeriales officii in Ecclesiis non exercent?* And even from  
 this concession of his (as I conceive) will necessarily follow  
 that every Minister hath an indefinite, habituall, Ecclesiasticall  
 power, by vertue of his office in the whole Church-Catholick  
 visible in *toto eodem organico*, which if it may be brought into

7bap. 6.

act and exercise by charity, then much more by necessity, combination, mission or delegation, and if for the exercise of one key, why not of another, so it be in a due manner? They are the *Stewards of the mysteries of God*, 1 Cor. 4. 1. and though by particular assignment they dispense the Ordinances to a particular company of Christs family, yet may not deny them to others of the family that have the same right thereto. They are *spirituall fathers*, and do not onely beget their own people to Christ ministerially, but strangers also. They are Christs *shepherds*, and are so neglect none of Christs sheep, as opportunity is offered, though they have a particular charge of a set flock.

When M. Ellis preached before the Parliament, did he preach as a private Christian, a gifted brother, or as a Minister? Surely they summoned him as a Minister, and heard him as a Minister? for they could have found many able Gentlemen members of Parliament, Lawyers or Citizens, who could have spent an hour or two in prayer, and exposition, and exhortation, but they never summoned any such to perform that work. Or had they summoned him to have been a member of the Reverend Assembly, would he have acted there as a private man, or as a Minister? Or do the dissenting brethren sit there as private men? or keep Lectures in London as private men?

Indeed skill, sitting endowments and willingness give a capacity to be called to the office, but Ordination and mission giveth habituall power, and a call giveth occasion of exercise thereof, and of drawing forth that power and office into act.

A private souldier may have as much skill to lead a Troop as a Captain, but he cannot do it authoritatively without a commission: so haply many private Christians are able to preach and govern in the Church, by reason of their skill, knowledge, wisdom and faithfulness, but cannot do it authoritatively, having no commission by office thereunto. And should such private men passe the censure against a scandalous brother that the Elders would do, yet it is not Ecclesiasticall binding, yea, though such a scandalous person should referre himself to them a arbitratore, and promise to submit to their censure, yet they



they cannot Ecclesiastically excommunicate him, or restore him; no more then private men in an arbitration can condemn and execute a malefactor, or absolve him ( though he be innocent ) if indicted. Many times private men standing by, and hearing the evidence at the Assizes against the malefactor, will say he is but a dead man, yet that is no judicial condemnation of him, though it be materially according to the Law of the Land, yet it is not formally, for so is the act of the Judge only, who is in office for that purpose.

Self. 7.

Fifthly, If private Christians bear a double relation, one to the Church-Catholick visible as members thereof, and another to the particular Congregation where they are particular members, then so do the Ministers also. The universality of private Christians membership necessarily requires an universality of the ministeriall office, for dispensing the Ordinances to them, though but occasionally. As particular members agree with other particular members in Christianity, so particular Ministers agree with other particular Ministers in the ministeriall office. If particular private members can join with any Congregations in the Word, Sacraments, and Prayer, and are bound to contribute to them as members of the same general body ( if there be need ) though in forreign countries; then may also particular Ministers dispense the Ordinances of Jesus Christ as generally, if there be necessity or occasion. *Epiphanius Bishop of Cyprus* ordained a Deacon and Presbyter at *Bethlehem, in monasterio Bethlemitico*, in the jurisdiction of *John Bishop of Jerusalem*, when they were almost destitute of spirituall food, and defended his action thus. "*Ob Dei timorem hoc facere compulsi sumus, maxime quum nulla sit diversitas in sacerdotio Dei, & ubi utilitati Ecclesie providetur. Nam etsi singuli Ecclesiarum Episcopi habent sub se Ecclesias quibus curam videntur impendere, & nemo super alienam mensuram extendatur, tamen praponitur omnibus charitas Christi.*" It seems he accounted his office habitually general, and though the order of the Church required him to keep within his own bounds ordinarily, yet necessity, the profit of the Church, and the love of Christ, might draw forth the execution of his office further.

Self. 7.

He addeth further, "*Non confidendum quid saluum sit, sed quo*"

Chap. 6.

*quo tempore, & quo modo, & in quibus, & quare factam sit, i. e.* If it be not done to make a schism in the Church, as he expresseth himself afterward, *neque feci quicquam ut Ecclesiam scinderem.* Afterwards he adds, *Multi Episcopi communionis nostræ & presbyteros in nostrâ ordinaverunt Provincia—Ipse cohortatus sum beatæ memoriæ Philonem Episcopum, & S<sup>r</sup>. Theopropum ut in Ecclesiis Cyprî, quæ juxta se erant, ad meam autem paraciâ Ecclesiam videbantur pertinere, ordinarent presbyteros, & Christi Ecclesia providerent.* Epiph. Epist. ad Johan. Hierosol. quam Hieronymus latinam fecit. Extat in Hieron. Ep. T. 2. & in Ep. Hieron. ad Panmachum. T. 2. Vide Baronium Anno Christi 392. Sect. 42. &c.

The universal pastoral care which lieth on all Bishops as Bishops, saith Crakenthorp, puts forth it self both in general Councils, yea, and out of Councils this universal care of the Church lyeth upon all Ministers that they provide for the safety of the Church as much as lyeth in them, *“consulendo, hortando, monendo, arguendo, increpando, scriptis simul & voce alios omnes instruendo, & cum vel hæresis ulla vel schisma in Ecclesiâ grassari ceperit, velut incendium publicum, illud restringendo, & ne latius serpat providendo.* Def. Escl. Angl. c. 28.

Sixthly, There will follow diverse great absurdities, if the office of a Minister stands only in relation to his own Congregation. For then he cannot preach any where as a Minister but in his own Congregation, nor yet to any that come to his own Congregation occasionally, much less administer the seals of the Covenant to them, though they come never so well approved by testimonials, or by their own knowledge of them, which yet hath been the ancient custom of the Church, and is practised still among our brethren in New-England, by virtue of communion of Churches, as they say: but this being an act of office, cannot be done except there be an habitually, indefinite power of the ministerial office, which by this desire of strangers and their testimonial, is drawn forth into act.

Also hereby a Minister is rendred but as a private Christian to all the Christian world except his own Congregation, and if his Congregation be any way dissolved, he is but a private man again. Also the sentence of excommunication which hath

been inflicted by such Officers in such a Congregation can never be taken off by any other Officers in any other Congregation after the dissolution of that, for no Congregation can receive an excommunicated person to be a member before absolution, and absolve him they cannot, because he is none of their members; *Ejusdem est ligare & solvere*: yea, and if he be wronged by censures in any particular Congregation, no Church in the world can relieve him, except there be an indefinite, habitual power of Office, which by such occasions can be drawn forth into act. It maketh way also for any private man to preach publicly if he be able, for Ministers themselves, by this opinion, should preach but as private men, if they preach out of their own Congregation. Also it necessarily implyeth that a Minister cannot remove from his particular Congregation, though for the great advantage of the Church, unless he will divest himself of his former Ordination (which was in reference only to his particular Congregation, by this opinion) and take a new Ordination to his Ministerial Office again, as if hee had never been ordained before. And all acting in Councils must be the actings in private Christians. And all the Lectures that are kept by neighbour-Ministers in combination, or singly (except by the particular Ministers of that Congregation where the Lecture is kept) are performed by private men, for so (by this opinion) they are to all the world, except their own Congregations. And so if any of their own members come and hear them preach at any such Lectures, Funerals, Marriages, or Baptizings, it is authoritative preaching indeed to them, because of their particular relation to him, but onely a charitable exercising of gifts, as a private man out of office to all men else.

And if this opinion be true, what shall become of all the unfixed visible Christians in *New-England*? who by reason of their unresolvedness, where yet to fix their civill habitations, or of scrupulosity, or want of ability, utterance, and boldness, to expresse themselves so as to obtain an admission into a particular Congregation, or haply though visible Christians under the seal of the Covenant, yet have not the inward true work of grace in them, yet are neither ignorant nor scandalous, but

Chap. 6.

live inoffensively, and willing to join in and submit unto all Gods Ordinances: I say, what shall become of them and their seed? Shall they all be left without the Church in Satans visible kingdom, because they are no particular members, and there is no extension of the Ministerial office beyond the particular Congregations?

Sect. 8.

*Obje.* If every Minister be a Minister of the Church Catholick visible, then what do they differ from Apostles and Evangelists, for that was their especiall priviledge that their commission extended it self to all Churches? This Objection M. Bartlet hath in *Model* p. 69.

*Ans.* There is this difference; Every Minister hath by his Ordination power in *actu primo* to administer the Ordinances of God in all the Churches of the Saints, yet not in *actu secundo* without a special call. But the Apostles and Evangelists (which were *vicarii Apostolorum*) had both: and the Evangelists power was called forth by the Apostles, for they exercised their function where the Apostles appointed them: The Apostles received their office immediately from and by Christ: The Evangelists theirs from Christ by the Apostles: ordinary Ministers theirs from Christ indeed, but ministerially by the Presbytery. The Apostles and Evangelists were not fixed officers in any particular Congregation, but itinerant from place to place: ordinary Ministers are fixed in their own Congregations, They served the Church-Catholick actually wheresoever they became, and could draw forth the exercise of their offices without any mediate consent or call of the particular Churches or places, but so cannot particular ordinary Ministers. So that ordinary Ministers they are Ministers of the Church-Catholick, though not Catholick Ministers actually. But if Ministers be Ministers only in their particular Congregations, where they are fixed, and to which they were called by the Congregation; I marvel that our brethren of the Congregational way here in *England* are so desirous to have itinerant Ministers to be sent into all parts of the land, that shall be fastned to no particular Congregations: yea, and also to have gifted men, not ordained at all, to be suffered to preach publicly and constantly in Congregations; surely these things are not consistent with their principles.

## CHAP. VII.

*About Combinations of particular Congregations in  
Classes, and of them in Synods.*

**A** Further question is about the combination of Congregations and Elderships in Classes and Synods. For though it cannot be denied but that particular Ministers in their particular Congregations do serve the Church-Catholick in their admissions, ejections, and other Ordinances, as preaching to, praying with, and administering Sacraments to members of other Churches, in their own meeting-houses, and upon occasion in other meeting-houses, for the case is the same, whether they come to him, or he go to them; yet it may be doubted whether the Ministers and Elders may combine together, and jointly exercise acts of government, &c. And though this doth not necessarily belong to my question, yet because it hath some reference to the integrality of the Church-Catholick, I shall speak something of it.

Now there is a double Integrality of the Church-Catholick, the first is *Entitive*, whereby they are all bound together in the visible imbracing, profession of, and subjection unto the visible doctrine, covenant, and Laws of Christ, whereby they become Christians in the generall, whereby all Christians are bound as opportunity is offered, to perform Christian duties one to another, as fellow-members, *ex officio charitatis generali*, not only by virtue of the moral law, but by the Law of Christ, and to Christ as the King and head of his Church. As all dwelling within the kingdom of *England* are members of the Kingdom, and bound to carry themselves as subjects to the governours and laws, and as fellow-subjects one to another, though they be fixed members of no Corporations nor Townships. And this integrality is always *actual*.

The second is as it is organical by combination, as all the Counties and Corporations and Towns by combination make one kingdom: so all the particular Christian Congregations,

Provinces

Chap. 7.

Provinces and Kingdoms by combination make one Church-Catholick visible under Christ, and this is an habitual-integrality. Of this it is that *Ames* speaks, the Church-Catholick in regard of the externall state thereof, *Per combinationem habet suam integralitatem*, Am. med. li. 1. ch. 33. sect. 18.

There is likewise a double combination, one habitual, whereby all Churches and Christians are united and habitually combined into one political Kingdom under Christ, and are obliged to be mutually helpful one to another, as need requires, as becometh fellow-subjects and fellow-members: secondly, there is a actual combination, whereby any particular Churches shal actually agree, and so unite together for mutuall help of each other, and for transactions of businesses of common-concernment. And this is, either a constant combination of vicinities in a Classis, because there will be constant cause; or occasional and more seldom, as of a whole Province or Nation, and may be of the whole Church-Catholick, if convenient by their delegates. This latter combination is *fundamentum exercitii*: by the former they have *jus ad rem*, by this latter they have *jus in re*, to act *conjunctim* for the good of those Churches so actually combined.

And of this second kinde of integrality and combination it is that we are now speaking, which necessarily ariseth from the former, as the organical integrality of a Kingdom ariseth from the Entitive. For seeing all are fellow-subjects under the same Sovereign and Laws, though they have particular Counties, Corporations and Towns wherein they live, and actually enjoy constantly the general priviledges of subjects under the King and Laws, yet there will necessarily result a community and habituall integrality of the whole by co-ordinate combination.

The civill and Ecclesiasticall combinations as they proceed from a parallel ground, *viz.* subjection to the same Laws and Sovereign ( I mean respectively ) so they must necessarily run parallel in things that are general and essential to combination. Our brethren make them run parallel in the two first steps, *viz.* in combining particular persons into families, and particular families into Congregations of them that are *neighbours, dwellers*

lers together in some vicinity, which is nothing else in English but Parishioners, the English word comes of the greek. The Christians dwelling together made one Church at *Jerusalem*, *Ephesus*, *Corinth*, &c. by Ecclesiastical combination, as well as one city by civill combination respectively, And I doubt not but if all the Inhabitants of any one Town in *New-England* were judged fit to be members of the Church, they would combine them as members of the Church in that Town, and that Town would give denomination to them all as the Church in or of such a Town. And seeing the subjects of Christ's Ecclesiasticall Kingdom run parallel further with the subjects of a civil Kingdom, they all being Christians, Why may not the combination also run parallel, and the denomination be parallel for transaction of common Ecclesiasticall affairs, as well as civil, if prudence so dictate it? and the Churches in a hundred if they lie convenient, combine into a Classis as well, as into a hundred for civil transaction? And the Classes into a Province as well as hundreds into a County or Shire? and the Provinces into a national Church as well as the Counties into a civil Kingdom? and seeing Christ's Ecclesiastical Kingdom reacheth over many Kingdoms, why may they not make one habituall Church-Catholick, as well as many Kingdoms under the same laws and head make one Empire? The actuality indeed may cease where the constant or frequent community of acting ceaseth, whether at the Congregation or Classis where all the Officers are combined in frequent common acting, or at the Nationall Church where the civil community ceaseth, and so they frequent occasion of common acting by delegates cease, I determine not, but the habituality ceaseth not in the whole Church-Catholick visible.

I shall first speak of the combination of particular Congregations into a Presbyteriall Church, commonly called for distinction sake a Classis. That there may be a colledge or body of Elders that can act *conjunctim* as well as *divisim*, appears from *1 Tim. 4. 14.* where the Presbytery are said so lay their hands on *Timothy*. There is the name and thing, and their acting *conjunctim* in Ordination, which was not the Presbytery of a single Church, or at least not so considered in their Ordination of an Evangelist,

Chap. 7.

Evangelist, an itinerant, universal, actual officer under the Apostles. Our brethren also in *New-England* join the Elders of diverse Congregations together in ordaining Elders for a new-erected Congregation, and not only the erecting of new Congregations will require it necessarily, but the supplying of other Congregations vacant by death, for there are but few Congregations so well stored with preaching Presbyters, as can ordain new ones, if one or two of them die: Also we finde an Eldership acting together. *Acts 15. ver. 6. The Apostles and Elders came together to consider of this matter.* Also *Acts 11. ver. 30. and Acts 21. 18.* Christ gave the keys to the Apostles together *Mat. 28 19. Go ye and teach and baptize, &c.* who though they received their extraordinary calling of Apostleship for themselves only, yet they received the ministeriall office for all succeeding Ministers, and we finde no other especiall donation of the keys; and this appears by the following words, *Lo I am with you alway even to the end of the world;* which must needs be meant of the succeeding Ministers, for the Apostles were not to last to the end of the world, neither their persons nor their office. Therefore as the Apostles could from that donation exercise the keys *conjunctim & divisim* in their extraordinary function, so may the Presbyters exercise theirs also, and some keys cannot be used but *conjunctim*, as in Ordination and dispensing censures: and if Elders of several Congregations can act together as Elders in ordination (even in *New-England*) and in censures, much more then in a greater body. And if our brethren in *New-England* dared admit private men to lay on their hands in ordination of their Ministers, doubtlesse they would appoint some of their own private members to do it, that so (according to their tenet) they might enjoy all Gods Ordinances independently in their particular Congregations, and not admit of a foreign Officer to come and act as an Officer among them.

That divers Congregations may combine and make one Presbyterial Church, appears by divers instances in the New Testament. The Congregations in *Jerusalem* are called one Church, *Act. 8. 1. Act 11. 22. Act 15. 4.* The Congregations in *Antioch* are called one Church *Act. 13. 1. and Act. 14. 26.* The Congregation,



gations in *Ephesus* are called one Church, *Act.* 20. 17. *Rev.* 2. 1. And the Congregations in *Corinth* mentioned in the plural number, *1 Cor.* 14. 34. are called one Church, *1 Cor.* 1. 2. and *2 Cor.* 1. 1. Now that there were severall Congregations in each of these Cities appears, because there were in each of them so great a multitude of believers, as that they could not meet together to partake of all Gods Ordinances, especially if we consider that they had no publick eminent buildings for meeting-houses, but met privately *as<sup>o</sup> says Acts* 2. 46. in an upper room, *Act.* 1. 13. and in the house of *Mary*, *Act.* 12. 12. in the school of *Tyrannus*, *Act.* 19. 9: in the house of *Aquila* and *Priscilla*, *1 Cor.* 16. 19. in *Paul's* hired house at *Rome*, *Act.* 28. 30. in the house of *Nymphas*, *Colos.* 4. 15. &c. therefore called the Church in their houses. And this manner of meeting continued in the times of persecution in that age, and some succeeding.

Also it appears by the multitude of Church-Officers, Elders, Prophets and Teachers that were in each of them, which could not busie themselves in one Congregation, and sure they were not idle in those days. Also by the variety of languages, especially at *Jerusalem*, *Act.* 2. 5. 8. &c. See these and other arguments of this nature more fully explained, and more particularly proved and applied in *Jus Div. part. 2. chap. 13.*

And if these Churches were such (as in all rational probability they were) then that position, That there are no other Ecclesiasticall societies instituted by Christ, but particular Congregational Churches, will not hold good; and the Basis of the Congregational way wil fail, and the partition wall that seemeth thereby to be between them and the Presbyterians, must fall down.

And this unity of these Churches was not a spiritual unity in regard of saving grace, for all the members had not that; nor in regard of judgment, belief, heart and way, for that was common to all the Christians in the world: but a political union by an especial Ecclesiasticall obligation together (though we find no mention of any explicit Covenant, as the constituent form of the particular Churches) nor onely in regard of the administration of Word, Sacraments and Prayer, for these

Chap. 7.

were dispersed in their several Congregations, and could not be jointly together in regard of their multitudes. Neither were they one in reference to the Apostles general power and office only, they being universal Pastors, for so the universal Church over the whole world was one; but in regard of the common Presbyterie whereby they were governed constantly, and the Apostles themselves being in these several Churches did act as co-Presbyters with their Elders, and so they call themselves Elders, 1 Pet. 5. 1. and Joh. 2. And though indeed it cannot be peremptorily affirmed, that these Presbyterial Churches had their several Elders fixed to their several Congregations; yet that (as I conceive) varies not the question at all. And yet it is very probable that the Elders in those cities did divide those cities between them, for particular teaching and inspection of manners, to avoid confusion, and for a better means of conversion and edification of the whole, that the members and others might the better know where they should be baptized, taught and instructed (so far I mean as the persecutions and dangers of those times would permit) and yet for more weighty matters of ordination, excommunication, or censuring any heretics, or transacting any business of general concernment they did meet together.

Now that these several Presbyterial Churches had each of them a common Presbytery set over them to govern in common, appears for *Jerusalem* by *Act. 11. 27, 30.* and *Act. 15. 2.* and at *Antioch*, by *Act. 13. 1, 2, 3.* with *Act. 14. 35.* and at *Ephesus* by *Act. 20. 17, 28.* and at *Corinth*, 1 *Cor. 1. 12.* and 1 *Cor. 4. 15.* and *14. 29.* and at *Philippi*, *Phil. 1. 1.*

And not only Scripture proves it in the practice, but right reason and necessity requires that there should be a combination of particular Congregations, for the attaining the end for which government was appointed, both because there are many things that jointly concern many particular Congregations, and therefore it is fit they should be transacted in common: as also some particular Congregations are too weak to perform some things that may concern themselves, as probation and ordination of their own Ministers, and censuring of persons of great external power, or civil dignity, the resolving of difficult

cult controversies, and cases of conscience; the confuting of subtle and dangerous errors, and learned subtle hereticks. There may also be through mens weaknesse and corruption, male-administration or presumption thereof in a particular Congregation, which without combination and appeal cannot be remedied. There may also fall out a difference between the Congregation and their particular Presbytery, and then who shall decide it? yea, the very Presbytery in a Congregation may differ, and be equally divided among themselves, and who shall decide that difference? There may be some great difference between one Congregation and another Congregation, and they being equal in authority as Congregations are, *Par in Parem non habet imperium*, who then shall end these differences, if both be resolute, and will not yield each to other, or to the advice, counsel and perswasion of neighbour Churches? Therefore it is necessary that there be an authoritative conjoynd Presbytery, wherein the whole hath power to regulate the parts; the greater part of the body to heal and help the lesse, either in keeping them from division, or to cure them of divisions, when they are risen.

Sometime again many neighbour Congregations are scandalized by some notorious evil breaking out in one Congregation, or their members endangered by the evil example of some persons dwelling in one of the neighbour Congregations, and having recourse unto, and converse with the members of the rest, and haply that Congregation cannot, will not, or do not censure that offendour: shall there be no means to bring him to censure, and afford a remedy for the rest? Some heretick may endanger the members of diverse Congregations, and yet live but in one, and that one not able (haply) to grapple with him; or haply he be a fixed member of none (as may easily fall out, especially if Churches consisted only of gathered members, as some would have them) or one that shifteth up and down to avoid Congregational censure, how shall he be dealt withall, without combination of Churches?

Sometimes the offender or scandalous person is a member of one Congregation, and the witnesses live in two or three neighbour Congregations, how shall this mans cause be brought

Echap. 7.

to trial? The Elders of that Congregation where the accused person dwelleth, cannot authoritatively send for witnesses out of another, and if they will come voluntarily, they cannot (by our Laws) safely administer an oath unto them: neither can the Elders where the witnesses dwell, send for the accused person authoritatively, nor censure him if he will come voluntarily. And yet many such like cases may, and will fall out. If all civill causes were confined to the trial of the chief men in the severall Parishes, we should soon finde the difficulty, disability, mischief, and impossibility thereof, and the case is the same for Ecclesiasticall causes, for ought I know. "There is no way (saith M. *Rutherford*) to reduce or judge scandalous, dissenting Elders without there be a combination; for they will not censure themselves; and the people cannot. *Peasegh. Plea.* 191. But (saith he) the spirits of the Prophets must be judged by the Prophets, 1 Cor. 14. 39. And otherwise we must leave all scandalous Elders to the immediate judgment of Christ.

Self. 3.

But still there remaineth a greater *Quærit* about Synods consisting of delegated Officers of particular Churches, which because they are most properly *Ecclesiastica*, I shall say the lesse of them, as being not so pertinent to my question, it being about the whole Church, consisting of both Officers and private members respectively. Concerning Synods and the subordination of the particular Churches unto them, diverse have written so fully, learnedly, and punctually, that I shall refer the reader to them. See M. *Paget* in his defence of Church government, par. 2. and of the power of Classes and Synods, ch. 6. And Mr. *Gillespies Assertion of the government of the Church of Scotland.* And the four *Leyden Professors, Synopf. parvior. Theolog. disp.* 49. *The advice of our Reverend Assembly concerning a Confession of faith, and a form of Church government.* And *Jus Divinum by the London Ministers.* And M. *Parlers Polit. Eccl.*

The nature of Synods is all one, whether they be Provinceall, Nationall, or Occumenicall, and they only differ as greater or lesse, but their power in reference to their precincts, and delegation is alike. They differ from Presbyteries called *Classes*, because the Provincially is constituted only of certain delegated members

members from the classical Presbyteries of the same Province : *Self.* 3. the *National* of delegated members from the Provincial Synods : and the *Oecumenical* of delegated members from the National Synods : whereas the *Classis* is constituted of the Elders of the particular Congregations combined together. The *Classes* are more frequent, constant, and ordinary in their meetings, the other more rare and extraordinary. The power of *Synods* is not at all civil, but Ecclesiastical, neither is it destructive to the power of *Classes*, or single Congregations, but perfective and conservative. They are not infallible, but may err as well as a *Classis*, or single Elderhip, yet are not so subject thereto, because in the multitude of Counsellours there is safety, and they consist of more choice able men, and not so liable to personal prejudice against the accused, nor likely to be swayed by fear, or favour, or sinister respects. Their power is not merely consultatory and suasive, but authoritative, and to be submitted unto by those for whom their delegation is, so far as their acts are according to the Word of God, *In Synodo est authoritas apax, totius Ecclesie unitas, ordinis firmitas*, Leid. profess. de concil. If it be no more but consultatory and suasive, that is no more than a few private men may do ; yea, one man or woman may counsel, advise and persuade. By M. Ellis's opinion Councils and Synods being void of all authority, are but as a company of private Christians met together to advise one with another how to act in their own Congregations, where onely (saith he) they are in office : it may be an act of those that are in office, but not as Officers ; so that in that act they are to be considered as private members, who by such consultation take or give private advice how to act as officers, where they are Officers. Which is no otherwise then if in these times of trouble and danger, a company of peticonstables should meet occasionally, or by appointment together at a market-town, and there consult together how to act most commodiously and uniformly in their several Parishes, in the pressing of Souldiers, or gathering Assessments : or a company of Mayors of several Corporations should meet by appointment at London, and there advise together, how to order their several Corporations. So that a *Synod* whether *Provincial*, *National*,

Chap. 7.

*National, or Oecumenical*, can have no power to summon any heretick or scandalous person, and if any such should voluntarily come before them; or be brought before them by the civil Magistrate, that should before their faces blaspheme the whole *Trinity*, or be convicted of *Sodomy*; yea, though any of their own members should curse God himself, or be convicted of a present act of *Whoredom*, or of *Sorcery*, they have no power to censure him Ecclesiastically, but fraternally admonish him; and send him back to his own Congregation to be censured; and they themselves onely go thither as witnesses against him, because they are there (by this opinion) out of office, and all censures belong to the particular Elderships, as particular. But suppose now this heretick or scandalous person being departed (haply) from the Congregation where formerly he lived, or that Congregation being dissolved be a fixed member of no Congregation (as ten thousands of visible Christians, *i. e.* that have received the doctrine of Christ, and are under the seal of Baptism, may be, if particular Churches consist onely of such as can give evidence of the work of true grace in themselves) shall he remain an entitive member of Christs visible Kingdom, a gangrened limb, a rebel and traitour under the name and notion of a subject, and infect the rest of the body, and there be no remedy?

Sect. 4.

But as the subject matters that *Synods* have to deal with are of three sorts, so their power and the acts of it which they put forth are of three sorts likewise. First, they are to act in reference to matters of faith, *i. e.* doctrines to be believed and embraced, and of divine worship, *i. e.* duties of worship to be performed unto God: not to coin or frame, or adde any new articles of faith, or new acts of worship, or alter any that God hath instituted: but to explain, prove and apply those Articles of faith, and rules of worship laid down in the Word, and to confute and declare against the contrary errors, heresies, and corruptions; and the power they exert herein is called *dogmaticall*. Secondly, they are to act in reference to externall order and policy in matters prudentiall and circumstantiall, which are determinable by the true light of nature, right, reason, and generall rules in the Scripture: to set things in order, that all things

things may be done uniformly, decently, and in order: and the power they exert herein is called *diatactical*. Thirdly, they are to act in reference to error, heresie, schism, obstinacy, contempt and scandal, and to repress them, and to censure such persons as are guilty of any of them, and are referred over to them: and the power they exert herein is called *critical*. Self. 4.

This is none other power then the particular Elderships in their severall Congregations or Classes may exert in their sphere and precincts, with submission to the superiour Assemblies, and all-must be according to the Word of God. As in the natural body God hath set severall senses to act upon the severall sensible objects; visible, audible, tactile, &c. and severall faculties in reference to truth and falshood, good and evil, to discern and embrace the one, and avoid the other: So in the the body Ecclesiastical hath he set severall powers in the organs thereof to act diversly, according to the occurrent objects and incidents in the Church, both in the particular Congregations for the good of them, and in greater parts of the body for the good of them, and in the whole if convenient, for the good of that: but because remote parts cannot meet personally and generally in all their Officers, therefore that trouble and confusion is avoided by delegation of particular elected choice officers, and is but occasionally, and *pro tempore*.

A ground and pattern of a *Synod* is laid down, *Act. 15.* and 16 which is acknowledged to be a *Synod*, and warrant for a *Synod* by reverend M. Costar in his *Keys of the Kingdom of heaven*, cha. 6. And is called an Oecumenical Council by *Chamier in Parastrat. Tom. 2. lib. 39. cap. 8. sect. 2.* and *Whitak. cont. q. 6.* And generally by our Protestant Divines. And is abundantly proved and explained by the London Ministers in their *Jew Divinity*, par. 2. chap. 14. and 15. to which I refer the reader for satisfaction.

The occasion of that *Synod* was an error broached at *Antioch*, and neighbour-Churches, to enforce the observation of the ceremonial Law by all Christians, and this was promoted by lying, as if they were sent by the Apostles and Elders at *Jerusalem* to preach this doctrine. Hereby the Churches were much troubled, and in danger to bee subverted in their souls. This could not be suppressed by the disputes of *Barnabas* and *Paul* ::

Chap. 7.

*Paul*: hereupon the Elders of *Antioch* decreed and ordained (*ἔταξαν*) that *Paul* and *Barnabas*, and some others, should go up to the *Apostles and Elders at Jerusalem* about this question, and they submitted to this order, there was an authoritative mission, and probably members were also sent from *Syria* and *Cilicia*, for they were involved in the same danger, by the same persons, *Act.* 15. 23, 24. 42. But if there were delegates but from two Churches, it will justify delegates from ten or twenty.

And as the Church of *Antioch* did not send *Paul* and *Barnabas* as extraordinary and infallible and authentical Oracles of God, as *M. Cotton* noteth, for then what need the advice and help of Elders that were below them, being but ordinary and particular Officers of *Jerusalem*? But as wise and holy guides of the Church, who might not only relieve them by some wise counsel and holy order, but also set a precedent to succeeding ages, how errors and dissensions in Churches might be removed and healed. And with *Paul* and *Barnabas* they joyned others messengers in the same commission. So when this Synod was met, the Apostles acted not by their Apostolical, infallible, transcendent power, or by immediate inspiration, as in the penning of the Scripture; but the matters were carried on in an ordinary Synodal way by disputes and discourses, they deliberated about the true state of the question, and the remedy thereof, and after deliberation and disputes, they decisively conclude and determine the matter, and put forth all the three fore-named powers. First, they exert their *dogmatick* power in confuting of the heresie, and in vindication of the truth of justification by faith, without the works of the law: and their *critical* power in branding the false teachers with the infamous brand of troublers of the Church, and subverters of souls, and offbellers of the Apostles and Elders of *Jerusalem*: and their *decretall* power in ordering and framing practicall rules or constitutions for the healing of the scandal. They passed *τὰ θύματα ἀναιμάκτα* *Act.* 16. 4. they imposed them, for they are said *ἐπιβληθέντες*, *Act.* 15. 28. yet were not all the things they imposed necessary in themselves, as abstaining from things strangled and from blood: they are called necessary not *intrinsically*, for then they



they are so to us but for that time, because those things were so odious to the Jews, who could not be so suddenly brought from all ceremonies. Sect. 5.

It is true our Divines in their writings against the Papists do cry down the infallibility of Councils, and the over-high esteem they had of them, and the injurious and sinfull decree of their Popish Councils, but they honour the generall Councils, and account Synods an Ordinance of God. *Cebu. Inst. lib. 4. cap. 9. sect. 13. saith, "Nos certe libenter concedimus, siqua de dogmate incidat disceptatio, nullum esse nec melius nec certius remedium, quam si verorum Episcoporum Synodus conveniat, ubi controversum dogma excutitur. Multo enim plus ponderis habebit ejusmodi definitio in quam communiter Ecclesiarum pastores, invocato Christi Spiritu, consenserint, quam, &c."*

*Whitak. de consiliis cap. 2.* not only alloweth but commendeth Synods and Councils from the necessity and utility of them, and marvelleth that *Naxianzen* should say he never saw a good end of a Synod, alledging the good end and profit of the Council of *Nice*. And citeth *Augustine* in *Ep. 118. Conciliorum in Ecclesia Dei saluberrimam auctoritatem esse*. And addeth further, *Esi Concilia non sunt simpliciter & absolute necessaria, tamen multum conferunt, & valde utilia sunt, idque propter multas causas*. And then reckons up the causes. And divideth Synods in *rotundas & dinuclinas*. And bringeth *Act. 15.* for an example and warrant of them.

And *Chamier* in his *Panstrat. tom. 2. lib. 10. cap. 8. De omnium toto orbe Ecclesiarum politia*, sheweth the lawfulness and use of Synods. And *lib. 5. saith, Ad Synodos convocatos fuisse atque admissos omnes Episcopos nemo dubitat, sedisseque judices, suo jure, prout fieri solet in Aristocratia*. And *M. Parker* in *Polit. Eccl. l. 3. p. 355. saith, Fundatur hæc progressio a Presbyterio ad Classam, a Classi ad Synodum, in Instituto Christi, Mat. 18. 17. ex proportionem*. And *p. 123. he soundeth them upon the same Scripture, Per gradationem ratiocinandi*; a little after he saith they follow from that place, *per sequelam ratiocinandi, & per consequentiam*. Innumerable might be the citations of Protestant Divines in this kind.

It is confess, that particular Churches are endued with the Sect. 5.  
Y power

Chap. 7.

power of discipline within themselves, if the matter doth particularly and peculiarly concern themselves, and none others: or if there be no others that can joyn with them, they may do much alone, but that case is extraordinary.

It is, confess also that every single Congregation is equal in power to any other single Congregation, considered as a Church, only one may be greater and purer than another, and furnished with more and more able officers. And therefore how one sister Church by it's single power can non-communicate another, that is of equal power with it, I know not, for it is a censure, and no less than a vernal excommunication: and the other Church hath as much power to non-communicate them, and so there is a principle laid of perpetual and frequent division, and splitting a sunder of Christs political body and kingdom. Such a principle is a Common-wealth between Town and Town in civil affairs would be very dangerous, and bring deadly feuds and civil wars, and at last ruine to the whole.

And though there be a subordination of particular Churches to greater Assemblies, yet it is not absolute and arbitrary, but in the Lord: also it is a coordination, because the Officers of the particular Congregations are there, and help to constitute the *Classis*, or if it be a *Synod* they are virtually there by their delegates or Commissioners, as the Counties and Corporations are in a Parliament.

The subordination of particular Congregations to greater Assemblies, consisting so of members taken out of the particular Congregations, and the authoritative power and Ecclesiastical jurisdiction of those greater Assemblies over them appears, because we see the Church of *Antioch* was subordinate to the *Synod* at *Jerusalem*, *Act. 15*. Also Christs direction to deal with an offending brother, *Mat. 18*. ascends by degrees from private admonition to admonition before two or three, and from them if he amend not, to the Church: but what if the greater number of a Church, or suppose a whole Church offend? why the same rule of proportion they are to be brought before a higher Assembly, else no remedy can be had for offending Congregations, as well as offending persons. But neighbours Congregations or particular persons may be offended by a neighbour

bour Church, and there is no reason that that Church should be partec and judge also in their own case; and therefore it is requisite that there should be a greater combined Assembly to complain unto, Sec. 5.

And as the unity of the whol visible Church and poltikal Kingdom of Christ requires this, as the *London-Ministers* have well noted, wherein all things are to be managed as between members and fellow-subjects, and the greater part in coordination to rule the lesse in the Lord, and the whole the parts: so also there is the same necessity of *Synods* as of Clasiical combinations, and otherwise there will be irremediable difficulties.

Also we may observe the like subordination and appeals in the Jewish Church: she several Synagogues were subordinate to the great Assembly at *Jerusalem*, and had their appeals thither in greater causes, *Deut. 17. 8, 12. 2 Chron. 19. 8, 11. Exo. 18. 32, 36.* And this could not be aceremonial Law, for it did typifie nothing. The appeals were not to the high Priest, representing Christ, but to their highest Court: and though it were judicial to them, yet the equity of it remains, and so far as it was grounded on common right it is moral. Now the like difficulties and dangers that occasioned that Law then, remain still as great among us, and ever will. And it is observable that this thing was not learned by *Moses* in the pattern shewed him in the Mount, but was taught by the light of nature to *Jethro*, and by him was given in advice to *Moses*, *Exo. 18. 22.* and afterwards was approved by God, as beeing according to right reason, and a thing common to all societies as societies, not Ecclesiastical onely, and not a positive Law onely, but dictated by the light of nature, right reason and necessity, and therefore is practised in all ages, nations, armies and societies, though not in every particular circumstance. And therefore except it were forbidden, or some other way instituted to avoid those difficulties and dangers that will arise, it ought to be in use also in the Church under the Gospel, as well as summoning, convening in fitting times and places, and a moderator or chair-man, and silence, obedience and respect, and due order in proceedings according to allegation and probation, which are things com-

Chap. 7.

mon to all Judicatories, as Judicatories. And surely God would not have Christians under the Gospel under a more grievous yoke, and irremediable inconveniences then the Jewish Church, that if any of them be oppressed by the ignorance, or ill will of their Elders, they shall have no relief.

Secl. 6.

*Obj.* If there be appeals from one Presbytery to another that is higher, then must there be two kinds of Presbyteries, and two kinds of Presbyters; but the Scripture speaks but of one, and giveth no rules for any Presbyteries, but one. Indeed in Universities the same men may be heads of the Colleges respectively, and heads of the Universitie also; but there are differing and distinguishing names, relations, and Statutes; but it is not so for Elders of particular Congregations to be Elders of Classes and Synods, &c.

*Answ.* The Church is but one visible, political Kingdom of Christ, made up by the collection and aggregation of all visible believers, who are called into an unity of Covenant, and laws, and way: and all the Ministers and Officers of the Church are given to the whole primarily, for the gathering and edifying of it, and they are all to teach and rule, and performe all their administrations respectively, with reference to, and the best advantage of the whole. And they did serve the whole as one actually when they were convenient, but their number encreasing they divided into several companies, for their better ordering, edification and encrease: and therefore the instance is not parallel, for the office of the Ministers is first to the whole, and the Charter and Statutes of the whole and every particular Church are but one: and therefore the Ministers though they ordinarily act in their particular Congregations, as it were in their particular Colleges, being called by them to take the immediate, constant, particular inspection of them, yet can they exercise their general office when and wheresoever they have a call thereunto. Now this call is not that which giveth them their office, but is *proximum fundamentum exercitij* only. Neither is the particular Congregation the adequate correlate to an Elder, for it doth not *mutuo ponere & tollere*, but the Church-Catholick only. But of this see more in the 2<sup>d</sup> question. S. 4.

But against this M. Ellis vind. 40. brings an Objection which he utters in with a *Let it be observed by all sorts*, "By this" means (saith he) the power being given not to any one Church, but to the whole Church as one body, and not to the members with the Officers, but to the Officers only; there is derived a very transcendent power and authority upon every particular Minister, more then any Parliament man hath, yea, more then a King, who is limited to his dominion. Self. 6.

But I answer, that the Presbyterians acknowledge that power of government is given immediately to every Congregational Eldership, or at least to such a College of Elders as may frequently and constantly meet and rule in common, as they did at *Jerusalem*, and it is not derived unto them by any superior authority on earth, by way of descention, except by a Ministerial investment by Ordination. And this power is to be constantly exerted for the actual, Ecclesiastical regiment of that Congregation, or those Congregations over whom those Elders are set in the Lord; yet with reference to the rest of the body, whereof they are but a parcel, and they may stand in need of the help of more Elders then their own, upon occasion.

It is true, government is not given to the members with the Officers, but to the Officers only: nor to the body of the Congregations as the subject of it; either in whole or in part, as they are private members distinct from the Officers, much lesse are they the *αγῶν ἡμίλητος*, or first receptacle thereof.

And for the inference hence of such a transcendent power and authority upon every particular Minister more then a Parliament man or a King. Suppose M. Ellis is not ignorant that the office of every particular Minister in his Congregation giveth him authority to do more in administering God's Ordinances, (as authoritative preaching, and administering the seals of the Covenant, and the Officers in administering spiritual censures) then a Parliament-man or a King can do. Remember *Uzziah's* example. And yet in all civil affairs they are as dutiful subjects as any else, and as much subject to civil authority. Because the *Priests* and *Levites* were in the matters of God

chap. 7.

set over all *Israel*, will it therefore follow that the meanest *Le-wite* was greater then the *Nobles*, *Princes* and *Kings* of *Israel*? Indeed the meanest *Priest* might offer sacrifice, which the *King* could not do, but this was no disparagement to the *Nobles*, or to the *King*. No more then it is to them that the meanest *Physician* may administer physick *virtute officij*, and the meanest *Pilot* guide the Ship, which the greatest *Princes* may not doe. The office and power and honour that belong thereto is of another kind, then *Parlaments* and *Kings*, it is not civil but spiritual. You know Gods Ministers have power to baptize *Parliament men*, *Nobles* and *Kings*, and their children, and to give them the Lords Supper, and to teach, admonish, reprove, and from God to threaten and denounce judgments against them, even eternal destruction, if they goe on in sinful courses. They do doctrinally bind and loose *Princes*, and their whole Kingdoms, and the whole world, as occasion serveth. and can any man say that the greatest men are by their greatness free from Church-censures, if they be notoriously vile? and yet none can impose them but Ecclesiastical Officers. Suppose divers *Parliament men* or Noble men, yea, a *King* himselfe were members of a Congregational Independent Church, would not the Officers of that Congregation account it their duty to administer all Gods Ordinances to them, as occasion requires, yea, the Ordinances of discipline and censures, if there be just cause?

Sir, would you now be willing to have a retraction of your own kind? with a *Let it be observed by all sorts*, that by the Independent way power is given to 2. or 3. Officers in a Congregation (or as others of them say, if the particular Congregation joyn) to censure, yea, excommunicate *Parliament men*, *Nobles* and *Kings*, if they judge there be cause, and all the Churches in the world shall have no power to relieve them, except that Congregation, or those Elders please.

“It makes (saith M. Ellis) every Minister one of the standing Officers of the Christian world, to whom with his colleagues (not severall and by distribution, but joyntly and as one body) is committed the government of the whole Christian world, and managing the affairs of the son of God throughout

“the

the face of the earth. And this is marked with ( " ) as if these Sect. 6.  
were the very words of the Presbyterians, which are but his own  
paraphrase and collection, and not their sence, much lesse their  
words.

But I answer, Every Ministers office is habitually indefinite,  
but he is not actually a standing Officer of the Christian world.  
But as a *Physician* by his calling, profession and license, is a *Physician*  
to the whole world habitually, and may act upon the bod-  
ies, and about the lives of men, of what nation soever, where  
and when he hath a call. And as a *Lawyer* is a *Lawyer* to the  
whole Kingdome, and hath power by his call to the bar to deal  
about any mans case or estate ( so far as the Law alloweth,  
and his calling serveth ) where and when he is required, and  
yet these are but professions, not offices, which would make the  
habitual power haply more reducible into act, upon a lawfull  
call: but Christs Ministers have an indefinite habitual office,  
beyond their particular Congregations, yet in regard of exert-  
ing and constant exercise thereof, it is distributively over their  
own flocks, which are as their constant Patients and Cli-  
ents, but if there be necessity, just occasion, and a call to  
be helpfull to any others jointly with them that have the same  
office, they may exercise their power in any part of the whole  
body.

" And so ( saith M. Ellis ) he is one of Christs vicars generall  
" ( and not particular only, which I acknowledge every Minister  
" to be in his place ) *magnum* surely & *memorable nomen*. But  
this is but *magnum & memorable scomma*, and so I passe it by.  
M. Ellis knows that this power though habitually it belongeth  
to the office, and so to the person that hath that office, yet is  
not drawn forth in a generall Councel for the actuall, immediate  
service of the whole Church, once in many hundred years:  
and divers generations of Ministers die, and it is not called forth  
in their ages; and when it is, they are usually the most able and  
eminent persons that have that call; and not one of many hun-  
dreds of them neither, therefore that scoff might well have been  
spared.

But he confesseth every particular Minister in his place to bee  
Christs Vicar ( as he terms him ) i. e. to act *vice Christi*, and  
all

Chap. 7.

all distributively to be Christs Vicars generall, I see he is not sublimated so high ( as some are ) as to make the Ministers to be the Vicars or Stewards of the Congregation, and to carry their keys for them. But can they act *vice Christi* no where else ? in whose name doe they preach, baptize, administer the Lords Supper, and bless the people, when they act abroad occasionally ? This ariseth from that principle ) disclaimed in all former ages of the Church ) that a Minister is a Minister, but in his own Congregation, and out of office to the Church besides.

Self 7.

But *M. Ellis* hath another Objection against it, *viz.* " If it be so ( saith he ) great reason it is that the Church of the whole world should choose these universall Officers, and so the Church of a Nation the Nationall Officers, &c. by whom they are to be governed in that which is dearest and of highest moment, *viz.* the precious soul, or else their condition is most sad.

*Ans.* Is there not the same reason that the whole world should have a hand in the choice of every Physician ? and the whole Kingdome of every Lawyer ? And by the same reason it will follow, that the whole Christian world should have a consent in the admitting of every member of the Church, seeing they be members not of the particular Congregation onely, into which by particular association they are admitted, but of the whole Church-Catholick visible. But as every Minister is entrusted with the admitting of members into the whole, and every Eldership with calling out of the whole : so may every conjoined Presbytery be also with the admittance of an Officer. It is impossible that the whole Church should meet about admittance either of members or Officers, but the particular parts are entrusted in the places where they live : and if any man or woman can give in any just exception against either member or Minister, that is to be admitted, it shall debar their admission, or procure an ejection.

The new *Jerusalem* Rev. 21. is said to have 12. gates, and there was an admission into the whole city by every gate : so is there admission into the whole Church by baptism in every Congregation. The Temple spoken of in *Ezek. 40* &c. is conceived



ceived to typifie the Evangelical Church in general, and the several chambers the particular Congregations: now as those that were admitted into any chamber had thereby admission into the whole house, so they that are admitted in any Congregation, are admitted into the whole Church. And though the admission of particular Officers or members is not done *interventu totius Ecclesie*, yet it is done *intra totius Ecclesie*, with reference and respect had to the whole.

Sect. 7.

But secondly I answer, That when that habitual power is drawn into act in a particular Congregation, as their particular Minister, then that Congregation meets to give him a call: and if an unworthy, unskillful man get into the profession of Physick or Law, for all his habitual power by license, he may have patients and clients few enough to call his power into act: the like may be said of an unworthy Minister, if Churches have their right of calling or approving their Ministers. Or if there be a call to act in a *Synod*, so great a part of the Church as the *Synod* extends unto, have a hand to call to that action. Indeed in a *Classis* the whole vicinity of Officers may meet personally by their actuall combination, but if it be a *Provinciall Synod*, every *Classis* in the Province chooseth the members thereof severally: if in a *National Synod* every Province chooseth and calleth the members thereof, and so there is a call of the whole Kingdom: and if it be a generall Council of the whole Church, all the Christian Nations elect and call the members thereof respectively; and so this sadnesse he speaks of is salved.

“And for unworthy persons intruding into the Church by a little learning, to live idly on the sweat and cost of others, or that shall have a friend, patron, or purse to make one, and so come into the Ministry and a living; which (saith he) is the Kings road in some Churches: the Presbyterians abhor it as much as he.

“But such an one (saith he) shall become a Parliament man, and joint governour of the whole Church on earth, by whose one vote all the liberties and truth of religion in them may be destroyed. This is another scoff, in calling every Minister, though unworthily crept in, a Parliament man, and joint governour of the whole Church on earth.

Chap. 7...

But Sir, your passions make you forget your self much. It is not to be actually such a Parliament-man and joint-governour, but habitually capable to be occasionally chosen *pro tempore* into a *Provincial, National, or Occasional Council*. And is it not as great danger in a kingdom, that any man, though of never so mean breeding, or vicious life, if he get wealth or honour by hook or crook, shall be capable to be chosen a Parliament-man, and by his Vote (onely, as it may be) all the civil liberties of a kingdom may be destroyed? Any Gentleman or Knight though he hath not an habituality, yet hath a potentiality to be a Parliament-man, which is reducible into act as well as if it were an habituality. And proportionably there are forty, nay five hundred Gentlemen chosen to be members of Parliaments, for one Minister chosen to be a member of an *Occasional Council*.

"A glimpse whereof (saith he) we have seen in the Convocations or Synods in our own Nations. But when did Mr. Ellis see a Presbyterial Convocation or Synod in our own Nation? Prelatical Convocations and Synods indeed we have seen and felt, but no Presbyterial ones. And therefore his second sadnesse might have been spared.

"O but none (saith he) attains the honour of being an universal Officer, a Parliament-man, but by the consent (formal or virtual) of all or the major part of them. And therefore the condition of the Church is more sad then the condition of men in their civil liberties in this kingdom.

*Answer.* I pray wherein? For as the free-holders in the kingdom choose Parliament-men for themselves, their wives, children, and servants, and all the copie-holders, and meaner poor people in their severall Counties, which are farr the greater number & so the Ministers and Elders, whom the Congregations have chosen and entrusted over them in the Lord, do formally or virtually choose all the members of *Provincial, National, and Occasional Synods and Councils*. And if the Laws of the Kingdom would bear it (thaply) it would be as commodious (if not more) if a prime man or two in every Town had the power to meet and elect a Parliament-man or two for the whole County.

"O but no such agreement hath been made (no not tacitely) *Sett. 8.*  
 \* by the Church-Catholick, nor no such institution of Christ  
 \* hath appeared yet.

*Ans.* We finde a pattern of a *Synod* in *Act. 15.* consisting  
 of delegated members, with formall disputes and decrees, not  
 of the Apostles onely but the Elders also. And if one Church  
 may delegate and send to a Synod, then may another, yea,  
 twenty.

And we finde that the Churches did then submit unto  
 them, to their great profit, *Act. 15. 31.* And the Churches  
 formerly have agreed unto, honoured, and submitted unto Coun-  
 cils, and received much good by them; especially the first and  
 general Council of *Nice*, &c. And indeed the choice and sen-  
 ding of members to make up Synods, is more then a tacite agree-  
 ment to them, as well as the choice of Parliament men is  
 a virtual agreement, and promise of submission to the Parla-  
 ment.

*Objection.* But if the Ministers be Pastors to the whole Church,  
 then the whole is to honour them, and contribute towards their *Sett. 8.*  
 maintenance, because they serve the whole, ordinarily in their  
 own Congregations, and occasionally by preaching and ruling  
 in Classes and Synods, for it is due from them that are taught  
 and ruled, *Gal. 6. 6, 1 Tim. 5. 17.*

*Ans.* That all men are bound to honour all the Ministers  
 for their office and works sake, is true; though they cannot ac-  
 tually apply and give testimonies of that honour, but to such  
 as they know. But for maintenance, the people over whom the  
 Minister hath the particular inspection, and among whom hee  
 doth assiduously labour, are ordinarily to afford it, being the  
 persons that actually partake of his continuall labours, and it  
 is the most convenient way of certain and speedy raising of it, as  
 the *Levites* had maintenance from the severall places where  
 they dwelt, both cities and glebs, and other comings in.  
*Micah* giveth a stipend to *Jonathan the Levite*, his diet and  
 apparell, *Judg. 17. 10.* It is like the Elders of *Jerusalem* were  
 maintained by the Church of *Jerusalem*, but whether it was  
 collected in the particular meeting-houses for such as did la-  
 bour there particularly, or put into one stock for the mainte-

Chap. 7.

nance of their whole Eldership, I know not.

But suppose one able man will maintain a Minister for the whole Congregation, or a Lecturer or Minister in another Congregation, or the State shall maintain a Minister in a Congregation, is that Congregation bound to afford him a second honourable maintenance? Or suppose a Combination of Ministers having sufficient maintenance from their severall Congregations will join together, and maintain a Lecture freely, may not the people hear them, because they do not maintain them? I fear you will finde but few Congregations will make that scruple.

*Obj.* But the Ministers perform not their whole office to the Congregation that maintains them, but part of it to the *Classis*, and part to the *Provincial* or *National* Churches, and part to the *Catholick Church*.

*Ans.* A particular Eldership perform their whole office to their own Congregation, which concerneth their Congregation only, as far as they are able. But in some things the particular Congregation stands in need of the help of other Elders, as in male-administration, and matters of more weight; and there be matters of more general concernment then can be transacted in one single Eldership, and other Congregations likewise may stand in need of the help of their Eldership in the like cases: and so the particular Congregation is not hindred but helped by combination. And even in their greater Presbyteries they serve their own Congregations also, as well as in their own Congregations they serve the Church-Catholick, in admitting members in, and casting them out that are scandalous, and in feeding, nourishing, and governing the members thereof, in their own Congregations.

*Ob.* But this will be too great a burthen for Ministers to meddle in the affairs of many Congregations, who will have work enough in their own.

*Ans.* As they shall afford help to others, so they shall receive help for their own Congregation from others with whom they are combined. But what greater burthen will it be to do it in an authoritative way, more then in a charitable? and yet that our brethren will allow.

*Object.*

*Object.* But then the Ministers exercise rule where they do not ordinarily preach, and so the keys are not commensurable. Sect. 9.

*Ans.* The keys are commensurable, though the exercise of them be not always commensurable. Neither is a Minister bound always to put forth the exercise of every key, where he puts forth one. A man may preach where he administred no Sacraments. *Paul* preached much at *Corinth*, but was not bound to baptize there: though no doubt hee converted many, yet he baptized but few, *1 Cor.* 1. Christ himself preached much, but baptized not, *John* 4. 2. *Peter* preached to *Cornelius* and his company, but baptized them not: it is said he commanded them to be baptized, And the Apostles usually carried about with them a Minister to baptize those whom they converted; as shall be shewed more in the second question.

A man may administer Sacraments where he preacheth not, as the Apostles baptized, but Christ only preached there. And he that baptized *Cornelius* and his company, did not preach unto them, but *Peter* only preached. We read not that the *overseer* or Minister, which *Paul* and *Barnabas* carried about with them, did preach.

A Minister may both preach and administer Sacraments where he rules not, As *Philip* to the *Eunuch*, the Apostles and the seventy in Christ's time: and Ministers that preach abroad in a journey, or at a Lecture,

Also a Minister may rule where he neither preacheth nor administred any Sacraments: for all the Elders in *Jerusalem* ruled in common; but preached and administred Sacraments from house to house, and could not preach to every Congregation whom they ruled. Also the Elders at *Jerusalem*, *Act.* 15. did exercise discipline in making decrees for *Antioch*, *Syria*, and *Cilicia*, where they preached not.

*Objection.* This formerly was a grand Objection against the Bishops; that they undertook to rule where they preached not. Sect. 9.

*Ans.* The exceptions against the Bishops, were first, That they or most of them arrogated that power of rule to themselves.

Chap. 7.

selves upon a wrong ground, *viz.* not as Presbyters, but as men of a superiour order and office, *viz.* of being Bishops, and so above Presbyters even Pastors of Pastors. Secondly, They challenged that to be due to one that belonged to a Colledge or Elderhip, or combination of Elders. Thirdly, they robb'd the people and Pastors of their liberty and power: for they did not associate Congregations with them, but subdued them unto them. They were not mutually subject to Presbyteries, but made the Presbyteries subject to themselves. They did not carry things in way of consociation and confederacy as *inter Pares*, but as Lords both of Ministers and people. They took the whole Diocess to be their actual cure, and all Ministers were but their Curates. They forced men to bring in presentments to them and their delegates, which concerned the particular Congregations onely, and ought and might have been transacted there. But it was not for exercising an act of discipline merely where they did not preach, but because it was not on a right ground, nor in a right way. See these things noted by the Assembly in their answer to their dissenting brethren pag. 41.

*Objection.* If there be superiour and more generall Assemblies, and appeals unto them, then great and stubborn persons will never be brought to censure, for they will appeal higher and higher, even to a general Council, which haply will not converse in their life time.

*Answer.* The Officers of the particular Congregation have power to inflict the censure, if they find just cause, and that censure remaineth on them, notwithstanding their appeal, untill their cause be heard in a greater Assembly, and if it then be found to be just, they confirm it, and leave it upon them, if unjust, they ought to relieve them.

*Objection.* If appeals be admitted to greater Assemblies, as Provinciaall, Nationall, and much more Oecumenicall Councils, it will occasion much trouble and charge to the party grieved, and to the witnesses and prosecutors to go so far to bring their causes to triall. This Objection or to this purpose M. Ellisworth, *vind.* p. 16.

*Answer.* That may be prevented by stating the question in this

rence, and putting it *inter controversias juris*, and so it may be determined indefinitely: and the matter of fact may be proved accordingly in the particular Congregation or Class, in application to the particular persons, *secundum allegata & probata*. Sect. 10.

*Obj.* But if appeals be admitted from the Congregational Eldership, because they may err, the same danger will lie against Class, Synod, and Councils, for they may err also, and by the same reason a man may appeal from a general Council, for they may err.

*Ans.* The appealing from the particular Eldership to superior Assemblies, is not because they are infallible, and cannot err, but because there is less danger of erring, and fewer temptations to error or bewilderment, than in the particular Eldership. *In the multitude of Counsellors there is safety.* Many eyes see more than a few: and those greater Assemblies consist of more chosen & eminent persons usually, than the particular Elderships. And they are free from all suspicion of personal grudge or animosities, and not so subject to fear of revenge from the censured person.

This liberty of appeals, as it is founded in the Law of nature, and seen by the light thereof, and in use in all Societies, and granted to the Jewish Church, and practised by the Church of *Amiech* in *Act. 13.* and in use anciently in the primitive times, *Providendum est ne innocens damnetur, ideo habeat potestatem is qui abjectus est ut Episcopus finitimos interpellat*, *Conc. Sard. Can. 17. &c.* So also it is in effect granted by the Apologists themselves, *Apol. Nar. p. 21.* "It is the most abhorrid maxime  
" that any religion hath ever made profession of, and therefore  
" of all other the most contradictory and dishonorable unto  
" that of Christianity, that a single and particular society of  
" men professing the name of Christ, and pretending to be en-  
" dowed with a power from Christ to judge them that are of the  
" same body and society with themselves, should either arro-  
" gate to themselves an exemption from giving an account, or  
" being censurable to any other, either Christian Magistrate  
" above them, or neighbour Churches about them: But what  
" kind of account or censurableness they mean, I know not. Sect. 10.

But

Chap. 7.

selves upon a wrong ground, *viz.* notes Presbyters, but as men of a superiour order and office, *viz.* of being Bishops; and so above Presbyters even Pastors of Pastors. Secondly, They challenged that to be due to one that belonged to a Colledge or Elderhip, or combination of Elders. Thirdly, they robb'd the people and Pastors of their liberty and power: for they did not associate Congregations with them, but subdued them unto them. They were not mutually subject to Presbyteries, but made the Presbyteries subject to themselves. They did not carry things in way of confociation and confederacy as *inter Pares*, but as Lords both of Ministers and people. They took the whole Diocess to be their actual cure, and all Ministers were but their Curates. They forced men to bring in presentments to them and their delegates, which concerned the particular Congregations onely, and ought and might have been transacted there. But it was not for exercising an act of discipline merely where they did not preach, but because it was not on a right ground, nor in a right way. See these things noted by the Assembly in their answer to their dissenting brethren *pag. 11.*

*Objection.* If there be superiour and more generall Assemblies, and appeals unto them, then great and stubborn persons will never be brought to censure, for they will appeal higher and higher, even to a general Council, which haply will not converse in their life time.

*Ans.* The Officers of the particular Congregation have power to inflict the censure, if they find just cause, and that censure remaineth on them, notwithstanding their appeal, untill their cause be heard in a greater Assembly, and if it then be found to be just, they confirm it, and leave it upon them, if unjust, they ought to relieve them.

*Objection.* If appeals be admitted to greater Assemblies, as Provinciaall, Nationall, and much more Oecumenicall Councils, it will occasion much trouble and charge to the party grieved, and to the witnesses and prosecutors to go so far to bring their causes to triall. This Objection or to this purpose *M. Ellisworth, vind. p. 16.*

*Ans.* That may be prevented by stating the question in dispute.



rence, and putting it *inter controversias juris*, and so it may be determined indefinitely: and the matter of fact may be proved accordingly in the particular Congregation or Class, in application to the particular persons, *secundum allegata & probata*. Sect. 10.

*Obj.* But if appeals be admitted from the Congregational Eldership, because they may err, the same danger will lie against Class, Synod, and Councils, for they may err also, and by the same reason a man may appeal from a general Council, for that may err.

*Ans.* The appealing from the particular Eldership to superior Assemblies, is not because they are infallible, and cannot err, but because there is less danger of erring, and fewer temptations to error or bewilderment, than in the particular Eldership. *In the multitude of Counsellors there is safety.* Many eyes see more than a few: and those greater Assemblies consist of more chosen eminent persons usually, than the particular Elderships. And they are free from all suspicion of personal grudge or animosities, and not so subject to fear of revenge from the censured person.

This liberty of appeals, as it is founded in the Law of nature, and seen by the light thereof, and in use in all Societies, and granted to the Jewish Church, and practised by the Church of Antioch in Act. 13. and in use anciently in the primitive churches. *Providendum est ne innocens damnetur, ideo habeat provocare in quo abjectus est ut Episcopus finitimos interpellat*, Conc. Sard. Can. 17. &c. So also it is in effect granted by the Apologists themselves, *Apol. Nar.* p. 21. "It is the most abhorrid maximæ that any religion hath ever made profession of, and therefore of all other the most contradictory and dishonorable unto that of Christianity, that a single and particular Society of men professing the name of Christ, and pretending to be endowed with a power from Christ to judge them that are of the same body and Society with themselves, should either arrogate to themselves an exemption from giving an account, or being censurable to any other, either Christian Magistrate above them, or neighbour Churches about them: But what kind of account or censurableness they mean, I know not. But

Chap. 7.

But as the censurableness from the Christian Magistrate, above them must be meant of a judicial censure in his kinde, which is civil; so that from the neighbour-Churches about them should be judicial also in their kinde, which is Ecclesiastical.

*Objeſt.* But if general Councils be an Ordinance of God, and the supreme Ecclesiastical judicatory, it is a marvel that Christ should suffer his Church to be so many hundred years without it; it should then rather be a constant, standing Court.

*Ans.* It is not necessary that there should be a standing Court-Catholick, consisting of constant Officers of the Church-Catholick actually, as there is of particular Churches, but onely occasionally *pro re nata*: for there is power put into particular Churches for the managing of their own affairs; and such affairs as are of general concernment, and of greater weight then can be transacted in a particular Eldership, or Classis, or Provincial, or National Assembly, fall out very seldom. The Apostles themselves after their dispersion kept no such general standing Court, much lesse is it needful now. *Cogi Optimates non semper est necesse*, Chamier. *rom. 2. lib. 10. cap. 8. sect. 15, 16.* where he answers this objection fully. A general Council ought to be (saith *Salmas. Jonely. Quoties exigit causa communis, &c. Appar. 273.* It is not *ad esse Ecclesia, nec ad bene esse Ecclesiam, sed ad optimum esse Ecclesia*, saith *M. Rutherford*. The Church of Antioch had once an occasion of appeal to a Synod at Jerusalem, but no such cause of constant recourse thither. This objection may be made as well about the Christian Magistrate; seeing he is to be a nursing father to the Church, and such were promised by God, it may be marvelled that God should let the Evangelical Church want them in the infancy of it for above 300 years: and many of the Emperours after they proved Christians were wasters of the Church, and promoters of Arianism and Popery, and not nourishers of the Church. But we must not undertake to prescribe God what is best. *Times and seasons are in his hand*

*Obj.* If general Councils be the supreme Ecclesiastical Judicatories, then how dare any particular Churches, at most but (if)

National,

National, abrogate and swear against the Ordinances and government established by the Catholick Church. And this Objection he bids me mind, *win. p. 56.* I suppose he meant the Objection, in reference to the National Oath and Covenant against Arch-bishops, Bishops, &c. Sect. 10.

*Answer.* Although Councils are very reverend and to be submitted unto in the Lord, yet are they not infallible, but may erre; they are not *regule regulant*, but *regulata & regulanda*, and to be tried by the word of God, and if they speak not according to that, they are not to be obeyed. *Clavis errans non ligat.* Yet it is safer to be guided by a multitude of Counsellors in a great, yea, general Assembly, if it were rightly gathered, (which the Popish Councils were not) then to stand bound by two or three Elders in a particular Congregation without relief.

The doctrine of that famous Council of Nice, and some others following, was sound, and we have not departed from them therein. And we know, that although many Councils were corrupt and not rightly chosen, nor acting uprightly according to the word, but guided by factions, and swayed by the Pope, and the best not infallible, yet the Scriptures are a constant, infallible rule to walk by. *Nec ego Nicenam Synodum tibi, nec en mihi Ariminensem debes, tanquam præjudicatum, obijcere. Nec ego hujus auctoritate, nec tu illius detinueris.* August. advers. Maximin. lib. 3.

## Chap. 8.

C. H. A. R. V. F. L.

An answer to M. Ellis's Prejudices, Probabilities and Demonstrations against an universall visible (and as he calls it) governing (but should have said Organickall) Church. And his wrong stating of the question rectified.

**M**R Ellis hath set down divers just prejudices (as he calls them) and strong probabilities (*vind.* ch. 3. pag. 10.) and Demonstrations (*vind.* ch. 4. p. 19.) against this position, or rather against an opinion of his own stating. and framing, for I know none that own it as he hath stated it; But it is an easie thing to set up a man of straw, and then beat it down at pleasure.

## Sect. 1.

Before I answer these prejudices, probabilities and demonstrations, it will be requisite to view what M. Ellis denyeth, and what he granteth, and how he stateth the question, and what is the true state of it, and wherein the difference lyeth between him and his opponents, and then we shall the better see how his prejudices, probabilities and demonstrations will lie against the question in hand.

"First, he denyeth the question to be meant of the essentiall oneness of the Church, whereby all the Christians in the world *divisin*, and in their severall places do visibly, outwardly, and openly professe (for substance) the same faith, seals, worship and government, and so may be said to be one company, one society, one Congregation in nature and essence *vind.* p. 7.

But indeed this oneness is included in the question, and is the very foundation and ground of all we desire no other unity then will necessarily flow from this. This Entitive visible unity of the whole as one society under one head, in one visible Covenant, under the same seal, under the same laws from the same authority, is enough to denominate a Church-Catholick visible.

visible, and one visible kingdom of Christ here on earth. And to this Church as one integral society, were the Ordinances and privileges primarily given, and for their enjoyment thereof was the organicalness and politicalness added, and it was made one habitual, organical, visible Kingdom of Christ on earth, because all these visible subjects have one common right to, and communion in the same Ordinances and privileges indefinitely in this whole visible kingdom.

Sec. 1.

But I fear this will not sate our bretheren who make not the general Covenant, which giveth the essence and extensiveness to the Church, but the particular Covenant, compact and consideration to give the right to the Ordinances. Their tenet (as far as I can collect from their Books) is, that a company of visible believers being joyned together in a particular holy Covenant, have thereby right to the enjoyment of all Gods Ordinances; and hence flow their right of choosing and ordaining Officers over themselves (the Ordination in their sense being nothing else (as I conceive), but a designation or assignation of those chosen men) by the imposition of hands (of some men appointed by them in their name and behalf) to be their particular Officers, to dispence the Ordinances of Jesus Christ unto them. And hence also floweth their right of censuring and ejecting those officers again, if they miscarry themselves. *Ejusdem est institere et destituere*, and if the Congregation can appoint men to lay hands on their Officers in their behalfe, and set them up, then also if they see cause they can appoint men to lay hands on them by censures, and pluck them down again, or else they must go out of their Congregation to neighbour-Elders for that censure, which is contrary to their own tenet, if it be an Ordinance of God. Yes, they must go out of their Congregation for discipling, which is most contrary to their principles, and that indeed where the greatest pinch lyeth, for they do not so much sturde at a Ministers dispensing the word or Sacraments to other Congregations, for that is done frequently by them, or at the exercise of the key of discipline, and as I conceive, that it is that which breedeth this difference between us. And if they must go out of their Congregation for the censure of their Elders, why not by the same reason in some cases

Chap. 8.

for the censure of some private members? So that by their sense their right to Gods Ordinances neither ariseth from their being in the general Covenant; for so they were before their confederation, nor yet from their organicalness, for they have power to organize themselves, and disannul those Organs again, & to perform some Church-acts before and without Organ, but it ariseth merely from their particular covenant and consideration.

“2. Neither is the Query (saith he) whether the several companies or Churches of this profession as they are one in nature, so also in spirit and affection, and thereupon in engagement of mutual care one of another, and to take notice what doings are dispersed, what conversations used among the Churches. *74. 7.*

If by Engagement he meaneth an amical or fraternal Engagement, as he seems by his paralleling it with the Engagement of bretheren of the same family, indeed it cometh not up to the question in hand, but if he meaneth an Engagement not only founded upon similarity of nature and unity of Spirit and affection, but upon an expresse command of Christ to his subjects in their places and Offices, to uphold his honour, and purity of his Ordinances, and watch over their fellow-subjects to keep them from prophaneesse and error, or cure them if they be fallen thereinto, and this not by advice and persuasion, but by Ecclesiastical censures, if they be stubborn and obstinate, then it comes up to the question in hand. And surely the cure may be so, that the key of doct. in will not serve, but the key of discipline (which our bretheren acknowledge to be commendable with it) must be exerted also. Smoakings and lenitives will not cure all maladies in the natural body, nor good counsel all the distempers in the Common wealth, nor yet in the Church, there must sometimes be corrosives or censures applied.

“Nor 3. is it doubtful (saith he) whether such Churches may voluntarily, as occasion shall require, associate together for mutual assistance, and act (in many things) by common and joint consent, &c. This the Scripture and light of nature dictates.

If by voluntary he doth not mean *arbitrary*, but such a voluntary and yet necessary obedience to the dictates of Scripture and

and the light of nature as is in the observation of Gods commands, and as the voluntary joyning of members to a particular Congregation, then it is the very ground of Synodical Assemblies. And though it be but occasional, yet these occasions falling out frequently and constantly, so ought those meetings to be as frequent and constant, which is all the Presbyterians contend for. And the same Scripture and light of nature that dictates this voluntary, occasional meeting, dictates also that they should have power to act together when they are met, else to what purpose should they meet? no occasion can warrant them to do that which God hath not given them power to do. And whereas he saith the testimonies alledged by *Grahensborp.* in *Def. Eccl. Ang. Cap. 28.* are meant of an obligation of charity and not of office, it is utterly mistaken; for they speak of their power as Bishops, *Cura omnium omnium, quæ Episcopi sunt, ad omnes spectat.* And *Episcopi omnes; quæ Episcopi, universis Ecclesie pastores sunt, & jure Divino sic pastores sunt.*

Nor 4. (saith he) is it the scruple, Whether all or most of the Churches in the world may not possibly become occasionally one by their messengers in a general Council. But as I conceive this is the highest thing that the Presbyterians aim at in such a Council, and is the thing which himself makes question of, *vind. pag. 8* lin 1. and yet four lines further seems to yield it again.

Then *M. Ellis vind. pag. 8.* comes to state the power of associated Churches, whether lesse or more; and especially a general Council. And there he grants an authoritative power (at least virtual) from Christ to act, and give not onely advice, but directions and rules, to which the conscience is bound to submit, unless special cause dissuade us. And this authority is more august and solemn (though not greater) the greater the number is, and the more publike the manner of giving forth the precepts shall be. And (a little further he saith) in doubtful cases, or upon occasion of grosser errors and scandals, God hath by Ordinance (virtual) appointed recourse to others, especially Churches, whose prescriptions, not disagreeing from the Word, are to be obeyed, not onely because they are material-ly good, but formally th. in.

Sect. 2.

Sect. 2.

Chap. 8.

Here he granteth almost as much as the Presbyterians desire, yet pluckes it away again in the very next words in saying, That their acting in giving such directions and rules is the acting of Officers, but not as Officers, for such they are only in their severall Churches, but yet by reason of that relation they are the more fit for that work &c. But hereby he overthroweth the analogy of their acting with the acting of an assembly of Lawyers or Judges, or a College of Physicians convened by publike consent, which he there makes the parallel of this Ecclesiastical acting, for their acting *conjunctim* is by vertue of their office and professions respectively, as much as *divisim*, and not meerly as friends or men skilled in those subjects and sciences; for it (by their office and profession) becometh (as he confesseth) authoritative, and to be submitted unto, not onely because material good but formerly theirs, who by Office and profession have power and authority to give it. If he would have made his parallel to run to his mind, he should have resembled the actings in Councils to the advice of understanding friends and neighbours in matters of Law and Physick, who have no office therein, or profession thereof, but have some knowledg. and experience therein, and thereby are fit to give friendly and neighbourly, charitative advice and directions. How men can have authority to make rules which are to be obeyed because they are formally their rules, and yet do this as men without office, I understand not. The Synod A.D. 15. did make decrees and give commands, he confesseth, but did not impose any penalty: but surely the making decrees and commands implied an authority, and that *conjunctim* to do, and the imposing of them implied a power of office, and that a coercive also, else decrees and commands are to little purpose.

And to passe by his second grant, what power the Church-Catholike may possibly have in unusual and extraordinary cases or accidents, I come to his third grant, viz. "what power the universal visible Church might have (if possibly convenient) together, as it was at Jerusalem (in which case (saith he) we grant what is contended for) but the Query is. What power the parts have asunder, and without endeavoring the  
"joyning



joyning with the other : For even in a Kingdome, though  
 all the Corporations gathered in one, have power over all  
 particulars : yet not some of these, much lesse a few of them  
 confunder, which is the way our brethren now practise. *vind.*  
 pag. 2.

Here he granteth what is contended for, if the whole were  
 convenable, i. e. (as I conceive) all the Officers of the whole  
 Church. But if that could be, I doubt he holds they must either  
 act as men out of office, or as particular Officers, every one in  
 reference to his particular Congregation : or can their conven-  
 tion together put a generall office upon them which they had  
 not before? or draw forth generall actions that concern the  
 whole, from them that had no habituall power reaching the  
 whole? but if all the officers met together can rule the whole,  
 because every particular Congregation hath its Officers there,  
 why hath not a part thereof convened, power to rule that  
 part also? seeing the right and reason is the same, seeing the  
 Church is a similar body in regard of the integrals, and the  
 parts are similar parts. And if so, here will be an unavoidable  
 ground for classickall associations, where all the Officers may  
 meet. "And himself freely acknowledgeth the conveniency and  
 "necessity of Classes, yea, and Synods also, for direction and  
 "determination, and that by divine right, though not with  
 "power properly juridicall. *vind.* pag. 3. But then their directi-  
 "ons and determinations must be by his opinion, but consi-  
 "cative, and by their skill onely, and not by vertue of their  
 "office.

But the reason why his parallel of a Kingdome, where a  
 part cannot make laws for that part, holdeth not, is because  
 the whole Kingdome is under one legislative power, and com-  
 bined together in a body representative under one head, who  
 have power to make uniform laws for the whole, but neither the  
 Church-Catholick nor any particular Church can make any new  
 divine laws, or abrogate any of them which Christ hath set down,  
 but explain them, and make particular rules according to the ge-  
 nerall, and not otherwise : and put Christs laws in execution :  
 and this a particular combination may do in their sphear, for  
 their limits. And so as far as their Commissions reach, the Of-

chap. 8.

ficers in a Corporation may make constitutions for the Corporation, so they be not contrary to their charter; and the Justices or Committees for a County may make Orders for the County, so they be agreeable to the Laws of the Land, whereof the County is a part: and have habitually power to execute justice in any part of the County, as occasion serveth, though they, for conveniency sake, do usually act in their several divisions.

A Justice or Mayor or Constable cannot act beyond their County, Corporation, or Town, though they be desired and called, without a new Commission, but a Minister may preach and administer Sacraments in any part of the Church-Catholike upon a call, and why not also act judiciously and juridically any where (according to the foresaid limitation) if he hath a call to bring his habitual power into act, seeing the keys are commensurable?

sect. 3.

But then he comes to state the question positively what it is. And he sets it down thus, viz. "Whether the whole company of Christians on earth are in their ordinary and settled Church-constitution, so one intire single Common-wealth, Corporation and Congregation, as that of right, and by the will and appointment of Jesus Christ it is the first subject of all Church-power: By authority whereof, and commission from which, all particular Churches act, and to the determinations of the major part whereof they are to yield obedience (if not apparently contrary to the word of God) and the Catholick governing power whereof, resides immediately as in its proper subjects under Christ, onely in the Ministers and Elders; and they not taken severally, but jointly as one entire College or Presbytery: to whose charge severally and jointly the whole and every particular Church is committed, &c.

And this assertion M. Ellis sets down with (") in the margin, and cites *Apollonius* and the *London-Ministers* as the Authors of it, as if they were their very words: but they are neither their words nor sense. I wonder, Sir, who ever dreamed of such an assertion, but your self. It is not honest dealing to lay the births of your own brains at other mens doors, to make them father them.

The like stating of it is again, *wind. pag. 40.* where the same Authours are cited, *viz. Apollon. cap. 3. Sect. 4.* And *Jus Divinum, pag. 43. and pag. 163.* And again, *wind. 27.* and there are cited for it, *Apollon. cap. 3. pag. 41.* And *Hudson pag. 25.* as assertors of this opinion *expressly.* But I am sure there is no such thing asserted by these Authours in any of those places. And if he saith it is drawn by consequence from their tenets, I answer, it is not accounted fair dealing to affirm those consequences, that may be drawn from any mans opinion, to be his opinion, when (haply) he was never aware of any such consequences, or doth deny the consequence of them from his opinion. Much lesse is it fair to set them down in capitall letters, and with marks in the margin, which usually importeth them to be their very words? or to make that the main controversie which is not owned by the opposite party, but (haply) may be drawn by consequence.

The scope of *Apollonius* and the *London Ministers* is to set down the proper subject and receptacle of the keys, first, negatively, not the people or *casus fidelium*, nor the civil Magistrate (though they grant him a defensive, diatactick, compulsive, cumulative power, a power *circa sacra, non in sacris*) nor Papal Officers, as Cardinals &c. nor Prelatical, as Deans, Archdeacons, &c. nor political Officers, as Committees, Commissioners, nor Deacons. But positively all those Church-guides, extraordinary and ordinary, which Christ hath settled in his Church, vesting them with power and authority therein, *viz. Apostles, Prophets, Evangelists, Pastors, and Teachers, governments or ruling-Elders,* these Christ hath made the immediate receptacle, and first subject of the keys, or of Ecclesiastical power from himself. So say the *London-Ministers* expressly.

Now suppose they had undertaken to set down who were the proper subject of civil authority under the King: and should first negatively say, it is not the Physician, nor the Chirurgeon, nor the Mathematician, nor the Merchants, nor Mariners, nor Tradesmen, nor Husbandmen, and Farmers, but positively they are the Judges, Sheriffs, Justices, Majors, Bayliffs, and Constables: Would any one gather from hence that all these Officers, not taken se-

## Chap. 2.

verally but jointly, are one entire, actuall college of Officers, to whose charge severally and jointly the whole, and every part of the Kingdom is committed; by authority whereof, and dependance upon which common Officers, the Officers of every particular Town do act?

Besides, this stating of the question is not consistent with it self, for it makes the Church-Catholick the first subject of all Church-power, and then makes the Ministers and Elders the proper subject thereof: but the proper subject is the prime subject. Unless he means in a logicall sence, as sight is predicated of the whole man, and yet is seated properly in the eye: or reason is given to the whole man, and yet is seated in the understanding. Christ hath given all his Ordinances to his visible Church; for the publick dispensation of which he hath instituted Church-Officers, to whom he hath committed that power respectively: these Officers are distributed among, and settled in their severall Congregations, and there actually and constantly dispense these Ordinances to them, as by their office they are enabled, according to the Word; and yet because there are some things of common concernment with other Congregations, and of greater moment and difficulty then can be transacted by a few Elders in a particular Congregation, therefore upon such occasions they may act *conjunctim*, with the Elders of other Congregations, and may also dispense both word and seals occasionally to other Congregations, upon a call by opportunity, want, or desire of other Congregations.

Yet do not the Presbyterians hold, that the particular Churches or Officers act by authority of, and commission from the one intire, single Common-wealth, Corporation and Congregation of the whole company of Christians on earth, as M. Ellis is pleased to set it down, to render their tenets odious: but they hold that every Minister by virtue of his office hath an immediate, habituell power from Christ to dispense his Ordinances, but the constant exerting and exercise of this power is called forth into act by that parcell of the Church-Catholick, which hath given him a call to take the particular immediate inspection and care over them in the Lord, yet upon occasion for the honour of God, the vindicating of his truth, the suppressing

ling of more generall errors and scandals, the propagating of the Gospel, and the good of others as God gives opportunity, it may be exerted and exercised in other places, and to other persons, so confusion and disorder be avoided. Self. 3.

Neither do the Nationall Churches act by commission from the Catholick, nor the Provinciall from the Nationall, nor the Classis from the Provinciall, nor the Congregationall from the Classis; but every Minister acts by commission from Jesus Christ, by virtue of his Office. And the Congregationall Eldership is first in acting, though last in Christs intention, in instituting the office. Every drop of water is similar to the whole element, and is cold and moist, but receives not those qualities from the whole element, but hath them immediately in its self, and though it actually exerts them only where it is placed and applied, yet hath an habituall power to exert them any where else, if applied: So the Church-Officers have their power, neither from the Church-Catholick nor from their particular Congregation, but from their office, which they receive from Christ (though ministerially admitted thereto by the Presbytery) which power though ordinarily and constantly they exert in their own Congregation, yet can elsewhere upon a call.

Neither do the Presbyterians say, that the Church-Catholick or the whole company of Christians on earth, are in their ordinary and settled Church-constitution one incircumscribed, single Commonwealth, Corporation and Congregation actually, but one habituall Commonwealth and Corporation, made up by the aggregation of all the single, actual Congregations of Christians in the world (as an Empire of all the Provinces and Kingdoms under it) and that beside the particular, actual, constant affairs of the Congregations, which are properly to be managed by such as are the particular actual Officers thereof, there are some things that concern more then themselves, and those are to be transacted (as such occasions arise) by the Officers of so many Congregations as they concern, they belonging properly to the cognisance of Officers, as Officers: and if those matters be of more generall concernment, then that all the Officers concerned therein can meet, without confusion, to transact them, then they are to delegate some choice Officers from the

Chap. 8.

several vicinities to transact them, as hath been shewed before: and as the call of the Congregation draweth forth the power of the Officers to act among them constantly, so this delegation calls forth their power to act occasionally *pro tempore* in this greater meeting. The case was once that *Totum mundus ingenuis sub Ariasismo*: this concerned the whole, or the greater part, and could not be cured by particular Officers, as particular, in their severall Congregations *divisim*, and therefore required a more generall meeting of Officers (to whom by reason of their office it did appertain) to consider of it, and suppress it *conjunctim*, by consultations and censures: and these having done the work they were called forth unto, then are to return to their particular charges again: for this work is but occasional, and these occasions fall out very rarely. This makes not the whole Church-Catholick under one actual constant regiment.

Yet because in Churches that are near together in a vicinity, matters of common concernment, or that require the help of more Elders than one or two Congregations can afford, will frequently and constantly occur, and if there be not a set time and place appointed by consent for a certain number of Officers of that vicinity to meet, they will be drawn together with much difficulty, charge, labour, trouble, and confusion, and with lesse certainty, (as appears by the case of M. Ward in the *Nether lands*, who being unjustly cast out of his place, could not under two years get a meeting of neighbour-Elders to hear and right his cause, and when he had obtained a meeting, it was but of very few, *viz.* the Elders of *Arnheim*, as I have been informed) therefore it is conceived that there should be a certain time and place appointed for the Elders of such a vicinity, as are in combination for mutuall assistance, to meet in.

M. Ellis mistakes the state of the question, in saying the Ministers and Elders of the Catholick Church not taken severally but jointly, as one entire College or Presbytery, have the charge severally and jointly of the whole, and every particular Church committed to them, *vind. pag. 9*. For they are not actually Ministers and Elders of the Church-Catholick,

nor actually one entire College and Presbytery, nor have not actually the charge of the whole and every particular Church, but *Sect. 3.* habitually only, by reason of the indefiniteness of their office. They have power *in actu primo* by virtue of their office, but not *in actu secundo sive exercito*: they have *jus ad rem* every where, but not *in re* any where without a call. They are the Ministers of Jesus Christ, and thereby have right and power to perform the acts belonging to their office, but for the execution of it, either in a particular Church constantly, or *conjunctim* occasionally with others, there is required a call thereunto. And the not observing of this distinction is the cause of this difference in this question. The Levites were by their office consecrated *to do the service of the Tabernacle, and to stand before the Congregation to minister unto them, Numb. 16. 9.* And the Priests to offer sacrifice; and both Priests and Levites were to be Teachers and Judges in Israel; and they had forty eight Cities with their suburbs given unto them: but they might not at their pleasure exercise this power, and dwell where they listed, and minister in what they pleased, or offer sacrifice promiscuously when they listed, or be Teachers and Judges where and when they listed, but according to appointment and assignation, and according to their courses, and as they had a call to exert their power. So it is with the Ministers of the Gospel, They are vested with an office to dispense Gods Ordinances of worship and discipline, but they may not execute this office, but as they have an especial call thereunto, no more then require maintenance, which also belongs to their office, except from those that call them to exercise their office among them. There are houses and glebs and maintenance allotted by the law of the land for the Ministry, but every Minister may not crave for himself where and what he pleaseth. The particular exerting of the office and reception of maintenance in and from particular Congregations is not *quâ* Minister indefinitely and habitually, but *quâ Romanus, Alexandrinus, Londinensis, Gippovicensis.* The whole Church in reference to Christ the King thereof, is indeed an actual polity, but in reference to the ordinary Officers, whose office though habitually it be indefinite, yet is actually drawn forth into exercise by a particular or special call and evocation, it,

Chap. 8.  
Sect. 4.

may be stiled an habituall polity.

Now let us see how *M. Ellis's* Prejudices, Probabilities, and Demonstrations will lye against this habituall integrality of the Church Catholick visible, and against the habitual indefiniteness of the Ministers office.

First, he objecteth the novelty of this opinion. And indeed well he may, as he hath stated it, for he was the first that hatch'd it in his own brains. But that the Church is one habitually, and that the particular Churches bear the relation of members to the whole, and of fellow-members one to another, and that Ministers are Ministers beyond the limits of their particular Congregations, and can upon occasion administer the Ordinances of God to more persons then those of their own Congregation authoritatively (upon which hinge hangeth the whole question,) this is no novel opinion.

For the first execution of the Evangelical, Ministerial office, in teaching and baptizing by John Baptist, and by the Apostles before they had their generall commission, and the preaching of the seventy was without any respect to any particular Congregations, for there were none set up. And when they were set up, the Apostles send faithfull teachers to the severall Churches whom they commended also to them, exhorting them to receive, respect, and obey them; as *Timothy* and *Apollos*, 1 *Cor.* 16. 10, 11, 12. *Phil.* 2. 19. 23. And the many places whither *Timothy* and *Titus* travelled, and where they preached and exercised their office, is abundantly set down in the Scriptures, and gathered out by *Smellinnumus*, and *M. Prinno* in his unbishoping of *Timothy* and *Titus*.

The Apostle also sent *Tychicus* a faithfull Minister to the *Ephesians*, *Epist.* 6. 21. and under the same notion of a faithfull Minister he sends him also to the *Colossians*, *Colos.* 7. 8. as is further noted in the second question. And lest this should be said to be done as he was an Evangelist (though we finde him not expressly called an Evangelist) yet it is clear that there were many that preached the Gospel in the Apostles days in more places then one authoritatively. The brethren that *John* writes of in his third *Epist.* went forth and were helpers to the truth, taking nothing of the Gentiles, were Ministers which might have



have taken maintenance, but did not, that they might spread the Gospel. It appears also even by the false Teachers that crept in. *Sec. 4.* to Galatia and Corinth in Paul's absence: and those that went from Jerusalem to Antioch and bred the broil there, and those that preached the Gospel of envie and strife, *Phil. 1. 15.* who certainly were no Evangelists, neither do I allow of their false doctrine, yet it proveth that it was ordinary for Ministers to preach to more Congregations then one. And it is very probable that those dispersed which went up and down preaching, *Act. 8. 4.* were Officers, as one hath lately shewed: for what should the Apostles do at Jerusalem if there were no private Christians there? and it is likely that the heat of the persecution fell most upon the Officers, and therefore they were generally scattered abroad, except the Apostles.

And in the after ages of the Church there was nothing more frequent, then for Ministers to act out of their own Congregations. Wee finde indeed provision made by *Canons* for the ordering of Ministers in the exercise of their function in other places then their own, but no prohibition to exclude them from it. As first, that they must have leave to do what they did: which was a wise provision against such as creep into other Churches without a call. It was provided in *Can. Nic. Can. 17. Caranica*. That no Bishop should ordain any that belong to another Bishop, *Cum non habeat consensum Episcopi ipsius à quo necessitas clericus*. And *Conc. Constantin. Can. 2. secundum Zonaram*, αλλήτοις ὁ ἐπισκοπος οὐκ ἐπιτρέπεται μὴ ἐν βασιλείᾳ, &c. *Nem tenentur Episcopi ultra Diocesim se transire ad ordinationem vel aliquam aliam administrationem Ecclesiasticam*. There is not taken away from them power of exercising of any of these things in other Dioceses, when they were called by others to help therein. *Nullus Episcopus sacrosanctis provinciis alienis ad aliam transgredi, & ad promissionem ministerii aliquem in Ecclesia ordinare, nisi licentia rogatus interveniat*. *Conc. Antioch. Can. 14. Caranx*. Nisi forte cum consilio & voluntate regionis Episcopo. *Can. 22. Ysa*, the Council of *Sardae* provide; that if a Bishop in a Province where there have been more Bishops, did neglect to ordain more Bishops, then might the Bishops of the neighbouring Province (being desired by the people of that Province)

chap. 8.

vince) come *ex vicina provincia & ordinem Episcopum*, Conc. Sard. Can. 2. secund. Isidor. *sed* Can. 5. secund. Caranz.

Secondly, No Bishop ought to sollicite an Ecclesiasticall Officer of another Diocese into his own, and ordain him there, Conc. Sardic. Can. 18. Caranz.

Thirdly, when Presbyters travelled abroad they could not be admitted to officiate *ἀπὸ πρεσβυτέρων γραμμάτων τῷ ἰδίῳ ἐνορίῳ μὴδὲ ἄλλῳ μὴδ' αὖτε λήγουσιν*, Absque literis commendatitiis proprij Episcopi nusquam ullo modo ministrare.. Conc. Chalced. Can. 13. secundum Zonarium. 12. sec. Geranc. Then if they came commended by their Bishop they might perform any Ecclesiasticall duty. *Fide Concilij septimi canon, 10. apud Zonarium.*

Fourthly, they were not permitted to stay too long abroad. *Non multo tempore in aliena civitate residere. Desinere ergo tempus, quia & non recipi Episcopum inhumanum est, & si diutius resideat perniciosum est.* Conc. Sard. Can. 14. Car. *Per multa tempora mittitur immorari*, Con. Antioch. Can. 3.

Fifthly, when they were abroad if they were recalled they were to return to their own charge, Conc. Antioch. Can. 3. Many other provisions were made, directing how Ministers were to carry themselves when they were abroad, but none of those provisions cut them off from officiating abroad, only they regulate them in their carriage to prevent disorders.

Many examples antiquity affords us of the dispensing of Ordinances of worship, ordination and discipline, beyond the limits of the Ministers own particular charge.

Pantenus of Alexandria was famous this way, *Tantum studij in Scriptura propaganda posuisse ferunt, ut præconem Evangelij Gentibus Orientalibus, & Indis sese conferreret*, *ἐκτενέως τῷ ἐπαρχίῳ τοῖς ἐκ ἀποστόλων ἀδελφοῖς ἀναδεδωκέναι μαχίαι καὶ τῷ ἐκείνῳ ἐπαρχίῳ γὰρ.* It is said also, that there were many Evangelists, and faithfull messengers prepared to promote and plant the heavenly Word after the guise of the Apostles, *ἀποστόλων μαχίματα*. Euseb. lib. 5. cap. 9. 10.

Antiochus Bishop of Rome granted leave to Polycarpus Bishop of Smyrna for the reverence that hee owed him, to administer the Lords Supper in his Church, *τῷ ἐπαρχίῳ παραχρῆματι ἡ Ἀντιόχεια τῷ ἐν χειρὶ τῷ Παννυχταίῳ καὶ ὡς ἐπὶ τὸν ἀποστόλου.* Euseb. lib. 5. cap. 24.

cap. 24. So Nicephorus relates, l. 4. cap. 39. And the Centurists Sect. 4. Century 2. cap. 10.

Anicetus, Pius, Hyginus, Telephorus, and Xystus Bishops of Rome, gave the Eucharist to the Bishops of other Churches that resorted to them, though differing from them about Easter. Euseb. *ibid.*

Ashanasius consecrated Frumentius Bishop at Alexandria, and sent him into India, and there he converted many to the faith, and builded many Churches. Socrates lib. 1. cap. 15.

Ashanasius travelling from Jerusalem by Pelusim the ready way to Alexandria, preached in every city where he came, and exhorted them to eschew the Arians: and in divers of the Churches he ordained Ministers, though it were in other Bishops Provinces, ἡ τοὶ τοῦ ἐκκλησιαστικῆς καὶ ἐκκλησιαστικῆς ἐκκλησίας. Socrat. lib. 2. cap. 19. 24.

Basil Bishop of Caesarea in Cappadocia fearing that the Doctrine of Arius would creep into the Provinces of Pontus, went into those parts and instructed men in his doctrine, ἀποστολὴν τοῦ ἀντιπάλου τοῦ ἀντιπάλου, τοῦ ἐκκλησιαστικῆς ἐκκλησίας, and confirmed the wavering. Socrat. l. 4. c. 21, 25.

Gregory Bishop of Nazianzum did the like in many cities, and often went to Constantinople for that end, *Ibid.*

Paulus Bishop of Emisa came to Alexandria in the daies of Cyril Bishop there, and there he preached a famous Sermon. And Cyril writes of him in an Epistle to John Bishop of Antioch, that he laboured there in preaching beyond his strength, that he might overcome the envy of the devil, and joyn together in love the scattered members, καὶ τὸ μετὰ τὸν ἐκκλησιαστικῆς ἐκκλησίας, καὶ τὸ μετὰ τὸν ἐκκλησιαστικῆς ἐκκλησίας, καὶ τὸ μετὰ τὸν ἐκκλησιαστικῆς ἐκκλησίας, Euseb. lib. 1. cap. 6.

Epiphanius Bishop of Cyprus came to Constantinople where John Chrysostom. was Bishop, and in a Church not far from the walls of the City, he celebrated the Communion, and made a Deacon without the leave of Chrysostome. And though Chrysostome reproves him for it, yet onely for the breach of an Ecclesiastical canon. Multa contra canones agit Epiphanius, primum, quod ministros Ecclesie ordinavit in Ecclesia quae fuit in mea Dicecesi. Soc. l. 1. c. 13.

## Chap. 8.

*Moses* a *Saracen* by birth, an eminent man, beeing much desired by *Meavia* the Queen of the *Saracens* to bee their Bishop, was sent to *Alexandria* to bee ordained; and though hee refused to bee ordained by *Lucius* the Arian Bishop, yet certain exiled Bishops ordained him in a mountain. *Socrat.* l. 4. c. 29. *Theodorit.* l. 4. c. 21.

*Origen* beeing sent for by the Churches of *Achata*, as hee was upon his journey to *Athens*, hee went through *Palestina*, and was ordained to bee a Presbyter by *Alexander* Bishop of *Jerusalem*, and *Theodotus* Bishop of *Casarea*, though hee was a man of *Alexandria*, and went to officiate in *Achata*, *Histor. Magd.* Cen. 3. c. 20. cited also by *M. Pat. Symon* History of the Church. pag. 268.

Yea, the dividing of Dioceses (and the same wee may say of Parishes which are the bounds of particular Congregations) was but an humane prudential act. And therefore in the Council of *Nice*, they pleaded no higher ground for it but *Adus antiquus obtinuit*, &c. And in the Council of *Constantinople* consisting of 150. Bishops it was forbidden by canon that Bishops should leave their own Diocese, and intermeddle with forreign Churches, for until that time by reason of the great heat and storm of persecution it was *ad usum* indifferently used. *Socrat.* lib. 5. cap. 8.

And what frequent use the Church anciently made of Synods and Councils, and how authoritatively they acted, *M. Ellis* cannot bee ignorant: whole Volumes might bee written of this subject. And therefore Reverend *M. Cotton* in *Keys*, cap. 6. handling the question, Whether a Synod hath power of Ordination and excommunication, though his judgment seemeth to incline to the negative, yet saith, we will not take upon us hastily, to censure the many notable precedents of ancient and later Synods, who have put forth acts of power in both these kinds. Therefore of all arguments this of novelty might well have been spared, and may most justly bee retorted upon the contrary opinion.

Five inconsistent frivolous answers *M. Ellis* giveth against the antiquity of Synods.

1. That this joint handling of things of common concern-

ment doth not conclude them one Corporation, no more then the common Treaties of Nations in things of joint concernment. *vind.* p. 10. But this common concernment arose from the unity of the head, body, charter and Laws, and the mutuall relation of members, and therefore that parallel holdeth not. Sect. 5.

2. Saith he, this (it is certain) was at some distance of time, after the discipline of the Churches were corrupt and declined to worldly policy. *vind.* p. 11.

*Ans.* Surely this is not so of all. For the first convention, A.D. 1. about the installing of a new Apostle, and that before the Church was divided into particular Churches, and for a thing that concerned the whole Church, a meeting which our Divines usually account a Synod, yea, a generall Council, though not in all formalities, where there was a joint exercise of the key of order: this I lay was before the corruption of discipline; or declining to worldly policy. And that Synod A.D. 15. where decrees were made and imposed on the Churches, and that by Elders of divers Churches as well as Apostles, and concerning things indifferent in their own nature (some of them) though necessary in regard of that present time: that Synod was not lyable to this acception. Nor thole two Synods in Asia where John the Apostle sate President, mentioned by M. Patrick Symson in his first Century of Councels, pag. 482. out of Euseb. lib. 3. cap. 20. mentioned also by the Magdeburg. Centurists.

3. It might be (saith he) by decree and judgment onely, not by actual execution. Or

4. Each Church might act its own power, though in union with others, as so many severall and distinct Churches united, and Elders congregated, and so they might excommunicate from their own heap or congregation only

*Ans.* The history of the Councils doth abundantly confute this, for they acted as one body jointly for all the Churches they met for, and not severally, and did both ordain Bishops, and also actually excommunicate many hereticks. For what severall distinct Churches did the convention A.D. 1. act, seeing there were none then in being?

## Chap. 8.

5. It was (saith he) a voluntary association, by right of fraternity, and not oneness of corporation: which appears by a stringing and confining in after times the power of Bishops and Ministers to, and within Dioceses and Churches.

*Ans.* Though it were voluntary, yet might it be necessary and not arbitrary, as was shewed before. The oneness of Corporation was not actually, but habitual. The stringing of them by canon to avoid confusion, took not away their habitually power, for by leave they might act any where, as hath been shewed before. But if they had not been endued with habitual power by office, their voluntary association could not have enabled them to exert their power jointly, when they were met.

## Sect. 5.

Let us now hear what witnesses he produceth against the unity and integrality of the Church, and the habitual power of the Ministers beyond the limits of their Congregations, or their joint acting together as Ministers upon a call.

*First, Chrysostome in Serm. 1. de Pasch.* saith; The Sacrifice or Passover was to be eaten in one house, and not to be conveyed out, i. e. the house is one that hath Christ; and the many houses of the Hebrews have but onely one power, nature and condition, as the Churches throughout the whole world, and in severall Provinces, being many in number, are but one Church:

But wherein doth he differ from the Presbyterians herein? They grant the Churches are many in number *divisim*, and yet make but one *conjunctim* habitually. But he is expressly against *M. Ellis*, for he grants Provinciall Churches; and that all the Churches throughout the whole world are one, and this must be one integrall, for a *Genus* is not made by aggregation of Provinces. And all these though organized are similar parts of the whole, having but one onely power, nature and condition.

2. *Clement Alexandr. lib. 7. Strom.* There is absolutely but one ancient and Catholick Church in the unity of one faith. And say not the Presbyterians the same also? and it appears he held the Catholick Church to be an Integrall, because he saith it is ancient, but a *Genus* never groweth ancient.

He might have gone higher, for another *Clement* in his constitutions,

tution, who (if he be of any credit) speaks more home. *Nos Apostoli scripsimus vobis Catholicam hanc doctrinam ad fulciendum & confirmandum vos, quibus universalis Episcopatus creditur est, his rationibus evincitur veritatem.* *Constit. 6. c. 14.* Sect. 5.

But Basill in *Ep. ad Neo-Cæsarienses* will be of more credit, *Interrogare patres vestros & annuntiabunt vobis, etiamsi loci sunt divisi sunt paræcie, tamen veluti coronamento quodam unita, undique sententiâ gubernata fuerint. Assidua quidem copuli sunt inter se commixtio: ipsi pastores verò tantâ præditi fuerunt mutua charitate, ut alius alio præceptore ac duce usi sunt.*

And Cyprian's testimony de unitate Ecclesie is direct against him; for he directeth the unity of the Church by doctrine and discipline. As there is one God, one Christ, one Faith; so there is one Church, one discipline in it, one Bishoprick, &c. *Episcopatus unus est, cujus à singulis in solidum pars tenetur.* Now Bishoprick argueth the Church to be one politically (though but habitually) and as many that are bound in a bond *pro toto & in solido*, are every one liable to be arrested for the whole; so many that have a joint interest in a thing *in solidum*, have all a joint right to the whole. Upon which words of Cyprian M. Parker in *Polit. Eccles. lib. 3. pag. 122.* hath this inference. *Quid sit & unitas Ecclesie in uno Petro primitus designata, unitatem, id est æqualitatem authoritatis in singulis Ecclesiis quibusque denotet: sic ut Ecclesia una sit & Ecclesiastica potestas una, cujus ab Ecclesiis singulis pars in solidum tenetur.*

Cyprian is abundant in this point, *Episcopatus unus est Episcoporum multorum concordie numerositate diffusus.* *Cypr. Ep. 53. Epsi pastores multi sumus, unum tamen gregem pascimus, & oves universas &c. colligere & fovere debemus.* *Ep. 67. Cyprian gathered together an authoritative Synod. He stoutly opposed Steven Bishop of Rome for receiving some Bishops that were justly deposed, pro sua quam gerebat universalis Ecclesie curâ.* *Cyp. lib. 1. Ep. 4.*

*Ut unitatem Dominus manifestaret, unam Cathedram constituit, & unitatis ejusdem originem ab uno incipientem sua auctoritate disposuit.* *Cyp. de unitate.* Upon which words Salmasius hath this Comment, *Omnes Ecclesie una sunt, & unitatem* consti-

bap. 8.

"*conspirantes faciunt omnes Cathedra unam Cathedram. De Prim.*  
pag. 87.

*Ecclesia nomine, non tantum uno sed multorum nomine designatur.*  
Bernard in Cant. Sermon. 61.

*Augustine in Tract. in Job. 1. 14.* is more against him then for him. And whereas he saith, *universa Ecclesia ligat solvitque peccata.* He cannot mean thereby that the Church is enely one in nature and kind, but not in number, because he speaks of Priesthood, and what one Minister doth bind is bound to all, so that he violates (saith he) the rights of holy Priesthood that joins him to himself that is cast out by another. Neither doth *Encherius* (by his own relation, for I have not seen him) say any other thing then the Presbyterians; in that he saith the Church dispersed throughout the whole world consisteth in one and the same faith, and fellowship of Catholick truth

And whereas there is an innumerable multitude of the faithfull, yet they are rightly said to have one heart, and one soul in respect of their society, and in the common faith and love. For he grants in these words an universall visible Church, and that to be a society, now every society of men is one externall visible integrall. And *M. Ellis* granteth that there doth flow an externall communion from the internall, and that the mysticall union doth imply an union visible also. *and.*  
pag. 34.

His quotation out of the Council of *Trent* might well have been spared, for it crosseth himself most. Therein is confessed a generall Council, and that with authority, and the major part to bind the rest. Indeed they contend that a Council bindeth not the absent Churches which have no delegates there: and who saith the contrary? But as those Churches who had delegates there are concerned in their decrees (so they be agreeable to the word) and that formally, because they are their decrees: so should the Church-Catholick if the whole had delegates there. But this we gain by this quotation, that a generall Council is confessed by him to have doctrinall authority; and are not the keys equally extensible? Have they power to decide points of doctrine (as is there confessed by *M. Ellis*) and

not



not to exercise discipline? who cut one key shorter then the other? It is granted also here, that Councils have to do with matters of common right and joint concernment. And thereby the necessity of Synods and Councils will follow, seeing there are things of common right to many Churches, and may bee to all. And this will necessarily require that they should bee furnished with authority to transact those affaires of common concernment, and that is as much as the Presbyterians contend for in the behalf of Synods. "No State (saith hee) can take my wife from mee, or dispose of my children in marriage: this is of peculiar right: so in Churches. *Ans.* No more can the Elders of the particular Congregation, nor the civil Officers of the particular Town. But the civil Officers or State can dispose of mens children and goods (according to Law) for the good and defence of the whole, notwithstanding a man's peculiar right. So the peculiar rights of persons and Congregations must bee subservient and give way to the good of the whole, or the greater part. Sect. 5.

And though a master of a family ought not to yield up his family-government over wife, children and servants, to rule them in common with other Masters of families, as M. A. and M. S. note in their *Def.* p. 110, yet if he abuse his government over them, the wronged persons either wife, children or servants, may bee relieved by the Magistrate, who yet hath no constant actual hand in the family-government.

And whereas hee saith, all the Christians in England would be loth to stand bound to the determinations of 2. or 3. sent in their names to a general Council. I answer by retortion, so would a Congregation or our Nobility and Gentry bee loth to stand bound by the censures of two or three Elders in a particular Congregation without relief.

But it is pretended by M. Ellis to bee new also relatively in reference to the Protestant Divines. *Calvin* is brought in here, *vind.* p. 13. It is true *Calvin* saith, *Instit.* lib. 4. cap. 1. sect. 3. *Ad amplectendam Ecclesie unitatem nihil opus est Ecclesiam ipsam oculis cernere, vel manibus palpare, quin potius eo quod in fide sita est.* But his meaning is, wee cannot distinguish the elect from the reprobate by sense, referring it to what hee had spoken

Chap. 8.

ken in the former Section. *Sic Deo permittenda est cognitio sua Ecclesie.* Sect. 2. *Deus mirabiliter Ecclesiam suam quasi in basibus servat.*

But here M. Ellis cites a man for him who is directly against him. For Calvin makes the Ministry of man which God useth in governing the Church, to be the chief sinew whereby the faithful cohere together in one body, *Instit.* 4. c. 3. 12. where also he dilates upon *Eph.* 4. 4. &c. and saith, it is meant of the Church militant only. And in Sect. 7. he saith, though the Minister be tied to the particular Congregation, yet he may not onely help other Churches, but may be removed to other Churches, if the publike utility require it.

And for Councils he saith, *l. 4. c. 6. f. 1.* That he revered the ancient Councils, *ex animo*, and wisheth all other men did so. And saith the promise in *Mat.* 18. 20. where two or three are gathered together in my name, &c. as it reacheth to particular Assemblies, so also to a general Council, *Sect. 3.* And he giveth to Councils power *Dogmatical*, and saith there is no better remedy against errors, as I cited the words upon the like occasion before, *Nihilum est melius remedium*, &c. and also *Distastick* power, *c. 10. f. 27.* in making constitutions according to the general rules, *1 Cor.* 14. 40. and jurisdiction *c. 11.* not only doctrinal binding and loosing, but disciplinary by inflicting censures, *f. 2* and *c. 12. f. 22.* sheweth the ancient manner of yearly Synods, and of appeals if any were wronged by their Bishops, and not onely the relief of the wronged person, but the deposition of the Bishop, or suspension for a time from communion. And hee saith, that alwaies before the Synod ended, the time and place for another was set, and then complains that these things were now out of date.

So that Calvin was not against an habitual unity of the whole Church, nor against the exerting of the Ministerial power beyond the particular Congregation, or exerting it *conjunctim*, in Synods and Councils.

Chamier also hath been alledged for it before. And the difference is vast between the Church-Catholick visible, which our Divines deny, and this, as hath been shewed before, *Chap. 3. Sect. 4.*

M. Ellis's second just (or rather unjust) prejudice, is from the dangerous consequences of this opinion. But indeed they flow from his ill stating of the Question, and not from the Tenet it self. Sect. 6.

To the first, viz. A necessity of universal and generall Officers, and some one above the rest, to whom the particular Churches may have continuall recourse, hath been answered before, Chap. 7. Sect. 6.

To the second, viz. the necessity of a continual standing Court, hath been already answered, Chap. 7. Sect. 10. The suing of the Church too much to worldly policy, occasioneth this scruple. And yet we see that Parliaments, and Diets civil, are not standing continuall Courts, no more need Councils Ecclesiasticall be. And whereas he saith it were notably vain to imagine that Christ hath committed the government of his Church first, and chiefly to that body that should not meet six times in sixteen hundred years, nay never.

I answer, that I never affirmed a general Council to be the first subject of the keys, nor the London-Ministry, that I can find, nor Apollonius, that I remember. But the Church-Officers in generall, in opposition to the *curia fidelium*, or the civil Magistrate, &c. A generall Council is but occasionall, yet is it Reverend and August, and of more large extent, by reason of the generall delegation, then any other meeting; and is full of authority, for the exerting of all Ecclesiasticall power of the keys, as I conceive. The gift of the keys was primarily to the whole body of Officers, or Organs of the Church respectively, as their Offices were capable of them: and as they were given to the Apostles together, so they may be exercised together: And secondarily to the particular Ministers or Officers, as being a part of that body. And though the power habitually considered be indefinite, yet the constant, actual exercise thereof is in their particular Congregations or Classes.

The Ordinances of God, for the injoyment and use of them, were given to the whole visible Church for the conversion and edification of the Elect, and if they could meet together, as the Israelites did in the wilderness, and the Saints (for ought I know) shall in heaven, they might partake of them together,

## Chap. 8.

ther, as their rightfull portion, but because they cannot meet but in parcells, therefore they have right to enjoy them *divisim*, by virtue of this generall gift to the whole, which every Congregation or parcell appropriates to it self, as being a member of the whole: and yet it is not notably vain to say, the gift of them by God, and his intencion in giving them, was to the whole, though they never meet, nor can meet together in this world.

So is the case of the Ministers also, the Ministry is primarily given to the whole body of them, and if they could meet together they might exercise the keys together *conjunctim* (a representation, or an epitome whereof is in a generall Council) but because they cannot meet but in parcells where they are seated, and have a particular call to give especiall attendance, therefore they exercise them *divisim*; yet as parts of the whole body of Organs of the Church; and there they serve the whole Church, and their dispensations have influence into the whole.

The third danger, *viz.* the trouble and charge of appeals, and the tryall of causes by them that can have no personal knowledge of the cause, or persons to be tried; but by information, hath been answered before, *chap. 7 sect. 9.*

## Sect. 7.

His third prejudice is, that this opinion is *Papal* and *Antiprottestant*. And to prove this he bringeth in *Bellarmine's* description of the Church Catholick, *viz.* That it is one visible Church "or Congregation of men bound together by the profession of the same faith, and participation of the same Sacraments, under the government of lawfull Pastors, and especially of that only Vicar of Christ on earth, the *Pontiffe* or *Bishop* of *Rome*. This latter cause indeed is papal properly, and therefore justly rectified by the Protestants. But the former part if it be understood of one habituell body or Congregation, is not to be accounted Papall, because set down by a Papist; for then all the Articles of the Creed which they hold as well as we (though not on the same ground) should be accounted Papall also. Where they differ from the Scripture therein they err, and therein only we dissent from them.

Neither

Neither is it *Anti-protestant* (unless as he hath stated it) *Calvin's* judgment (whom he citeth here again) I have shewed before. And it is opposite to *M. Ellis* in point of the power of the ministerial office beyond one Congregation (which is the very hinge of the question) and in the power and use of Synods. *Chamier* indeed makes the Church to be one generall or universal: yet he makes it to be aggregated of many particular Churches, which strongly argues an integrality, for no *Genus* is made by aggregation, and he saith it is compounded of infinite particular Churches, but no *genus* is made by composition, *Omne aggregatum & compositum est integrale*. He makes it also to consist of many parts, yea, to have *partes extra partes*, which is the Logicians definition of an Integrall. But how all the Kingdoms in the world (as he saith, to make a parallel with the universall Church) may be called one Kingdom in the generall (except by logical abstraction) I understand not. Certainly it cannot be by aggregation and composition, and by opposition of them as parts of that generall Kingdom he speaks of, which yet he yieldeth in the Church Catholick. They have not all the same systeme of written Laws, authorized by the same authority, neither have they indefinite habitual Officers, as the Church hath.

And for Bishop *Jewell* in his answer to *Harding*, he disputes against the headship of the Pope, but denyeth not Christ to be head of the visible Church. And though indeed he rightly calls it a new fancy, to prove the Pope to be head of the Church from *ὁ κύριος ἐστίν*, as if there were therefore but one King to rule over the whole world, yet he denieth not that Christ rules over the whole Church, but calls the Church *One Kingdom, One body, One shepfold*. And he citeth for the unity of the Church many sentences out of *Cyprian*, viz. "*Una est Ecclesia a Christo per totum mundum in plura membra divisa. Item Episcopatus unus, Episcoporum concordia numerositate diffusus, Cyp. lib. 4. Ep. 2. Alia, Ecclesia una est, & cuncta, & coherens sibi invicem Sacerdotum glutine copulata, Ep. 9. Quando oramus, non pro una oramus, sed pro toto populo: quia unus, populus unus sumus, Cyp. in Orat. Dominic. Again, Hanc unitatem firmiter tenere, & vindicare debemus, maxime Episcopi, qui in Ecclesia*"

Chap. 2.

"*presidemus: ut Episcopatum quoque ipsum unum & indivisum probemus, Cyp. l. 3, Ep. 13. Esi pastores multi sumus, unus tamen gregem pascimus, &c. Copiosum est Corpus Sacerdotum, concordia mutua glutine atque unitate vinculo copulatum, ut si quis ex collegio nostro heresim facere, & gregem Christi lacerare, ac vastare tentaverit, subveniant ceteri, ibid.*

So that Jewel was far from restraining the Ministers office or power to one Congregation, or from denying the authority of Synods and Councils.

And for M. Rutherford in his *Due right of Presbytery*, I marvel M. Ellis should cite him, who is professedly point blank against him; and hath handled both parts of my question, and concludes them affirmatively, *Due right of Presbyteries*, pag. 55. &c. and 418. Now whose fault is it to cite authors for him, that are known to be against him?

Sect. 8.

I come now to view his *greater Artillery* (as he calls it), and his first argument is, because (saith he) the Scriptures, Christ, and his Apostles are silent, and speak nothing of one Catholick visible Church: yea, (I may add) and all men else, as he hath stated it. But for Scripture-proofs I referre the Reader to what I said formerly, and now have added, Chap. 2. But my proofs from Scripture he was pleased to runne over in *vind.* pag. 42. in seven lines without any answer to the particulars.

His second argument is from the institution of Christ; because (saith he) the keys of government were given first fully, intirely and immediately to the particular Congregation: and this he proves from the Church of the Jews, to which all Church-power was given first and fully: but this was (saith he) a particular Church, not the universall, unlesse by accident, because there was no other Church-state in the world at that time. And though he grants it to be a Type of the Church of the New Testament, yet not as Catholick, but as Congregational as it self was, or else as mysticall, *vind.* pag. 21.

*Answer.* It cannot be denied but there were some things peculiar to the Church of the Jews, as typicall Ordinances, and a typical high Priest, and that it was bounded within certain li-

mits, and they are bound to meet, in their males three times yearly; which pertain not to the Evangelicall Church. But in that one Church there were particular Assemblies for ordinary worship, and extraordinary also, and for acts of government, and they had particular Officers, and Ecclesiasticall rules over them: and there were appeals reserved to the great Council at *Jerusalem*, and so it could not be a type of a Congregationall Church, for there can be no appeals to that, it being the lowest Church that can be. The particular *Synagogues* were rather Types of the Congregationall Churches, for they are called by the same name, *Jam. 2. 2*. And the Ministers under the Gospel are called by the same names that the indefinite Officers of the Jewish Church were, *viz. Priests and Levites, Isa. 56. 2*: which place is spoken of the time under the Gospel. And if it be granted that the Ministers of the Gospel be given to the whole Church, as the Priests and Levites were indefinitely to the whole Church of the Jews, notwithstanding any particular relation to the particular *Synagogues* and places they resided in, and taught, or judged in, it is as much as I contend for. And if by mysticall be meant the elect only, or entirely only; it could not be a type of the Church Catholick so, for the Jewish Church was visible and organical.

His second proof is from *Mat. 18. Tell the Church*, which saith he, was a particular Congregation which was endued with entire power even to excommunication, *Whatsoever yee shall bind, &c.*

*Ans.* This was not the Institution, neither was there any donation of the keys, but a supposal of the keys in the particular Churches, which is a thing confessed by all (and this power was also in the Jewish *Synagogues*). But this is not spoken exclusively, that this power is no where else. If the rulers of the Synagogue had power to excommunicate (so which it is like Christ alluded in that speech) then much more the *Sanhedrim*, or highest Court: and so I conceive it is in the Church of the New Testament: If the least combination of Elders have this power given them for matters that concern the congregation only, then much more a greater part of the Church, for matters that concern the whole.

*Chap. 8.* under their combination, and for matters of greater moment then can be transacted by the smaller company. But the donation of the keys was to the Apostles together, and they were generall Officers, and stood in relation to no particular Church, and therefore the keys come to the particular Congregation or Ministry there, as to parts of the whole company of Organs, yet immediately, and not by commission from any Catholick Court.

His third proof is, because the first execution of the greatest act of intire power was exercised in a particular Church, without consulting with the universall Church (though the Apostles were then surviving) 1 Cor. 5.

*Ans.* For ought that I know the Church of *Corinth* was a Classcal Church, and not a meer Congregational one, for there were Churches in it, 1 Cor. 14. 34. Besides the probability that *Cenchrea* was a member thereof. But Sir, who requires the consulting with the Church-Catholick in admitting or ejecting members? Or did the particular Synagogues consult with the *Sanhedrim*, or the whole Church of the Jews when they excommunicated any man? Surely they had work enough to do then.

His fourth proof or argument is, because intire power was committed to particular men, *viz.* the Apostles severally, and to all jointly, and therefore not to one visible governing Church, *vind. p. 23.*

*Ans.* By this argument it appears, the power is given not to the Congregation, but to the Ministers, whose representatives the Apostles were in receiving the keys, severally and jointly, which is as much as the Presbyterians require, *viz.* that the Ministers have power to exercise their ordinary power jointly together upon a call, as well as severally in their particular Congregations, as the Apostles did their extraordinary. Their receiving the keys together signified their representation of the Ministers not multiplied onely (as Mr. Ellis would evade it) but conjoyned.

~~His next argument is from the reproofs given by Christ to the~~  
seven severall Churches. ~~and not to the combination of them, though near one another.~~ *Revelation,* and not to the combination of them, though near one another.



*Ans.* For ought appears they might be all Presbyteriall Churches, and not Congregationall onely. The Church of *Aphesus* was one, and that was of more Congregations then one, as hath been shewed before. But how doth this prove these Churches were not, or might not actually have been in combination, if civil authority would have permitted? Were not the Elders of the severall Churches worthy of blame for not doing their duty in their severall Churches? Or will combinations of Congregations now in Classes or Provinces, free their Ministers from blame, neglecting their duties in their particular Congregations? A Classis or Synod is not to be blamed for the faults in a particular Congregation, which ought to be censured in the particular, and not there, neither indeed can be, except they had been brought before them. The severall Churches there had their severall faults, and therefore though the Epistle is written to the seven, yet it was needfull the reproofs should be applied to them severally. And yet some think that the whole Epistle was written and sent to all the seven Churches, from *Rev. 1. 4, 11.*

*Self. 2.*

His second sort of Arguments are from the matter and members of the Church, and he makes it necessary that the whole Church should be gathered together into one place, as the Jewish Church was, and Corporations in their halls, and Kingdoms in their Parliaments: And this he saith I deny against all experience and reason, *und. p. 24.*

*Self. 3.*

*Ans.* This hath been answered before among the Objections. I add further that though usually it is so that there are some generall meetings in worldly politics, that are several actual governments, yet it is not always so, as hath been shewed, and where it is so it is a fruit and effect and token of liberty, but arising not merely from unity: because there have been policies that had them not: for this Kingdom was one a good while before there were any Parliaments, and after they were granted they were but occasional: and so there may be occasional meetings in generall Councils, only the vastness of the Church, and diversity of civil governments and governours render them very difficult in our days.

But he saith, that such an oneness as is in regard of kind and nature

Chap. 8. nature in all the Churches, and in relation to the same head, and in order to, and dependence upon one rule or Law, the Word of God, is no actual or real oneness, but in imagination and conceit.

Ans. It is not actual indeed but habitual, as hath been said many times over, yet it is real, as well as the four monarchies were real monarchies, and not in imagination only and conceit. He might as well make the head of the Church, and the Laws of the Church, and the Covenant of grace, and the seals of the Covenant to be but imaginary and in conceit, as the Church-Catholick, for they are the bonds of the unity, and real visible bonds make not an imaginary integral, but a real. And where (I pray) is this oneness denied by the brethren, as you alledge, *vind.* p. 24. The enlargement and confirmation of argument, *A non existentia & ab impossibilitate existendi*, have been answered before, *Chs. 7. Sect. 10.*

Sect. 10. A third sort of argument he takes from the form and nature of all bodies incorporate, which consist in order of superiour and inferiour, &c.

But Christs Kingdom is not to be regulated herein according to worldly polities (as himself also elsewhere in his *vind.* hath noted) so also Christ hath said of the Officers of his Kingdom, that *it shall not be so among you*, *Mat. 20. 26. i.e.* there shall be no superiority among you: and yet they were to be Officers of a body, a kingdom, an Ecclesiasticall polity. But this difficulty is easily salved, because though one particular Officer hath not power over another, yet the greater number in actual consociation, or combination, hath over the lesse: as it is in a Parliament, or any meeting of the like nature, where all the members are equall *divisim*, severally taken, yet the lesse number is ruled, yea, censurable by the greater, if there be cause.

Diverse inconveniences he raiseth from hence, As 1. *a necessary existence in one place, and why not at Rome?* 2. *Constant standing Officers.* To these have been answered before. 3. *A common form of saith, discipline, worship, and profession, agreed on and formally propounded and taken.* I answer, These are for the essentials one in the Church-Catholick, set down in the word, and so acknowledged

ledged often by himself, and they are submitted unto *divisim* Sect. 11.  
by the whole Church. 4. *That all must act by authority, and by*  
*virtue of commission from the Church-Catholick, and in the name of*  
*the Church-Catholick*: and this the Assertors of this opinion (saith  
he) say expressly. I answer, it is a meer figment of his own brain,  
and a great injury to those he fastens it upon.

And hence the fifth inconvenience (*viz.* That the Magi-  
strate cannot reform within his own dominions, before he hath  
authority derived from the Church-Catholick, either in a generall  
Council, or from their Committee) falls to the ground.  
For as the Ecclesiasticall Officers of particular Churches have  
power from Chr<sup>s</sup>t, and not from a generall Council, to reform  
their own Congregations, if they be able; so also the Magistrate  
within his dominions, is *Custos, utriusq; tabule*, and hath a power  
*sicra sacra*, though not *in sacris*: not intrinsically as a Church-  
Officer, yet extrinsically as a nursing father: and so the Kings  
of Judah had, without authority derived to them from the Sa-  
nachin.

But I should think that this Inconvenience lighteth unvoi-  
dably upon such as derive the power of the Minister from the  
people of a particular Congregation, and make them to act as  
their servants in their name, and according to their votes: for  
then if the Congregation grow corrupt, they may cast off their  
faithfull Elders, but their Elders cannot reform them, if they  
be unwilling; and in a corrupt or inticed condition, whe-  
ther by error or prophanenesse, they will not bee willing to re-  
form.

The sixth inconvenience of a solemn meeting for the election  
of such generall Officers, is answered already C. 7. §. 7.

The inconvenience of meeting in a generall Council by rea-  
son of multitude, is solved by delegates rightly chosen: And the  
difference of languages is solved by learning. That was no im-  
pediment in the Council of Nice, or any of the generall or large  
councils. Neither doth this hinder Princes (as himself con-  
fesseth) from one end of the world to another, to hold mutual  
correspondency.

His fourth sort of arguments (that so he might seem to  
give an argument from every cause) is from the end of the

## Chap. 8.

Authors of this opinion, *Vind.* pag. 29. Either it is (saith he) to found the right of Presbyterian Government as is now intended, and to deprive particular Churches of entire power in themselves, or at least of Independency in their government from other Churches: or else to lay a ground-work of a more effectual cure and remedy than hitherto, for all Disorders of particular Churches.

Ans. The Presbyterian Government is neither Congregational, nor of that despotic power which Christ hath given them; but helpeth and strengthens them in things of greater difficulty wherein they are too weak. & regulateth male-administrations in the particular Congregations, it serveth for the transacting of business of common concernment: it preserveth unity in the Church which is the body and family of Christ: it suppresseth errors and heresies that arise and spread to the infecting of more Congregations than one, or which particular Congregations cannot suppress.

And as for absolute independency, as it is disavowed by Mr. *Ellis*, and (as he saith) by the greatest patrons of that way in this Kingdom, and beyond the seas: so that way which is provided thereby for the curing of error and scandal, merely by advice and reason, which may or may not be followed as they see fit: it is not a sufficient remedy against obstinacy therein: and for the dis-comunion of Churches by severing Churches with one another, if said it will prove unworkable, and is a way, though not formal censuring of them, though their equals, and is a way not to cure Churches, but to cause rents in the Church of Christ, and confusion.

Neither can the associating of Churches together open a wide gap so readily, as Mr. *Ellis* affirms; any more than associating of families into Congregations, where the irregularities and miscarriages even in their particular houses are reproveable and censurable, is a spoiling of families of their liberties, and a tyrannizing over them. The actual union of a Congregation, and the constant near inspection of the Officers over the particular families, will more (in the eye of reason) in trench upon family liberties, and call them often to censure, than the dissolving of the whole body, or association of Churches, which

who can when they meet (which is but seldom) handle onely matters of joint concernment, and of presumed male administration brought to them by complaint, can infringe the liberties of those Congregations. And if the Church in general be a society to all its members, so which there belong certain common rights and priviledges, as spiritual food, the Word and Sacraments (as M, *Elis* confesseth) why not spiritual Physick also, which is as necessary?

*Obj.* The whole world is one humane society under God the Creator and governour thereof, *1 Chron, 29. 11. All that is in the heaven, and in the earth is thine: thine is the Kingdom, O Lord, and thou art exalted as head above all.* And yet this makes them not one Kingdom politically, no not habitually, but they are distinct Kingdoms, notwithstanding they have the same head, and the same Law of nature common to them all. And therefore the Identity of the head and Lawes of the Church-Catholick are not sufficient to make them one Ecclesiastical visible (though but) habitual Kingdom or body.

*Ans.* There is not *par ratio*. For first, the laws of nature are not one entire, explicite body of written Laws, as Christ's Laws for his visible Church are, but internal and invisible, written in the heart onely, and that but dimly, and not apprehended by all, in all the parts thereof alike, through ignorance, rudeness, barbarism, or evil customes.

Secondly, There are no Officers of the whole world, as it is a society, directed by the internal Law of nature: but so there are of the visible Church; and therefore the visible Church is more then a society, it is Christ's external, political Kingdom.

Thirdly, There are several chief governours over the several Kingdoms of the world, which are God's vicegerents, and God's appointed ones in their Kingdoms; and written municipal laws belonging to every Kingdom, distinct from other Kingdoms; and priviledges proper to the several Kingdoms, wherein the subjects of other Kingdoms partake not. But Christ hath set no such several, supreme, appointed ones over the several Churches, nor permitted the several Churches to make any different laws from his, nor from those laws which are common to the whole Church.

chap. 8.

And the priviledges of the Church are common to all the members of the severall Churches, and they have freedom to communicate together in the holy Ordinances, where-ever they dwell.

Fourthly, The Law of nature is given by God as an invisible Creatour, the Laws of the Church are given by Christ, a God-man, as a Mediator. As he is God hee hath an essentiall right to be governour of angells and men, and all other creatures, but as Mediator he hath a donative Kingdome of grace, and is a politieall head of an externall visible Kingdome, which is but one.

Fifthly, All mankind are not entred into one body by one externall instituted sign, badge, enrowlment, and initiall seal, nor are entred into one explicite, actuall Covenant, nor make an explicite, actuall profession of subjection to the same God, or to the same systeme of written Laws. And therefore that parallel which these two reverend Ministers M. Allen and M. Shephard (whom I love and reverence much in the Lord) endeavour to draw between mankind and the Oecumenicall Church in their *Defence unto the nine questions or positions*, p. 79. will not suite and agree in all things.

6. Yet as all men are one society, though they want Officers, as such, yet are they bound to combine, even from that internall union, to preserve themselves, and maintain the Law of nature. Suppose there were some *circumcelliones* or some conjurers that sought to destroy mankind in generall, not because they are of this or that Kingdome, upon some particular quarrell, but because they are men: or that endeavoured to poyson and infect the air, or let in the sea to drown the earth, or take away the light of the Sun (if such things were possible) or any kinde of wilde beast should multiply that would destroy all mankind; then all mankind setting aside their particular immunities, combinations, Laws, yea, and quarrells, ought and would unite themselves *à men* to preserve mankind, and oppose such common enemies of mankind. Foreign Nations will combine to vindicate *Jus Gentium* if it be violated. All Nations combine against *Pirates*, notwithstanding particular distinctions and oppositions, yea, so far as mens positive laws are generall, as

the civill Law reacheth far over many Kingdoms; if there be any *Sec. II.*  
oppositions or obstructions that hinder the exercise thereof, for  
common good; all that submit themselves thereunto would not-  
withstanding their particular distinctions joyn-together to remove  
the same.

Much more then ought there to an union and combination  
between the severall parts of the Church, which hath the same  
head and King over the whole, of our own nature, who hath  
given us one systeme of written laws, and but one charter for  
the whole, and made Officers for the good of the whole, en-  
dowing them with an habitual power of office to administer all his  
Ordinances in any part of the Church upon a call. And if they  
could meet together, they might actually teach and rule the  
whole Church, as one Congregation, as M. Ellis granteth: and  
because they cannot so meet, yet by the same reason if a great  
part of them meet together, the Elders set over them may teach  
and rule them joyntly together, as well as severally asunder. For  
the greater number of Churches being considered as combined  
and confociated parts of the whole, bear the same relation in a  
proportion to the lesse, that the greater number in the same Con-  
gregation do to the lesse: and therefore if the major part in the  
Congregational Eldership shall over-rule the lesse by their votes,  
so by proportion shall the greater number of any greater Pres-  
bytery whether *Classical, Provincial, or National, &c.* bring in  
actual confociation and combination, over-rule the lesse, if they  
dissent.

But because there are so many superstitions, errors and here-  
sies in the *Asian, African, European and American Churches*, as  
M. A. and M. S. in their *defense* p. 92. do take notice of, (which  
book I confesse it was mine unhappinesse not to hear of, untill  
this treatise of mine was transcribed for the presse, and who  
have dealt exceeding candidly upon this question, and seem to  
yield the fairest concessions toward the universality, unity, inte-  
grality, and priority of the whole Church in some respects of  
reason, *pag. 77.* though not so much as is on him self for) yet I  
say for these things sake, I should be very tender in defining  
(as the case now standeth) what Churches, or how farre the vi-  
sible Churches may with convenience or safety enter into acti-

*Quest 12.* Dual combination, but the truths of God, or the liberties of the more sound and pure Churches, should be prejudicial thereby to the union and combination of all the Churches into one universal Church, and so forth.

## The second Question.

I come now to handle the predicate of my Question, which I may well call a second Question, and that is, *Which of these two Churches is Prima or first, and which Secundaria or secondary?*

See 1.

**B**Efore I answer, I desire it may be remembered that the comparison is not between the invisible and the visible Church, but between the visible Catholick Church, and the particular visible Churches. And then I answer, I conceive the Church Catholick visible is *prima*, and the particular Churches are *secundarie*; and in this sense are, as being ministerially converted and admitted by it.

But for our better understanding of this priority, I shall first set down what kinde of priority this is, and what not. I do not mean a priority of time, as if the Church-Catholick should be *παλαιότερη*, *vetustius* & *antiquius* quid; and yet the Evangelical Church was first set up in time, before there were any divisions into particular Churches: but now it is divided, the members that are born in the several Congregations, enter into the generall and particular Churches, *secundum scripturam*, though not *rationem* & *veritatem*. As a freeman in London takes up his freedom of the City, and of such a hall, or company at once. But those that are born in it, and converted to it, find the Church-Catholick already continued before them even in time. Also, I do not mean in regard of continuation of the whole political Kingdom of Christ by aggregation and combination, as Mr. Hooker understands me; for the particular Congregations must exist before they can be combined and aggregated. Neither do I mean in regard of operation, for now the Church is continued.



constituted, and divided into particular combinations, the particular Churches exist in their ordinary operations. And yet the Evangelical Church did put forth operations as first, before any such divisions, and without any reference to them. Secs. X.

But positively I mean the Church-Catholic is before the particular.

1. *Universum dividit*, in God's intention as Nature intends first the whole man, and not any part of man, although the parts are in some sense before the whole in consideration, for the whole is made up of them.

2. *Institutione divina* in regard of God's institution. God did first institute the whole by one Charter, Covenant and system of Laws, and the particular Congregations secondarily, for convenient communication of persons, and transactions of business. *Go teach all Nations* was the first Commission after Christ's ascension.

3. *Donatione divina*, for the Ordinances and privileges of the Church were first given to the whole & secondarily to the particular Congregations: as the privileges of any Kingdom and Corporation are.

4. The Church-Catholic is *præ digna* or in dignity; a Kingdom of more dignity and honour than any particular town; and a City then any street or ward. The whole hath more dignity than any part. Yea, and may say also in authority, for the authority of the whole is greater in divers respects than of the parts.

5. *Perfectione*, for the perfection of the whole is made up of the perfection of the parts, a whole Kingdom of the parts of it, and any whole comprises the perfection of the parts of it; a particular street or ward is an imperfect, incomplete thing, and not consistent alone, but as a part in reference to the whole: and as a member in reference to the whole body. The particular may have the perfection of parts, and some be more perfect than others, but the whole is most perfect; and the perfections of the parts concur in the perfection of the whole.

6. *Entitate* or *constitutio*, the Church-Entire is before the Organical, for the Organical is made up of the members of the

Quest. 2.

the Church Entitive, and the Church-Entive affords materials to the Church-organical. And in this respect the particular Churches are properly *one*, arising out of the Entitive; and so also is the whole Church-organical, for it ariseth out of the combination of the particular Congregations, and both it and they consist onely of members of the Church Entitive. And herein I consent unto Mr. Parker in this sense; but not that the habitual power of Elders should arise from the particular Congregations to act in Synode, but onely in regard of their evocation and exciting of their power to act in reference to them *pro hoc & non.*

7. *Consuetudo efficiens Ministeria.* For the Church-Catholick already converted is a means of converting more unto them, as opportunity is afforded, and of admitting ministerially into the Church-Catholick both entitive first, and then organically, both private members and also Officers into their habitual office.

8. *Cognitione sine sensibilitate perfecta.* For though this or that Congregation be *proprie ad sensum*, and in *notitia respectu nostri*, which is *cognitione confusa*, yet the Church-Catholick is *proprie ad sensum* *cognitione simpliciter*. *Distincta enim cognitio sequitur ordinem nature, in se, & in mente hanc disposita.* As *universalia sunt notitia minus universaliter disposita infusa, individua.* The Kingdome of England is a Kingdom: is *proprie ad rationem*, and so *inseparabiliter distincta ratione*; but particular towns are *proprie ad sensum*. The notion of an English man comes first upon a subject of this Kingdome, before of a Suffolk man. A man may have knowledge of England as a Kingdom, and be well skilled in the polity, laws, and priviledges thereof, and yet by sense have but little or no knowledge of particular Towns: so a man may know much of the Church, as Christ's Kingdome, and be well skilled in the Laws, Ordinances, and priviledges thereof, and yet know but few particular Churches.

So that the priority of the Church-Catholick visible, in respect of the particulars, is the like priority of a Kingdom to the parts of it, or of a Corporation in respect of the parts of

of it; which is not meant in a mathematical or techroni-  
call consideration, for so the particular buildings are *prima*, Sect. 2.  
and the whole city *orta*; yet so M. Hooker understood mee in  
his acute arguing about *integrals*, *Serv. pag. 255*. But in re-  
gard of *intention*, *institution*, *donation of priviledges*, *dignity*,  
*perfection*, *essence*, *instrumentall efficiency*, and *perfect cognition*  
of it.

There is also a difference between *ortum* & *secundarium*, for  
every *ortum* is *secundarium*, but every *secundarium* is not *ortum*.  
But I principally meant *secundarium* or *secundari*: yet in regard  
the particular Churches arise and spring out of the Church-En-  
titive, and are converted and admitted ministerially by the  
Church-Catholick already in being, they may truly be said to  
be *orta*, and the Catholick *prima*.

First, all the names that are in the Scripture given unto the  
Church-visible, agree primarily to the Church-Catholick: and Sect. 2.  
secondarily to particular Congregations. As *exania*, *supra*:  
we are first considered, as called out from Idols, and devoted  
to be the Lords people, before we can be considered of this or  
that Congregation. We know they were given even to the Jews,  
before ever any Congregationall Evangelicall Churches had ex-  
istence, *Act. 7. 38. The Church in the wilderness*, And the Jews  
are frequently called *the Lords people*. So the Church is called  
*the house of the living God*, *1 Tim. 3. 15*. *And the ground and pil-  
lar of truth*, *Gods vineyard*, *Joh. 15. 1*. Wherein branches in Christ  
bearing no fruit are cut off, *Christ's sheepfold*, *Joh. 10. 16*. *Barn-  
floor*, *Mat. 3. 12*. *Drag-net*, *Wheat-field*, *Kingdom of heaven*, *Mat.  
13. 37, 38*. *A great house wherein are vessels even of dishonour*,  
*2 Tim. 2. 20*. These names cannot be limited or appropriated  
to any particular Congregation, but are first true of the whole  
Church, and of every particular Church as a part thereof. *Con-  
gregationes particulares sunt quasi partes similes Ecclesie Catho-  
lica, atque adeo & nomen & naturam ejus participant*. *Amel. med.  
lib. 1. chap. 32. f. 4*.

Secondly, that is the primary Church to which the Covenant,  
Promises, Laws and Priviledges of the Church do primarily be-  
long: but the Covenant, Promises, Laws and Priviledges do pri-  
marily belong to the Church-Catholick, Therefore, &c.

Quest. 2.

The minor I prove, because the Covenant of grace and salvation by Christ, and the first Evangelical promise that ever was made in the world, was to *Adam and Eve*, representing all mankind; and therefore consequently the whole Church of God. This was before there was any division or distinction made of Churches into Jew and Gentile, National or Congregational.

Again, the main commission for gathering the Evangelical Church was, *Go teach all Nations, and baptize them, in the name of the Father, Son, and holy Ghost, Mat. 28.* And this was before any divisions or subdivisions were appointed: and they were secondarily brought in, for order and convenience administration of Ordinances, and communication of members, and transaction of business: and they being similar parts of the whole, receive their particular distinctions from external, accidental, and adventitious particularities, as the place where they call, the particular Officers set over them; their purity or impurity, eminency or obscurity, multitude or paucity, zeal or remissness, antiquity or late constitution, &c. They all retain the generall essential form and difference from heathens, and among themselves, as parts of a similar body, are distinguished but by accidentall differences.

And that promise that *the gates of hell shall never prevail against the Church*, is primarily given to the Church Catholick, visible here on earth; For that in heaven is not assailed by the gates of hell, but only that on earth. And though it may seem to be applicable to the invisible only, yet to those as visible; for so they are assailed by persecutions and heresies.

Again, *He that believeth and is baptized, shall be saved, Mat. 16.* This doth primarily belong to the Church Catholick, and that a visible Church, because capable of Baptism, and though it be applicable to every member of any particular Congregation, yet not as being a member of that particular society or confederation, but as being in the generall Covenant, and so a member of the Church Catholick, to which that promise was made. Yea, look over all the promises in the New Testament, and you shall find them made in general, without the least respect or reference to the particular confederation or Congregation wherein the believers

ever lived. In any similar body, as water, the accidents do primarily pertain to this or that particular drop, and secondarily to the whole, but first to the whole, and secondarily to that drop. So the promises and privileges of the Church not primarily belong to this or that particular Church, and secondarily to the Catholick: but first to the Catholick, and secondarily to this or that particular Congregation or person, as being a member thereof.

The Laws also are given to the whole Church primarily, as the Laws of England are to the whole Kingdom primarily, and to the particular divisions secondarily, and all are bound to obedience not as Suffolk or Essex men, but as Subjects of a Kingdom. So the Laws of Christ binde every particular Church, but not because in such a particular Covenant consideration, but because Subjects of Christs visible Kingdom.

The like may be said of the privileges of the Church. Two in privileges of the Church are *federal holiness* of the children of visible believers, and *right to the Ordinances*, in *foro Ecclesie*. Now neither of both these betide any primarily as a member of a particular Congregation, but as a member of the Church-Catholick.

For *federal or covenant holiness*, whereby the children of visible believers are, *agide*, it betideth no mans children because the parents are of this or that, or any Congregation, but because of the Church-Catholick, yea, though but entire, if under the seal of Baptism.

This I prove thus. That which should have been, though the particular relation to a particular Congregation had never been, and which continueth when the particular relation ceaseth, that not a proper privileg of that relation, but such is federal holiness, in regard of relation to any particular Congregation, therefore, &c.

Suppose those baptized by *John Baptist* or by *Christs Disciples* before there were any particular distinctions, should have had any children; or the *Eunuch* (if he were an *Eunuch* by office only, and not in body) baptized by *Philip*, who went immediately home into his own country, or *Cornelius* and his

Quest. 2.

his friends baptized at *Peters* command, should not their children be *excommunicate*?

Suppose a Church dissolved by war, the Minister and people slain, or dying by some raging pestilence, and some women left with child, and haply they carried away captive, should not their children be *excommunicate*, because the particular relation is extinct? Do not those women remain members of the Church? But they cease to remain members of that particular Church or Integrall, for that is ceased. Therefore of the Church-Catholick or of none, Are they to be accounted without in the Apostles sense? Are visible believers not yet joined in Church-order or fellowship by a particular Covenant to be accounted without? Or is a Congregation deprived of Elders, by death, and in that interval destitute of Word, Sacraments, and discipline to be accounted without? Is it the particular joining of a company of private Christians together without Officers, before they be organized, that gives them their right primarily to the Ordinances? I fear too much is attributed to that particular conjunction and covenant, and too much weight laid upon it, which is a very accidental thing to our right to Ordinances, and enters not into it at all, but is mutable and extinguishable, without the least impeaching of the right to Ordinances.

If the reason whereupon the Apostle saith the Church of *Corinth* was not to judge them that were without, was because they were not within the Church of *Corinth*, and so not under their particular censure or judgment, this holdeth true of them that be of another society or Congregation, desiring to be admitted to the Sacrament, as well as of such as are not yet members, desiring to be received to the Lords Supper. And so all members which are of one society, are without unto another. See *M. Balthus*, pag. 47. But by fornicators of this world, whom the Apostle pointeth unto by the title of being *without*, *1 Cor. 10. 11.* he means such as had not received the Covenant of grace: such as were aliens from the Common-wealth of *Israel*, strangers from the covenant of promise, having no hope, and without God in the world, *Ibid.*

And for right to the Ordinances, it ariseth from the general Covenant, and so is a priviledge primarily belonging to visible.

visible believers, though in no particular consociation, the admission into the particular Congregation only affords an opportunity, because thereby a particular Minister hath taken the charge of him, and must administer the Ordinances to him, which any other Minister may do upon occasion. *Sect. 2.*

For Baptism, it cannot be a privilege of the particular Covenant, for if a Pagan be converted he must be baptized before he can be admitted a member of the particular Congregation, and this must be by some Minister: Therefore baptism is a privilege of the Church Entitive, and a Minister can, yea, and must sometimes exert his power of office, not only beyond his own Congregation, even into others, but beyond the Church organically into the Church Entitive, to see Christ's seal there. And for the children of visible believers, though born never so farre from the place where the particular Minister liveth, which hath the actual care of his parents, be it by sea or by land, any Minister may administer Baptism to them, because they are holy. *Infantes baptizandi sunt, non ut sancti fiant, sed quia sancto sunt.* Whitak.

The promise is to you, and to your children, and to all that are afar off, even as many as the Lord our God shall call, saith Peter, *Act. 2. 39.* This promise is that externall Covenant to which Baptism doth belong; for it is brought in as an argument to move them to repentance, and receiving of Baptism, and declareth their right, and their childrens right, which is nothing else but the call of God, and their answer thereunto.

The Sacraments are not seals of the particular Covenant, but the generall, and therefore all that are in the generall Covenant have right thereunto, as they are capable. The five Apologists acknowledge that some of them had children born after they were actually in this way of communion, which were baptized by some of our Ministers in our Parishionall Congregations. *Apol. Narr. p. 6.*

And some of our brethren (and none of the meanest) sailing hence to New-England, after their departure from their particular Congregations here, and before their particular combination there, had sea-born children, which were baptized on

Quest. 2.

Ship-board: and I my self was desired so baptize one of them, before the Ship could put forth out of the channel,

And for the Lords Supper, it is a priviledge not springing from the particular Covenant; but the generall: and as all that were circumcised were bound to keep the Passover, where ever they dwelt, so every baptized person being of age, and otherwise fit, is bound to receive the Lords Supper, and therefore hath a right thereto, though his condition of calling or other accidents hinder him from a fixed membership. And in Congregational Churches the brethren of one Congregation communicate at the Lords Table in other Congregations, as occasion is offered; but surely it cannot be by virtue of a particular Covenant, entered into with their own members; for that can give right no where else, but it is, by virtue of a Covenant that is common to all visible believers, which is the generall Covenant. Can we conceive that a visible believer having visible right to Christ, and living holily should want right to the seals? Can any man forbid water that these should not be baptized that have received the holy Ghost as well as we? saith Peter of Cornelius and his company. So, (may I say) can any man forbid the Lords Supper to be administered to such as have received Christ, and the Spirit, and are baptized as well as we? See more of this *Quest. 2. Sect. 4.*

*Mr. Norton in his answer to Apollanius, pag. 52. acknowledgeth the Sacraments are not signs or seals of the Ecclesiasticall Covenant (as he calls it) but signs and seals of the Covenant of grace, and yet the Sacraments are to be administered onely to such as are entered into the Ecclesiasticall Covenant, explicitly or implicitly: his reason is because the Sacraments are to be administered onely *federatim*, i. e. to such as are in Covenant, and its members first.*

If *Mr. Norton* meaneth by Covenant, the Covenant of grace, it is true, they must be in the Covenant of grace, externally at least, by professed yielding themselves to the Lord, or by federal holiness, before they be capable of Baptism, but then it is nothing to his purpose, but if he mean a particular, Ecclesiasticall Covenant, whereby he is made a member of a particular Congregation, then I conceive so is no way requisite unto bap-



Sett. 2.  
 tism. It is against the order of nature that the particular Covenant which is but humane, arbitrary, mutable, extinguishable, and accidentall, should precede the generall which is divine, necessary, immutable, perpetuall, and essentiall to a Christian: it is as if a man should first be made a free-man of *London*; and then a Denizon of *England*: Indeed he is not capable of the privileges that are peculiar to that Congregation, except he be a member of it, but Baptism is a generall privilege of every subject of Christs Kingdom. Neither have we any precept in the Scripture, for the precedency of the particular Covenant before the general: nor any example or intimation of any such practice in Scripture, but of the contrary. What particular Congregational Covenant did those that were baptized by *John Baptist*, or Christs Disciples enter into before baptism? or the *Emmich*, the Jailer and his household, or *Lydia*, or *Paul*, or *Corinthians*, or the three thousand converted by *Peter*, that were inhabitants of so many severall countries? True indeed some of them were members of the Jewish Church, and so in the general Covenant, but what is that to the making of them members of a particular, Evangelical Congregational Church? Infants are acknowledged to be members of the Church before baptism, p. 25. and *Bucer Loc. 47.* cited for it, yet they enter into no such Covenant before Baptism. *M. Norton* confesseth, p. 25. that the *Protopapstus* could not be a member of a Church, unless one man might be a Church, or a member be without an Integral. It is a marvel that seeing so much weight lyeth on this particular Church-Covenant, &c. The interest in the seals of the Covenant of grace, the Scripture should never give any intimation of it, or directions about it.

The like may be said of hearing the Word; any visible believer may hear it where-ever God giveth him opportunity, not as a heathen, or man without, but as his rightfull portion. And any Christian may join in prayer, and say, *Our Father, &c.* with any Christians in the furthest parts of the world, if hee should come into their company, in the performance of such duties.

The greatest Query is about the Ordinances of Discipline; because they cannot be dispensed by a single Elder, but in a  
 College

Quest. 2.

College or Presbytery of Elders in combination, and require a joyn't power to be exercised in the inflicting of censures, and this power is not so facill to be drawn into act as the power to administer Ordinances of worship, which may be by intreaty of any single Minister in any place. But first every one, even as a member of the Church-Catholick, yea, though but entitive, is bound to submit thereunto by his entring, by the generall Covenant, into the Kingdom of Christ, that being one of his Ordinances, and is needfull and beneficiall to all Christians.

And every Elder, as he is given to the Church Catholick, as every *Levite* was to all *Israel*, hath right *in actu primo* to dispense the Ordinances of Discipline every where, if he hath a sufficient call. And in consideration, this Ordinance is given in the same method that the others are, *viz.* first to the whole body and Kingdom of Christ, and secondarily to the particular parts, and yet as in other Ordinances the particular Churches which are last in intention, are first in execution and operation, so it is likewise in this; and so it is in administration of Justice in a Kingdom, the Laws are made for the whole Kingdom, and com secondarily to particular Counties and Corporations, are executed primarily and immediatly in those particular Counties and Corporations, and yet this hinders not the power of Parlements, or Officers called thereto, to dispense justice to divers Counties, yea, to the whole Kingdom, and to relieve such as are wronged in their particular associations.

Suppose an Apostl should have preach'd in a city, and converted but a few, haply most or all of them women, as it was *Paul's* lot to preach to a company of women, *Act. 16. 13.* so that they could not be brought into one Organical Congregation: could it be conceived that they, though baptized, were still *without*? And were not their children *apostate*? And if any of them should miscarry in their judgments or practices, had *Paul* nothing to do to censure them, because they were not congregated and combined by a particular Covenant in a Church-way (as some term it) but remain unfixed members of the Church-Catholick. If they be liable to censure, then doth discipline belong to the Church-Catholick primarily.

Nay

May, let that bee supposed for illustration take which *Paul* *Sect. 2.*  
*Gal. 1. 8.* supposeth of himself, that hee or any of the Apostles  
 should have apostatized, and either preached another Messias,  
 or lived scandalously, or proved a persecutor: had Christ  
 left the Church no key to binde him, because hee was a general  
 Officer and a fixed member of no particular Congregation?  
 might not the rest of the Apostles excommunicate him? then  
 that censure would bee Catholick, without respect to any parti-  
 cular Congregation.

*The Ordinances of Discipline were first given to the Church  
 Catholick, because the keys were first given to the Apostles,  
 who were general Pastours, and therefore the keys are Catho-  
 lick.*

Also the censures past in one Congregation reach the whole  
 Church-Catholick visible, and are binding to the whole, and  
 their absolution reacheth as farr, and let's the person into an  
 habitual right to communicate any where again, as hath been  
 shewed before.

That which belongeth to every part of a similar body,  
 that primarily belongs to the whole: but Discipline bee-  
 longeth to every part of the Church Catholick which is  
 a similar body: and therefore it primarily belongs to the  
 whole.

If the keyes be not Catholike then this inconvenience will fol-  
 low, that a visible beleever obtaining baptism before he be a fix-  
 ed member, may either through pretence of scrupulosity, or  
 pergrination, factorship, or frequent removing, or refusal to  
 joyn with any particular Congregation (though never so heret-  
 ical or scandalous) shall thereby escape all censures, because  
 the keys are onely particular, and no body can inflict any censure  
 upon him: and yet being a visible member, under the seal of  
 the covenant, shall converse with other Christians, and haply  
 upon this habitual right, hear the Word, or haply be admitted  
 to the Lords Table. Which is as if a subject of England, be-  
 cause he will be a fixed inhabitant in no Town, but wandering up  
 and down, drinking, thieving, and whoring, thereby should e-  
 scape all civil censures.

It is common to all polities that every County, Corporation,

Quest. 2.

or division that have power to administer justice, according to the laws or the polity, shall apprehend malefactors within their limits (wherever the malefactor hath his constant dwelling) and either punish them themselves, or turn them over to such as are called to administer justice to the whole; and otherwise outrages cannot be avoided or punished, which are committed by men in places remote from their dwellings.

The like power must be allowed in Christs Ecclesiastical polity, that the visible members of Christs Church may either be censured by the particular Church in whose limits they offend, or be sent to the Church to which they belong, which the offended Church hath no power by civil compulsion to do, or that Church is very farr off, haply in another Country: or haply they belong to none: or else there must be a combined Eldership that may censure such persons. Though civil limits be appointed for cohabitation of the members of particular Congregations, and for maintenance of their Ministers, and providing for the poor, and are not essential to the Church, but the members are to be accounted as members of that Congregation every where, and the Elders if in travel with any of their Congregation, ought to watch over them and admonish them as their Elders, and they to obey them where ever they become, which sheweth that external limits bound not the Ministerial power, as it doth the civil power of a Mayor or Constable: yet there must be some kinde of proportion holden with civil polities for the censuring of wandering Christians; else may heresicks and scandalous Christians come from forreign parts, and do much hurt, and yet avoid all censures.

Sect. 3.

Thirdly, *Christs Offices* are first intended for, and executed on the Church-Catholick here below. *Hee is a King, Priest, and Prophet* primarily in respect of the whole, and but secondarily in respect of a particular Congregation or member. Gods aim in redemption was to redeem the whole primarily, and secondarily the particulars. *God so loved the world that hee gave his only begotten Sonne, &c.* i. e. not the Jew onely, but the Gentile also: And so in the application of that redemption, as Christ is a Priest hee reconcileth and intercedeth for all the elect: as a Pro-  
phet

phet he teacheth all; as a King he ruleth all primarily, and particulars secondarily. So is it also in Christs external Kingdom, as well as his internal. As an earthly King is indeed King of *Thomas and John &c.* but not primarily, but secondarily as they are members of his Kingdome. And the naturall head is indeed head to the little finger and toe, but not primarily, but as they are parts of the wholebody, whereof it is head: so Christ is a mytticall head of the whole Church primarily, and secondarily of the particular parts contained in, and under the whole.

Secl. 3.

Fourthly, *The signs that difference the true Church from a false,* do not primarily belong to a particular Congregation, but to the Church-Catholick visible, *viz. Profession of the true faith, administration of Gods true Ordinances,* for therein the whole Church agree, and this thereby distinguished from those that are without, not from those that are within. There are no notes to know this or that particular Church by from another, for they are common to the universall Church, they distinguish them not among themselves, but from the generall common opposit, the heathen or the grosse heretick. A man being led into a vault, where were the skulls of many dead men, and understanding that *Alexanders* skull was there, desired his guide to shew him that, his guide told him it was that skull with the hollow eye-holes, and grisly nose, and sutures crossing the brain-pan, and when the man rep'ed that they had all so, yea, saith his guide, there is no difference between Kings, and other mens skulls; when they are dead. So if any man should ask which is the Church of *Ipswich, Dedham, &c.* it were a folly to say it is the Church where the word of God is preached, and Sacraments administered, and that professe Jesus to be crucified, dead and buried, risen again, and ascended into heaven, &c. for so do all the Church-Catholick, but we must give other notes to distinguish any of them, for these are not *distinctive* because *common*. That which is *primary* to anything is *distinctive* to that thing, but that which is *secondary* and common is not *distinctive* from other particulars of the like kind, or from other parts of a similar integral.

Fifthly, All the members of the particular Churches are mem-

Quest. 2.

members of the Church-Catholike, yea, that relation belongs first unto them.

If they be born within the pale of the Church, they have federal holinesse, and are *zivil*, not because members of this or that Congregation, but because born of parents within the general, external Covenant, and so within the Church-Catholike. If they be converted from heathens, they are not first converted into this or that particular Church, but converted first into the Church-Catholike, and then secondarily admitted members of this or that particular Congregation, after they be baptized. A man may dwell in one City, and hear the word of God by accident in another city, and thereby be converted, but he is not converted to be a member of the Church where he was converted, but into the Church-Catholike. So that particular Congregations are made up of members of the Catholike, and therefore most properly in that sense are said to be *Orta*. For such a convert may joyn himself after his conversion to what Congregation he pleaseth to inhabit among. If a man comes into a Parish that is an heathen, he is not a member of that particular Church (though he shall be a civil member of the Town) because he is not a member of the Church-Catholike, but if he be a Christian, then he is a member of that particular Church where he resideth, or sit so to be, and ought not to be debarred admittance or communion (if no just exception lieth against him) though he had never been a member of any other Congregation. The particular companies in London are made up only of free-men that are joyned together in some particular body or society, belonging to such or such a Hall; now the first notion that comes upon any such persons or companies, is, that they are Free-men of London, and secondarily that they are distinct from other free-men, by being of this or that particular company, belonging to such a Hall. So it is for all Churches; first of all the members are conceived to be free of the Church-Catholike, and secondarily, distinct by their societies in this or that particular Assembly.

And though haply this similitude holdeth not in every thing, as the not removing from one company to another, and being received in there, because he is a free-man. yet it is free for any

any Christian to change his particular relation from one Congregation to another, because he is a Christian, and takes not up his first freedom into a particular Congregation or company, but into the Catholicke. They are made members of the whole body and Kingdom of Christ, by conversion to the faith, and initiated by the Sacrament of Baptism, but are secondarily made members of the particular Congregation by cohabitation or consociation. He that is free of one Corporation may not thereupon remove to another, and set up his trade as a free-man there, because they are constituted by several charters: but the whole Church Catholike hath but one charter, and by that a Christian is free in any Ecclesiastical Corporation, where ever he please to inhabit, and may not by them be inhibited. As he that was free of Rome was free where ever he became in all the Romans Empire.

Sec. 3.

Suppose a man had abundance of sheep, as *Abraham*, *Isaac*, and *Jacob*, and *Job*, who had 14000. and these sheep had all one brand of the owners upon them, and these sheep were divided into several flocks, under several shepherds, in severall sheep-walks, of the same owners, according to his appointment: the primary consideration of any of these sheep or flocks, is not that they are under such a keeper, in such a sheep-walk, but the first consideration of them is, they are such a mans sheep, bearing his brand, and fed by his servants, on his ground, and then the more particular and secondary consideration and notion is, that they are under such a particular shepherd, in such a walk. And the like may be said in a civil respect: the first consideration of a man, is that he is an English man, and so a subject of this kingdom; and the secondary that he is a *Suffolk* man, or an *Islewich* man. So the first consideration in a spiritual respect of a man, or a Congregation, is, that they are the Lords people, that they belong to Christ, and are his subjects, born, or converted to him, fed, and nourished, and ruled by his Ordinances and Officers, and then the particular secondary notion is, that they are fed and ruled by such Elders, in such a place or society.

It is an usual similitude on all hands to compare the Church to the Sea or Ocean; which though it be one, yet as it waileth upon

Quest. 2.

upon this or that Countrey, receiveth the name and distinction of the *German, Spanish, Irish, or British Sea*. And so when it puts in at any creek, because it is continuous with the Sea, we call it the Sea. And we say the Sea comes up at *Harwich, Ipswich, Manisres, Colebester*: now it were absurd for any man to think that the particular Seas were the prime Seas, and the main is *Mare secundarium* or *ortum*, Or because the name *Sea* is indulged to this or that arm or Creek; that therefore that should monopolize the name *Sea* to itself, that there should be no Sea, but such Creeks, or that any such Creeks should arrogate the name and priviledges of the Sea, first, to themselves, and leave them but secondarily to the main. So it is for particular Congregations, which have the name and priviledges of the Church indulged to them at second or third hand (because they are members and similar parts of the whole) to usurp and challenge the name and priviledges given by God to the Church-Catholick, primarily to themselves, and leave them secondarily to the Church-Catholick.

Chap. 4.

Sixthly, *The Ministers are primarily Ministers of the Church-Catholick, secondarily of this or that particular flock or Congregation; and therefore the Catholick is the prime Church*. And this appears thus. *That Church to which the denotation of the Ministry was first made, is the first subject thereof: but that was the Church-Catholick. Therefore, &c.*

For proof hereof see *Mat. 28. 19.* and *1 Cor. 12. 28, 29.* God hath set some in the Church, first *Apostles*, secondarily *Prophets*, thirdly *Teachers*. Now this Church was the Church-Catholick, and not any particular Congregation, for it is the Church to which God gave Apostles. Note also from hence, that the same Church to which God gave Apostles and Prophets, to the same he gave Teachers also: though not with general, actual power, as to the extraordinary Officers, yet with habitual power of office. And although *Bishop, Pastor, Elder and Minister* do carry a reference to some particular place wherein by the polity of the Church such Officers are set; yet have they a more general relation extending to the whole Church-Catholick, as hath been shewed before.

*Paul* an Apostle calls himself a *Teacher and Preacher*, *2 Tim.*



11. Peter also and John the Apottles call themselves *Presby-* Sect. 4.  
*ters*, 1 Pet. 5. 1. 2 Ep. Joh. 1. and 3. Ep. John. 1. We finde also Mi-  
 nisters are in Scripture spoken of under a general notion. They  
 are called *Ministers of the word*, Luk. 1. 2. and *Ministers of God*,  
 1 Cor. 6. 4. and *Ministers of Christ*, 1 Cor. 4. 1. and *Ministers*  
*of the New Testament*, 2 Cor. 3. 6. and *Ministers of the Gospel*,  
 1 Thes. 3. 2. and *Ministers of the Lord*, Ephes. 6. 21. Where the  
 Ministerial Office is set down by the reference thereof to the  
*Author* that employeth them, and the *subject* about which they  
 are employed, and not the object persons, unto whom they mi-  
 nistred. They are not called *Ministers of the people*, as if they car-  
 ried their keys, and were their stewards, but their Teachers, Rulers,  
 Pastours, Overseers, Fathers or Ministers for them, Col. 1. 7. In-  
 deed the Apostle saith, they are your servants for Christs sake,  
 2 Cor. 4. 5. As the Gentlemen that serv a Noble man, serv the  
 meanest that are invited to his table, but therein they do service  
 to their Lord.

And the Angels themselves (by whose names Ministers are  
 called in 2. and 3. of *Revelation*) they are ministring spirits sent  
 out for the good of the Elect, but it is in subjection and obedi-  
 ence to God, and not to them.

And if a Minister of this or that Congregation bee not a Mi-  
 nister of the Church-Catholick visible, then hee is no Minister out  
 of his own Congregation, and therefore cannot preach or administer any  
*Sacrament as a Minister, out of his own Congregation*, yea, if any  
 members of another Congregation should come and hear a Mi-  
 nister preach in his own Congregation, hee could not preach to  
 them, nor they hear him as a Minister, but onely as a gifted bro-  
 ther. And though hee may pray and beseech his own flock as an  
 Ambassadour of Christ, to bee reconciled unto God, 2 Cor. 5. 20.  
 yet hee cannot say so to any other, except hee bee an Ambassa-  
 dour in office unto others also. And if hee bee a Minister to one  
 member besides his own Congregation, then is hee so indefinitely  
 to all, by the same reason.

But if hee deliver the word as a Minister to his own Congre-  
 gation only, then the same word which is delivered at the same  
 time by the same man, is delivered by vertue of the Ministerial  
 office to some, and to others *ex officio charitatis generali*, onely

Quest. 2.

as a gifted brother. And if this be granted, which is absurd, yet a greater absurdity will follow, viz. that if he administer the Lords Supper to any members of another Congregation, he must do that also as a gifted brother, and as a private person; whereas a private person out of office, hath nothing to do to administer the seals of the Covenant, as is confessed by all, except a few Anabaptists of late on purpose, as I conceive, to avoid this argument. And yet this communion of members of other Congregations is frequent among our brethren for Congregational Churches. Neither can this be answered that it is done by virtue of communion of Churches, except there be a communion of offices and Officers, and so every Minister be an indefinite, habitual Officer, and a Minister of the Church-Catholick.

And if a Minister hath an indefinite office, and can administer the seals of the Covenant, to strangers in his own Congregation, in his own meeting-house, then any where else, in any other meeting-house; for no man will say his Ministerial office is circumscribed by, or tyed unto the fabrick of his own meeting-house, or any especiall influence or authority afforded him in the execution of his Ministerial function by the presence of his own Congregation. He whose office is limited within, and stands wholly in relation to a particular place, is out of office when he is out of that place, as a Major of a Corporation, and a Constable of a Parish; but so is not a Minister, he is no private man as soon as he is out of his meeting-house, or the limits of his Congregation.

And though indeed he be more peculiarly their Pastor or Bishop; one that hath the oversight of them in the Lord, in a more immediate, especial manner actually, yet this extends to all places, where-ever he or they shall come by occasion, though never so far from their dwellings, but so is not a Major or Constable. And besides this particular relation he hath an indefinite office, he is a Minister in general to all others, and may exert his power of office to them, as God giveth occasion, and they give him a call, without taking a new especiall relation to them; but so cannot a Major or Constable, though they were intrusted to use their office out of their limits, because they are onely particular Officers. See this more fully in Chap. 6. Sect. 4. and 5.

Suppose a Ministers flock by mortality, or the sword should be dissolved, extinct and cease, indeed he ceaseth to be their Pastor, because the correlative faileth, but he ceaseth not to be a Minister of the Gospel. A King or Major haply cease to be so any longer, if his Kingdom or Corporation should sink or be swallowed up, because there is no Catholick Kingdom or Corporation whereof they were Officers, but the office of the Minister ceaseth not, because he was an Officer of the Church-Catholick, which correlative sinketh not : but still his power *in actu primo* to dispense all the Ordinances of Christ, which a single Officer can perform, remaineth, only his call *ad actum secundum sive exercitum, prohibet & nunc*, which is appointed by the polity of the Church for order, ceaseth, because they are cut off that gave him a call thereto.

sect. 4.

An Objection against this I find made by those two Reverend Ministers M. A. and M. S. in their *Defence*, p. 208. It is to this purpose. If Ordination of a Minister be an indeleble character (like Baptism) and ceaseth not when his particular relation to a Congregation ceaseth, why then should not a ruling-Elder or Deacon remain an Elder or Deacon in the Church, though their particular relations cease?

*Ans.* 1. If you please to cast your eye back to the answer of an Objection of M. *Hookers* that is like to this, *ch. 2. sect. 4.* it may afford some light to the answering of this Objection, to which I refer you, being loth to repeat the same again.

2. I premise also, that for ought I can finde, both ruling-Elders and Deacons, should continue in their offices as long as they lived, if the Congregations or Presbyterial Churches which chose them be not dissolved, or if they be not ejected by censure.

3. I deny not but that the Deacons office may cease at the dissolution of the Church that chose them, because the subject of their office, *viz.* contributions, cease with the contributors; and so it may be said of the ruling-Elders also, because the particular object of their office ceaseth, and yet both of them while they are in their offices may extend the execution of their offices beyond the particular Church that chose them, to a greater part of the Church, and possibly to the whole.

Hh

4. There

Quæst. 2.

4. There is a great difference between the Minister of the Word and the ruling-Elder, the first hath two keys, *viz.* of doctrine and discipline, the other hath but one, *viz.* of discipline. The superiour order is conceived to comprehend the power of the inferiour; and so the Apostles had all the power of the inferiour, even of Deacons; the like may be said of the rest.

5. The key of discipline cannot be exercised but in a combination, and therefore must cease when that ceaseth, which must be at the dissolution of the particular Church, whether Congregational or Presbyterial which chose them: but the key of doctrine, with which the Minister of the Word is invested, may be exercised by a single person out of combination, and therefore that ceaseth not at such dissolution. Indeed the exercise of this key of discipline is suspended by such dissolution, yet is reserved in him habitually *in actu primo*, because it is annexed to (if not comprehended under) his key of doctrine. And if there can be any use made of that position of dispensing Ordinances to other Churches *mediantibus candelabris*, it is more proper to this key than the other, because his particular relation to the particular Church, lets him into the particular combination, and so into a greater upon occasion of a call.

6. And for ought I know, this might be the reason why the Apostle changed the manner of speech from the concrete to the abstract, 1 *Corinth. chap. 12. ver. 28.* from teachers to helps, governments; to intimate that they that have those offices cease to be Officers when they cease to be helps, or to be employed in government, but the others are affixed indeleibly unto their persons, and may be exercised more at large in the Church; and out of it, *ἀπολυμνήως*, and singly without actual combination.

Suppose a part of a County wherein a Justice of peace formerly dwelt, and executed his office, should sink, yet, if he be preserved, he remaineth still in his office, and may execute it in any other place in the County, where he shall dwell, because his office stood in reference to the whole County, though he exercised it actually but in one place. So is the Ministers office (as a Minister of the Gospel) general, though they take

take but particular divisions and parcels of the Church to feed and watch over actually and particularly, and do not ordinarily stretch themselves within anothers particular line and limits without a call, by permittance, or entreaty, or combination. Sect. 4.

And that a Minister is a Minister of the Church-Catholick visible, appears thus: He that can ministerially admit or eject a member into, or out of the Church-Catholick visible; is a Minister and Officer of the Church-Catholick visible. But every Minister by Baptism, or Excommunication admitteth or ejecteth members into, or out of the Church-Catholick visible. Therefore, &c.

This Argument I find more fully laid down by Apollonius, *Pastor ut Pastor exercet multos actus ministeriales, non tantum erga Ecclesiam suam particularem cui ordinario ministerio est affixus, sed erga Ecclesias alias particulares, & Provinciales, & Nationales, imo & erga Ecclesiam universalem: Nam per Baptismum membra in Ecclesiam universalem admittit: per excommunicationem membra, non tantum ex sua particulari, sed etiam Provinciali, Nationali, & Universali Ecclesia eicit, Mat. 18. 18, 19. Ex officio pastoralis preces Deo offert pro omnibus aliis Ecclesiis laborantibus: Verbum Dei in aia Ecclesia particulari predicare potest, non tantum virtute & ratione domorum, sed etiam pastoralis autoritate; ita ut verbo suo liget & solvat peccatores, remittat & retineat peccata, & ut legatus missus a Deo obsecres homines ut reconciliemur Deo.*

Of Excommunication I spake before, proving that it ejecteth a man from communion with the whole Church-Catholick visible.

This M. Ellis saith is not formally but virtually done. But I answer, Then it will follow that by Baptism they are not formally admitted into the Church-Catholick, but virtually. But into what Church were they baptized that were baptized by John Baptist and the Apostles, before particular Congregations were constituted? And now they are constituted, it cannot be said they are formally baptized into them, for haply the person baptized in a particular Congregation, will never be a member thereof, but of some other. Our brethren hold that it is entering

Quest. 2.

into their particular Covenant, that makes them actually members of their Congregation, and that the children of their own Church-members are by Baptism but incomplete members of that Congregation.

Our brethren will not say ( I suppose ) that those persons that go from hence to them, being already baptized, are heathens and without, though they have lost their particular membership? Surely they account them subjects of Christ, and under his seal; why else do they admit any of them members of their Congregations ( into which they may admit only Christs Subjects ) and set no new seal of Baptism upon them?

And as Baptism admitteth *primarily, formally, and antecedenter* into the Church-Catholick, and *secondarily and consequenter* into that particular Congregation, so the same order is in ejection by excommunication. If a finger were added to a man's hand, the primary consideration is, that there is a limb given to that man, such a man we say hath recovered his sight or hearing, though he be seated in the eye or ear.

And if a hand could be conceived to cut, nip, or tear off a gangrened finger, it would not be conceived as an act of the hand only, but as an act of the man, and the man would be said to lose a limb primarily, and the secondary consideration is, that the particular hand hath lost a finger. When D. Crammer burnt off his right hand, it was not the act of the arm only, but of the whole man primarily. And if this be so of members that are fixed, and have their particular place and office in the body, and cannot be removed and set any where else: then much more of the members of the Church, which were members of the Church-Entitive, before they received their particular membership in any Congregation, and may be removed from one Congregation to another, as oft as occasion or conveniency serveth.

But because excommunication is an act of many, *ὡς ἡ πλειονη, 2 Cor. 2. 6.* I will therefore insist more particularly upon Baptism, which is an act of a single Pastor or Minister, though passed with the knowledge and consent of the Congregation.

- That by Baptism we are admitted into the Church, I think is without doubt: for if persons baptized be not members of the visible Church, then the seal of the Covenant is administered to those, that are and remain one of the Church, and so were no initial seal, which were absurd to say. Self: 4.

- Mr. Ball in his Catechism hath this passage: "Baptism is a Sacrament of our ingrafting into Christ, communion with him, and entrance into the Church, for which he citeth, *Mat. 28. 19. Act. 8. 38.* And afterwards explains himself: It doth (saith he) solemnly signify and seal their ingrafting into Christ, and confirm that they are acknowledged members of the Church, and entered into it."

And that we are thereby admitted members, not of a particular Congregation but the Church Catholick, appears, because we are baptized into one body; *1 Cor. 12. 13.* And this appears further, because he that is baptized in one Congregation, is baptized all over the world, and is not to be re-baptized, but is taken as a member of the Church where ever he becomes. See before Chap. 6. Now that baptizing is an act of office, appears, *Joh. 1. 33.* He that sent me to baptize. And *Go teach all Nations, and baptize them;* &c. *Mat. 28.* was the substance of the Apostles Commission. And though *Paul 1 Cor. 1. 17.* saith, *Christ sent me not to baptize, but to preach the Gospel;* yet that is meant not principally, for he was sent also to baptize, else he might not have done it, which we read he did.

And that by an act of this office we are baptized into the Church Catholick, appears, because *John Baptist baptized all Jerusalem, Judea, and all the region round about Jordan.* And the Disciples of Christ made and baptized more Disciples than John, and that without any relation to any particular Congregations; which had it been necessary, or had baptism been ordained in reference to particular Congregations, they could have combined them into. So *Peter caused Cornelius and his friends to be baptized, Act. 10. 48.* but no mention is made of any Congregation into which they were baptized. And *Philip baptized the Eunuch,* but not into any particular Congregation. Into what Congregation did *Ananias baptize Paul, Act. 9. 18?* Or how can it appear that *Ananias* was an Evangelist, or any extra-

Quest. 2.

ordinary Officer ? he is called a Disciple at *Damascus*, it is probable he was one of the Elders there, but that *Paul* was ever a fixed member of any particular Congregation, it appears not.

That which is answered to this is, That they which administered Baptism so indefinitely, were extraordinary general Officers, which are now ceased. But this solves it not, for if the immediate right to Baptism, &c. comes to the receiver by being a member of a particular instituted Congregation, as *M. Norton*, and *M. A.* and *M. S.* in *Def. chap. 4. pag. 73.* tells us, then *John Baptist*, *Christ's Disciples*, *Philip* and *Ananias* (though he had been an Evangelist) administered it to such as had no actual and immediate right to receive it. Indeed the answer implieth a more large, actual, extensive power in the administrators, either to have constituted new Churches, or to administer in any constituted Churches, but it gives not them power to administer any Ordinance of God to such as had no right thereto, nor power to the receivers to receive it without actual right, in an undue order. It gives them not *juris in re*, who had in themselves only *jus ad rem*, as their distinction is. And the proof brought p. 76. out of *Act. 5. 14.* is, as I conceive, mistaken. Their words are these : "Believers were added ; first they were believers standing in that spiritual relation to Christ and his whole body, and then added to the Church by visible combination. But it is not said they were added to the Church, but added to the Lord : and it were incongruous to gather thence that they were first believers, and after that were added to the Lord by a second act, seeing their adding to the Lord was by believing, and that which added them to the Lord the head and King, added them to the body and kingdom.

"And whereas they say, that Justification and Adoption, &c. flow immediately from internal union with Christ, but instituted Ordinances and Privileges mediately, and in such an order as Christ hath in wisdom ordained, and the nature of visible government and Ordinances of Christ necessarily require, pag. 76. If they mean by it, being members of particular Congregations : then would I know whether hearing the Word publicly preached or read, or joining in publick singing, or in



in keeping a day of publick thanksgiving, or fasting, or making vows, or taking oaths, which are instituted Ordinances, may not be permitted to any but such as are members of particular Congregations? Sect. 4.

The Apostles carried about one with them whom they called *ὀνόματι* a Minister, *Acts chap. 13 ver. 5.* who was no Apostle, and he baptized for them into the Church-Catholick, and when a sufficient number were converted and baptized, then followed the particular relation of a particular Congregation, by ordaining Officers to take the particular care over them.

So *Tychicus Colos. 4. 7* is called a *beloved brother and faithful Minister, and fellow-servant in the Lord.* And *Ephes. 6. 21.* he hath the same stile given him. Certainly he could not be a peculiar Minister to both those distant Churches: and haply he was so to neither of them, if we may give any credit to *Dorotheus*, who saith he was Bishop of *Chalcedon in Bithynia.* *Apollos* baptized at *Corinth*, *1 Corin. chap. 3 ver. 4.* and yet was no Apostle but a Minister and steward of the Mysteries of God as well as they, *1 Cor. 4. 1.* Hence is that distinction of *Junius* in his *Animadversions* on *Beſarion*. chap. 7. not. 7. "*Alia est electio sive vocatio communis, quā vir bonus, pius, doctus, aptus, absolute eligitur ad ministerium verbi ἀποστολικόν: alia particularis sive singularis, quā ad ministeriū singulariter huic vel illi Ecclesiae praeficiendus eligitur, ἱερωὺς.*"

And the Scripture always calling the believers in one city, one Church, even *Jerusalem*, though there were many thousands, yea, myriads, i. e. many ten thousands of believing Jews therein, as *James* tells *Paul*, *Acts. 21. 20.* *πολλὰ ἑταίρια*, which were all probably of *Jerusalem*, as appears, first, because they were not such as could bear any witness against *Paul*, but by hear-say, they are informed of thee. But the Jews dispersed amongst the Gentiles, having seen and heard *Paul*, could have testified of their own knowledge, and would not be blinded with *Pauls* present conformity. And secondly, because they onely of *Jerusalem* could receive satisfaction by *Pauls* conformity to the Law at *Jerusalem* at that time, and not the others.

Also the holy Ghost calling the Elders of those cities, the Elders

*Quest. 2.* Elders of the Church *in communi*, it leaveth it uncertain to me whether the several Elders were fixed over the particular Congregations, or taught and ruled *in communi*, as the Ministers do now in *Middleburgh*, and *Strasburgh*, and other places: yet because it maketh most for edification and order, to have them fixed, I shall think they were, untill the contrary shall be proved; but however they ruled in common in the exercise of discipline, which is the Ordinance which our brethren are most unwilling to grant should be exercised out of the particular Congregation.

*Self. 5.* Seventhly, *That Church to which every Christian first bears relation, and which relation continueth last, and cannot be broken by him without sin, is the first Church, but such is the Church-Catholick visible. Therefore, &c.*

The Major is undeniable, The minor appears, because none can be admitted into a particular Congregation, except he be judged first of the Church-Catholick, and that not merely Entitative, but under the seal of the Covenant administered by some Officer, and so stands bound to submit himself to all *Christs* Ordinances and Officers, by one of which he receives his admission. So again, though he change his habitation never so often, bear relation to never so many particular Congregations one after another, yet in all those the general relation holdeth still: he is still a baptized visible member of the Church-Catholick; and therefore to be received where-ever he cometh into any particular Congregation. Yea, in the *interim* after his breaking off from one Congregation, and placing in another, he retains the general relation and baptism, and is not an heathen or infidel, he is not one *without* in the Apostles phrase.

Yea, suppose a man should be a Traveller, Merchant, or Factor, and settled in no particular Congregation, yet being a Christian, he is a member of the Church-Catholick; yea, and if he broach any errours, or live inordinately, he shall be accountable to the Church where he for the present resides, or such crimes are committed, and be liable to their censure, as being a member of the Church-Catholick. And this appears, because the Church of *Ephesus* is commended, *Rev. 2. 2.* for trying strangers that came among them under the notion of Apostles, and found

found them lyars, and so would not receive them. And our Sect. 5.  
brethren undertake to inflict the sentence of Non-communication  
(for so they call it a sentence of Non-communication denounced.  
*Apollog. Nar. pag. 18. and 19.*) against strangers, yea, whole  
Churches: but how it will stand with some other principles of  
theirs, I know not: if it be a sentence denounced, it is a censure,  
and so an act of discipline exercised against those out of their  
particular confederation; which in my apprehension is but  
changing an old warranted censure of the Church, into a new  
and doubtfull one: but both seem to agree in the generall na-  
ture of a sentence or censure.

Surely hereticks and false teachers are not to be left to the Ma-  
gistrate only, but to be referred to Ecclesiastical trial: for those  
things com not under the cognizance of the civil Magistrate pro-  
perly: or he may be an heathen, and will not regard an here-  
tick, nor can judge of him, *Act. 18. 15.*

And if every kingdom will try murder, treason, or any foul  
crime committed in the same, though by a stranger or alien, be-  
cause the crimes are against their laws and sovereign, though  
their Laws pertain not to the country where the forreigner  
was born and dwelleth: then much more shall every Church  
try those members of the Church-Catholick, residing among  
them, for their crimes or false doctrines, seeing they have all the  
same sovereign head, the same Laws, and are all one habituell  
body.

Again, it is no sin for a man to remove from one Congre-  
gation to another, as oft as occasion or convenientcy require,  
but for a man to remove out of the Church-Catholick, either En-  
titive by disclaiming the doctrine and faith of Christ, or organi-  
cal by refusing to join to any Christian society, or to be under, and  
submit unto any Church-discipline, is a great sin and apostacy.  
No man is accounted a schismatick for removing from one Con-  
gregation to another, but he that shal separate himself from all  
Church-comunion, and shal rend himself from the Church-Ca-  
tholick, he is a schismatick, he is an Apostate. And therefore the  
several sects though they pretend, because of wants or blemishes  
to rend from the Church of *England* or *Scotland*, &c. yet not from  
the Church-Catholick by no means, because they know that  
were a sin.

Quest. 2.

Eightly, That Church from which the particular Churches spring, and to which they are as an additament and increase, that is the prime Church, but that is the Church-Catholick, Therefore, &c.

The Major is clear of it self. The minor appears, because they are the instrument to convert the rest, and bring them into the same kingdom of Christ with themselves, *Act. 2. 47. God added to the Church daily such as should be saved*, That little handful to which the Catholick charter was first given, leavened the whole world, and brought them in as an addition to themselves. They were to be witnesses in Jerusalem, and then in Judea, and to the ends of the earth, *Act. 1. 8. For the Law shall go forth of Zion, and the Word of the Lord from Jerusalem, Mai. 2. 3. The Lord shall send the rod of his strength out of Zion, Psal. 110. 2. It was with the Church then as was said of the river of Eden, Gen. 2. 10. A river went out of Eden to water the garden, and from thence it was parted into four heads. So the water of life flowed from Zion into the four quarters of the world.*

As there is no creek but hath its rise from, and continuity with the Main, and receives influence from it: so there is no particular Church but hath his first rise, and ministeriall influence from the Church-Catholick, and received the Gospel and privileges of it from thence ministerially. God calls no Evangelicall Churches by inspiration only, but by the ministry of those that are members of the Church-Catholick, or some part of it. God would not have *Cornelius* instructed by an Angel, though he could have done it, but by *Peter* a Minister of the Church-Evangelical: and likewise the *Eunuch* by *Philip*.

So that the Church-Catholick is as the Sea, and particular Churches as so many creeks or arms receiving a tincture and seasoning of her waters. The Church-Catholick is as the tree, Christ as the root, the particular Churches as branches, as *Cyprian* makes the comparison. She is the mother, and they as daughters born of her, and receiving from her ministerially both nature and privilege, *Gal. 4. 26.*

*Paul* indeed was called extraordinarily from heaven by Christ himself, the head of the Church ( and not by an Angel ) that he might be, as some conceive, a type of the second call of the

Jews, who (as some hold) shall be so called, as he was, *by the appearing of the sign of the Son of man*: and therefore that Church is said to come down from God out of heaven, *Rev. 21. 2, 10.* And the ground of this type they take from *1 Tim. 1. 16.* For this cause I obtained mercy, that in me first Jesus Christ might show forth all long-sufferance for a pattern, *αὐτὸς ἑωὐταυτοῦ ἵνα πα-  
δείξῃ ἡμῖν ὁ ἀγαθὸς*, to them that should or shall hereafter believe on him.

But these things are mysteries, and I dare not be too confident in them, yet should they come to passe, they infringe not this truth; because their conversion shall come from the head, root, and fountain it self of the Church; as *Abrahams* call was. And no question but Christ did convert many in the daies of his flesh, when he was actually and visibly a member of the Church here below. And if any be converted by secret inspiration or revelation, and neither converted nor fed by any external Ordinances, as haply some Infants of heathens or any Philosophers, as *Plato* (if haply there were any so converted) they are not to be accounted of the visible Church, and so not belonging to this question.

There is a double rise of the particular Churches out of the general.

First, All Congregations are made up of the members of the Church-Entitive, or of persons that are visible believers, and their children, which are holy, being born in the Covenant.

Secondly, Consider the Church-Catholick as Christs Kingdom or Corporation, already invested with Evangelical Ordinances and Privileges, and it affords a two-fold rise to those that are added to them.

First, They are instrumental by their preaching, godly conversion, and sometimes by their sufferings, to convert those that are aliens from the Common-wealth of Israel.

Secondly, They give them ministerially their admittance, entrance, and as I may say, freedom in the Church, both as private members, and if any of them be ordained Officers, it is by such as are Officers before, and not *quā* Officers of the particular Churches (for it is an extrinsecal act to them as so considered)

Quest. 2.

sidered) but of the general. And in the erecting of a new Congregation in *New-England*, there is to be the consent, advice, and help of the Elders of neighbour-Churches; they are not only to allow thereof, but also to ordain them Elders, which cannot be an act of particular Officers, for it is no act toward their own flocks, it is extraneous to them: but it is as they are habitually general Officers, and this occasion draws forth their power for the good and increase of the whole.

Sast. 6.

If he be asked, What is sufficient to make a man a member of the visible Church? I answer, Knowledge and belief of the main points of the Christian faith, and professed subjection therunto. And this is as much as the Apostles required, as in the case of the *Eunuch* and *Simon Magus*, &c. and if it were sufficient then, it is so still: for those were the purest Churches erected by infallible men: and yet they went upon no other grounds. *So many as gladly received the Word were baptized*, Act. 2. 41. And yet this is no more then may be found in an hypocrite, out of novelty, sudden flames, admiration at the extraordinary gifts and miracles: and was found in the stony ground which received the Word with joy. And we have no other rule to go by in gathering Churches, or receiving members into a church, then they had, neither may we presume to make any other.

*"Sic omnes fere Reformati Theologi adebrau materiam visibile Ecclesia asserunt esse homines externè vocatos fidem Christi professantes: namque definiunt ostium hominum vocacionis externalis seu predicationis verbi & Sacramentorum communicationem evocationem ad cultum Dei & frequentationem Ecclesiasticam inter se celebrandam, Apol. p. 8. Vide etiam utrumque Trolouiano in locis com. Loc. de Ecclesia, & Professorum Leidenfis, Diss. 40. Thes. 3.*

It is true, God commands true piety: and no man shall see God's face in blisse, nor be of the invisible company without it. But I speak what is requisite in *sepo Ecclesia*, and what means must be for a visible Church, and then conceive it is not absolutely requisite that the persons should be truly godly to make them members thereof. For if it were otherwise, no man could

tell when he is in a true Church, or who are true members, or whose child ought to be baptized. And if the living members of Christ were the only or essential members of a visible Church; then none are true essential members but they: and a truly godly Minister is a more essential Minister than another, and the Ordinances administered by him, are more essentially administered than by another: and then the virtue of the Ordinance should depend not on Christ's Institution, but on the worthiness of the person administering. And haply after many years living under a Minister that seemed godly, that Minister by falling away shews himself that he was not so, and then all those Ordinances were null, being administered by one that was not onely no Minister, but no true member of the Church. I therefore conclude with that saying of Ames in his *Bekeum. Enervat. Palsum est interius virtutes requiri à nobis ut aliquis sit in Ecclesia quoad visibilem ejus statum.* Sect. 6.

And this M. Norton in *Resp. ad Apollon* p. 3. acknowledgeth, *Potest aliquis in externa Ecclesia communionem administrare, quarenda sanctitate regenerationis, & justificantis fide non est præsumptum, sed corrigendo examine exploratum, signa vera fidei, & sanctificationis interne realis tam evidenter non dederit, quæ omnem conscientiam hominum convincere possint de sincerâ ejus fide, &c.* Neque necessarium querendum, an articulationem possint demonstrare evidenter vera gratiæ salutaris triplicia, &c. but onely they must be fideles, 13. *Obj.* & *Ans.* as he exposteth himself in diverse places, they must be Ecclesiastice fideles, & appareat, &c. non semper ubi assistat, pag. 11. In capitulo Ecclesiasticæ ludæ reuera non fideles, ita estimandum à co. Apostolis, ut se gerant erga illum ac si esset fidelis, p. 12.

There may be a holiness of dedication and consecration, where there is no true holiness of regeneration and sanctification.

*Obj.* But holiness of dedication and consecration is founded upon holiness of sanctification, at least supposed, and therefore all the Church-members ought to have supposed sanctification.

*Ans.* That sanctification is commanded by God to every one that will dedicate himself unto God, is clear. But for the

Quest. 2.

supposition of it in all, it will be hard to prove. God enjoined his people of *Israel* to consecrate themselves unto him to be his people, yet he did not suppose them all to be godly : for he expresseth the contrary of them ; neither did *Moses* and *Aaron* suppose so of them, nor the Prophets, for they expresse the quite contrary.

And if we come to the New Testament, it cannot be conceived that *John Baptist*, or Christs Apostles did in their personal judgements apprehend all those to be truly godly whom they baptized and dedicated to God. For *John* called the *Scribes and Pharisees* a generation of vipers, and yet addeth, *I indeed baptize you with water*, Matth. 3. 7, 11. Indeed they confessed their sins, and it is like promised amendment, and so will the worst in our Congregations do, though they never perform it. The ground therefore upon which this supposal is to be, must not be any man's personal particular judgment, built upon such evidence as may convince the understanding of a judicious, experienced Minister or Christian, that the persons are truly godly, but an Ecclesiastical judgment in *foro Ecclesie* raised upon such grounds as the Ministers of God directed by God have formerly gone upon ; which conditions if they find they are not to deny administration of the seals unto, which are the seals of the visible not invisible Church. The same causes and rules are of admission that are of ejection *vice versa* : and as no man is to be censured and cast out of the visible Church, because the Elders particular judgement makes them think the man hath not the true power of godliness, and grace of God in sincerity, except he commit that which deserves an Ecclesiastical censure : so neither is admission to be denied to any man that desires to dedicate himself unto God, and will promise and profess subjection to Christs all his Ordinances, though it be suspected by judicious Christians, that he hath not the true work of grace in his heart. The Church of God in their Ecclesiastical judgement censureth onely ignorance, error and scandal. A Scholar that is admitted into a School, is not admitted because he is *doctus*, but *ut sit doctus*, and if he will submit to the rules of the School, and apply himself to learn, it is enough for his admission : the like may be said



the Church visible which is Christs school. *John Baptist* did not in his conscience think they had all actually, really, and completely repented and reformed themselves whom he baptized, but he *baptized them unto repentance*, *Mat. 3. 11.* and they by receiving the same bound themselves to endeavour the practice thereof. It were a sad case for Ministers if they were bound to admit none, or administer the Lords Supper to none, but such as were truly godly, or that they judged in their conscience to be so, or were bound to eject all that they judged were not so. I fear the Elders in *New-England* do not in their consciences judge so of all their members. It is not confederation that can give right to Ordinances, if by Gods Laws they ought not to have them.

There is a great difference between the visible and invisible Church: the rules of the one will not serve for the other. No Minister could ever administer the Sacrament without sin, if he ought not to administer it to any but such as are truly godly: neither hath God given us any rules to judge certainly of the truth of grace in any man: but the most judicious Divine in the world may be deceived by a cunning hypocrite: And to save this by saying we ought to think in our conscience that they are godly, is vain, for as we have no such rule to go by in Gods Word: so it is very harsh to pass an Ecclesiastical censure upon that ground, and the like may be said of denying admission thereupon: and it is also a very doubtfull rule for a Minister to go by, for some men judge very well of him that others judge but slightly of, and there will be a division among people in their communicating together according to their several judgments one of another, still suspecting that they have fellowship with unbelievers: and both Ministers and peoples judgment vary very much concerning the same man, according to the variety of his carriage there will sometimes be hopes and sometimes fears: but Ecclesiastical judgment is not guided by such uncertain, variable rules, neither in admission nor ejection, but upon clear evidence and palpable grounds, which must reach all, and may be clearly known and proved.

There are some I finde that distinguish between the qualifications of the members of the Church-Catholick visible, and of

Quest. 2.

of the members of particular instituted Churches. For the former, viz. the generall membership, they acknowledge that these fore-named qualifications will be sufficient; and therefore will admit such and their children to baptism, which (say they) is an Ordinance of the Church-Catholick visible; and every Minister being a Minister of the Church-Catholick visible (besides his particular relation to his particular Congregation) may say they, administer baptism to them, though they be members of no instituted Churches: but to make a member of a particular instituted Congregation, they require evident signs of true grace, and a consent and submission to the Ordinances of Discipline dispensed by the particular Officers. But this distinction of qualifications I find not grounded upon the Word of God, nor that any should be fit to be members of the Church-Catholick visible, and not to be members of a particular visible Congregation. If they be brought into *Christ's* sheep-fold, they are fit to have some of *Christ's* shepherds to take inspection of them: if they be admitted into *Christ's* Kingdom, City, Family, they are fit to be under the regiment of some of his Officers. If the Ordinances of worship, yea, the seal of the Covenant be administered to them, I see no ground that these should be freed from the Ordinances of Discipline, who in all likelihood will stand in most need thereof.

The great Objection which M. Hooker urgeth against this assertion, that the particular Churches are *orthæ*, and whereby he would prove the Church-Catholick to be *orthæ*, is because if the Church-Catholick be an *integrell*, it is made up of the aggregation of the particulars, & *omnis ex illis*: And every *Integrellum* is in respect of the parts *Symbolum effecti*. And the parts must have a being before the whole can result out of them.

*Ans.* My main intention in the Question was to prove the Church-Catholick to be the prime Church in those respects which are enumerated in the explication of this part of the predicate of the Question, to which I reserve you; and that the particular Churches are secondary in the same senses also.

And for the particular Churches being *Orthæ*, I have already both

both in the explication of the terms of the Question, *Chap. 1. Sect. 4.* and in this second part expressed my meaning thereof. *Sect. 6. Sect. 1. &c.*

My meaning is not in regard of the aggregation and combination of the particular Churches to make one aggregated combined integral: for so indeed the Church-Catholick puts on the notion of *orts*. But I meant it first in regard the particular Congregations are made up of, and arise out of the members of the Church-Entitive or of visible beleivers, which are the matter thereof. And whereas it is objected against this, that that Church is no political body, haply never had the sight or knowledg one of another: never entred into agreement of government one with another: and are wholly destitute, according to reason, and all rules of the Gospel, of all Church-priviledges, *Surv p. 287.* I answer, the Church indeed so considered is no actual polity, yet it is an integral, and it is visible in regard of the persons, covenant, laws, and profession. As all the subjects of the Kingdom of *England* are an integral in reference to the King and Laws, though they should for a time want inferiour Officers, and though they bee not in particular combinations, and so are destitute of the particular priviledges, and have no particular Officers to dispense God's Ordinances to them constantly, yet have they right by reason and Scripture rules to all the Ordinances of God, as well as baptism, and they covenant to submit to all God's Ordinances, even those of discipline, and are habitually under the habitual power of the Ministers office, and are capable of censures, as hath been shewed before: onely they want the opportunity of enjoying them constantly by particular Officers of their own. The right of an English man to the priviledges of the Laws, doth not arise by beeing actually under such and such particular officers to a corporation, &c. but by beeing members of the Kingdom. So is the right of visible beleivers to Church-priviledges, by being Christs visible subjects.

Secondly, the particular convents are brought into Christs Kingdome by the Church-Catholick visible already in beeing: and spiritually conquered and subdued by them to Christ: they are the fruits and success of their Ministry, as Organi-

Quest. 2.

nical, Christs Ministers are their spiritual fathers, and they are Children born to the Church, and are added to the Church.

Thicdly, the Church doth initiate them, and ministerially convey the priviledges to the converts, by enrolling them as free-men of the Church by Baptism, and ministerially ordaining officers over them, and so maketh them organical also, and adding them into combination with themselves: and this cannot bee done as they are particular Officers, for so, they are not to them, Therefore as general, and it is to bee accounted an act of the Church-Catholick, as hath been shewed before. *Ch. 1. Sect. 4.*

And though in a constant, permanent or consisuous integral, whose particular members rise and fall together with the whole, so that it cannot consist but of so many necessary integral, individual parts whereof it is constituted. There the whole, and the parts whereof it doth consist, as they stand in relation unto one another must bee *simul*; yet the Church-Catholick beeing (as I may say) a kinde of *discreet, successive, indefinite integral*, alwaies *transient*, and in *flux*, some members beeing, alwaies in their adding, and some alwaies in departing, so that in respect of the particular parts it is not one hour every way the same it was the former, I say, that in reference to the members that are to bee added, the whole must needs bee accounted first, because it is constituted and hath a beeing, entitive and organical before the addition, and the members born or converted must needs bee first added to the whole, before they can bear the relation of parts unto it. And herein the Church is like unto a Corporation, whose first members whereof it was constituted were *simul natura & tempore* with the whole, yet all the members that are added successively, finde it a Corporation before their addition: and so it is with the successive members of the Church Catholick.

*Object.* That which belongs to a similar body, or integral, *quâ tale*, it doth not arise from the integrality, but from the nature which is common to the whole, and so it agreeth to it primarily, *quâ tale, non quâ totum, sive integrum*: so though such and such priviledges and Ordinances belong to the whole

Church

Church-Catholick: yet it is not primarily, *quâ* Chatholick, or *quâ* an Integral, but *quâ* tale, and so they may belong to the parts primarily, and to the whole secondarily. Self. 6.

*Answ.* Though the properties of a similar body do belong to it *quâ* tale, as such, yet the whole being *tale* they agree to the whole primarily, though they be found immediately in the particular parts.

Secondly, The privileges and Ordinances of the Church do not belong to the Church primarily *quâ* tale, for it might possibly have had such a nature, and yet wanted such Privileges and Ordinances: but they arise *ex institutione & donatione divinâ*, and from the Covenant between Christ and his Church, and flow from thence, and that *institution, donation and covenant*, being first intended and given to the whole, the Privileges and Ordinances belong first to the whole, and secondarily to the parts, though they be set immediately in the parts also.

Now then, seeing it is evident by the former Scriptures and Arguments, that there is a Church-Catholick visible both *Entitive* and *Organicall*: and seeing the Names, Nature, and Privileges of the Church, the Promises and Ordinances of God, the Offices of Christ, the Signs of the true Church, the Members of the Church, and Ministry of the word belong first to the Church-Catholick visible, and that every particular Christian bears first and last relation thereunto, which relation cannot be broken off by any removal, or without sinne, and that the particular Churches spring out of the members of the Church-Catholick, I therefore conclude, according to the light God hath given me, That the Church Catholick visible is *Prima*, in Gods intention, and by Gods institution, and by Gods donation of Ordinances and Privileges, and in dignity and authority, and in perfection, and in nature and essence, and in ministerial, instrumental causality, and in perfect cognition and noisibility: and the particular Churches secondary or posterior in all the fore-named respects: and likewise are *Orta* in regard they are made up of the members of the Church-Entitive, and are converted instrumentally by the Church-Catholick Organicall, and initiated and organized by them, and added to them, and combined with them.

Quest. 2.  
Sect. 7.

From this Thesis give me leave to propound to your further consideration these Corollaries or Conclusions.

Concerning { Churches { Catholick.  
                  { Particular.  
                  { Persons { Publick, viz. the Officers.  
                              { Private, viz. the Members.

*Concerning the Churches in generall.*

1. That there is a Church Catholick.
2. That the Church-Catholick is but one.
3. That the Church-Catholick is visible.
4. That though the Church-Catholick be alwayes transient, and in flux by addition and subtraction of the members thereof, yet it shall never cease to be visible.
5. That if the Church-Catholick be contracted into narrow limits, yet the remaining part thereof conserves both the nature and priviledges of the Church-Catholick, and puts on the notion thereof, more properly then of a particular Church: as a City burnt down or wasted into a few streets, retains the Charter and Priviledges of the whole; and that which was accounted but a part of it before, now puts on the notion of the whole.
6. That the Church-Catholick is mixt of good and bad, as well as particular Congregations are.
7. That the Church-Catholick may be considered either as Entitive, or Organical.
8. That the Church-Catholick is one habitual, organical body, or Integral.
9. That the keys of Discipline are Catholick as well as of Doctrine.
10. That the Church-Catholick is one similar body: if considered as Entitive, the members are similar parts of it, if as organical, the particular Churches are similar parts of it.
11. The Promises, Priviledges, and Ordinances of worship and discipline, belong primarily to the Church-Catholick.
12. That the Church-Catholick, is constituted by one Covenant, Charter, and Systeme of Divine Laws.
13. That the Priviledges and Ordinances of the Church arise not from the Nature of it, but from the covenant, denotation, and institution of Christ.
14. That

14. That the Church-Catholick is the prime Church.
15. That the Church-Catholick visible is of greater dignity *Scilicet* 7.   
 than the particular Churches.
16. That the Church-Catholick visible is more august, and   
 of more large authority than the particular: though the authority differs not in kind.
17. That the Church-Catholick is of greater perfection than   
 the particular Churches.
18. That the Church-Catholick visible is ministerially an instrument to convey the Nature, Priviledges, and Ordinances of   
 the Church: such as are added thereunto.
19. That the whole Church-Catholick is the primary and adequate object (*suo genere*) of Christs Offices, and the particular Churches, but as parts thereof, *Job. 3:16*.
20. That the Notes and Signs of the true Church belong first   
 to the Church-Catholick visible, and therefore are distinctive to   
 that only.
21. That the Church-Catholick visible hath an existence, accidents, and operations of its own, as it is Catholick.
22. That the Church-Catholick visible hath an head or governour over it, and but one head, even Jesus-Christ, who is very   
 Man as well as God.
23. That though Christ be the onely supreme head and ruler   
 of his Church, yet hath it immediate rulers over it under Christ.
24. That the unity of the Church-Catholick requireth not a   
 meeting of the whole body together at any time.

*Concerning particular Churches.*

1. That the particular Churches are made up of the members   
 of the Church-Catholick Entire.
2. That the particular Churches organized, and all visible   
 beleevers make up the Church-Catholick Organicall by aggregation, and the particulars are inferiour thereunto.
3. That the particular divisions of the Church-Catholick visible for convenient enjoyment of publick Ordinances, have the   
 name (Church) and the Priviledges and Ordinances (as far as   
 they are capable of them) secondarily in consideration.
4. That the particular Churches being smaller parts of the

Quest. 2.

whole Church, having no essential, specificall differences, are to be distinguished by accidentall differences and circumstances, as their limits of place, &c. though they be heterogeneal to them.

5. Many Congregations may be in the same community of discipline, and be ruled by their Elders in common by coordination, and so be called one church, *National, Provincial, or Presbyterial.*

6. If the particular Churches claim power of dispensing all the Ordinances of Christ, by virtue of the general Charter, Covenant and donation, they being parts of the Church, then much more may the whole Church-Catholick, for which they were primarily intended and made.

7. The greater the parts of the Church-Catholick be, and the more united by combination and coordination, the stronger they be, and the smaller the divisions be, the weaker.

8. The division of the Church-Catholick into small parcells, to stand alone by themselves without coordination, is dangerous.

9. Yet necessity in regard of distance of place, &c. may cause a particular Church to be Independent, and stand alone in regard of actual, external consociation or combination.

10. The necessity of an explicit Covenant, as the essential form whereby the particular Church is constituted, implyeth a denial of all other Churches to be true, that are not so constituted, because they must want the essential form.

11. The ordinary and constant operations of the Officers of the Church in dispensation of Christs Ordinances are in the particular Churches primarily.

12. Any particular Congregation may fall, apostatize, or be dissolved and cease, but should the Church-Catholick be reduced into so narrow limits, and the being thereof be reserved therein, and it sustain the notion of the Church-Catholick, God would not suffer it in such a case to fall or cease, for then the whole must cease also.

*Concerning the publick Officers of the Church.*

1. Every Minister is an Officer of the Church-Catholick visible, and that relation is primary to him, yet the particular relation



tion hee stands in to a particular Congregation, giveth him a more immediate especial call, and charge to administer the O-<sup>Scd. 7.</sup>rdinances of God constantly to them.

2. Any single Minister by vertue of his office hath power ministerially to admit a member into the Church-Catholick visible, if hee bee fit.

3. Although the election of a Minister to a particular Congregation bee an act of liberty in the people, yet, his mission is from Christ primarily and ministerially by the Presbytery.

4. He doth not administer the Ordinances of God in the name of the Congregation as their servant, but as the servant of Christ. As a Mayor in a Corporation though chosen by the people, yet executeth his Office in the Kings name.

5. If hee administred any Ordinance out of his own Congregation, hee doth it not as a gifted brother, but by vertue of his office, 2 Cor. 5. 20. And the like may bee said of their dispensation of Ordinances to members of other Congregations that come to their Congregations.

6. Although the particular flock over which a Minister was set be dissolved, yet hee ceaseth not to bee a Minister, because the Church to which hee bare first relation is not dissolved, which is the Catholick.

7. The Elders of several particular Congregations as they may exercise the keys of their office *divisim*, in their several Congregations, so they may exercise them *conjunctim*, in combinations, if they bee called thereunto.

#### *Concerning private members.*

1. Particular converts are first converted into the Church-Catholick Entitive, and secondarily conjoynd in to particular con-fociations, for the more opportune enjoyment of Ordinances actually and constantly.

2. Every member of a particular Congregation is a member of the Church-Catholick Entitive, and that relation doth primarily belong unto him.

3. External profession of the true faith, and subjection to God's Ordinances, is enough to make a man capable of being a member of the Church-Catholick visible, and so also of a particular

a particular Congregation; *quoad externam firmam.*

Quest. 2.

4. By Baptism members are visibly and ministerially admitted into the Church-Catholick visible.

5. By excommunication rightly administered an offender is cast out of the Church-Catholick visible, as much as out of a particular Congregation.

6. Federal holiness belongs to none primarily, because born of members of a particular Congregation, but of the Church-Catholick.

7. They that are onely in the Church-Catholick visible, are not *without* in the Apostles sense.

8. Children of believing parents have right to Baptism, though their parents were not members of any particular Congregation, and are debarred from their due, if denied it.

9. Every-visible beleever is or ought to bee a member of the particular Church, wherein and among whom hee dwelleth.

10. The being in the general Covenant gives right to the Ordinances, and not any particular Covenant, neither do wee finde any mention in Scripture of any particular Covenant either urged or used as admission of members into a particular Congregation, or at the Constitution thereof.

11. The invisible members of the Church which have internal communion with Christ, are also visible members, and have external communion in external Ordinances.

12. The departure of a member from a particular Congregation, and removal to another for convenience, or by necessity, is no sin, but departing from the Church-Catholick, and ceasing to bee a member thereof, is a sin.

Soll 8.

I know it is not usual to make uses and applications to Theses of this nature, and should I enter thereinto, I might drown my self in sorrow, to bewaile the rents, not in Christs seamless coat, but in his body the Church, which Christ preferred in some regards before his natural body, for hee assumed his natural body for their sakes, and was willing to bee crucified for their sakes.

The divisions of the Church are of three sorts, in judgment, in affection, and in way or practice.

For

For judgment, First come the *Romists*, and they rend away the second Commandment : then come the *Anti-Sabbatarians*, and they rend away the Fourth, though placed in the heart of the Decalogue, and so extraordinarily fenced by God, and a *Memento* set before it, and so many arguments after it: then come the *Antinomians*, and they pluck away the whole Law from us, denying it both punitive, coercive, and directive power, and so render it wholly dead and uselesse to Christians : then come the *Socinians*, and they quench the Deity of Christ, and the holy Ghost, and deny our redemption by the blood of Christ, and so consequently would deprive us of the benefit of the New Testament : then come the *Anabaptists*, and they deny and deride our Baptism, and render us and our children no better then heathens : then come the *Separatists*, and they would pluck up our Church by the roots, and call us *Rome*, *Egypt*, *Sodom*, *Babylon*, and so consequently call their mother *Whore*; for if they have had any conversion, they had it in the bosome of our Church. Of whom that is too true which the Psalmist saith, *Psalm 50. 20. Thou sittest and speakest against thy brother, and hast slandered thine own mothers son.* Then come the *Anti-Scripturists*, and they cashier both Old and New Testament. And then come the *Anti-Trinitarians*, and they blaspheme the whole Trinity : And then come the *Familists*, and they leave the sure rule of the Word, and trust to Satanical delusions and revelations.

Yea, there be others of our honoured and beloved brethren, whom I forbear to name among the former; who, though they acknowledge us true Churches, yet deny us to be one Church, and would have us rent into a thousand pieces and parcels, and these to stand as so many entire, compleat bodies, without any coordination, as so many Spouses of Christ, as so many Queens appointing their own orders and Officers, with liberty to censure both Officers and members within themselves, by the votes of the whole body; and not to be accountable unto any Churches as coordinate members, except arbitrarily. Not endeavouring with us to reform our Churches, but to gather Churches out of our Churches, by gathering our best members out of our Churches, and uniting them into severall bodies by a particular Covenant, though distant far in habitation. But if the

Quest. 2.

cream of our Congregations be flected off, our wheat transplanted by it self into other mens fields, who sowed it not, our fattest sheep gathered into mens folds; it will be very sad for God's Ministers to have none but the sares, and goats, and lees, and dregs of men left them to look after.

X Others would wrest the Keys of the Church out of the hands of the Church-Officers, and hang them at the girdle of the civil Magistrate; but seeing God made civil and Ecclesiastical Officers differing in kind, the one entrusted with a civil Magistracy, the other with an Ecclesiastical Ministry, as it is an usurpation for the Church-officers, as such, to claim the power of the Magistrate; so I fear it will prove but sacrilege for the civil Magistrate, as such, to claim the power of the Ministry. If ~~one~~ *one* ~~was~~ *was* so great a fault, I fear ~~another~~ *another* will be as great.

Others there are who plead for liberty of judgment, conscience and practice, that every one may hold, and hold forth what opinions he please, and be of what religion and sect he pleaseth, because judgment and conscience cannot be forced, but must be left to God onely, as they say; and thereby they would make *England* another *Amsterdam* of all sects and religions: and some flown so high already as to name that City for an example and pattern of the model they would have in *England*: but I must clear our brethren in *New-England* from this, and commend them for banishing the *Familiists*, &c. from amongst them, who would otherwife have utterly overthrown the peace and truth in their Churches.

Yea, generally men covet new opinions, and account it their glory to differ from others in judgment, and he is no body that hath none but old truths; and so men under the colour of new light and new truth, rake up a multitude of old errors.

Secondly, Our divisions are in heart and affections: for difference in judgment causeth alienation of affections, and *great thoughts of heart*: so that if there prove once a clashing and crossing in opinions, though they were never so near allied, or well acquainted and familiar, yet then they grow strange, and fall out and oppose, and censure each other deeply: then they are superstitious, or Antichristian, or enemies to Christs Kingly office, and hence come so many invectives in Pulpit and Presse.

Thirdly,

Thirdly, Our divisions and differences are in Way : for as mens judgments differ, so do their ways. Some are for one way of worship, some for another ; some for one way of discipline, some another ; some for one way of constituting Churches, some another ; some are for gathering of new Churches out of old, and yet let the old ones stand as mock-Churches, when they have gleaned all that are good out of them : they would take all the golden and silver vessels, vessels of honour ; and leave none but of wood and stone, vessels of dishonour : And some are for separation wholly, and so turn all the rest over to Antichrist ; yea, some so violent, as that they would pluck down our very meeting-houses ( tropically called Churches ) which they deride by the name of *Steeple-houses*. And all are in waies of contention, so that we are like *Sampsons Foxes* tied together by the tayls with firebrands between them, to burn up the standing corn. Sect. 8.

I shall conclude with an earnest desire of, and exhortation to unity and peace. The unity of the Church should be a strong motive to unity in judgment, heart, and way. It is that the Apostle presseth, *Eph. 4. 3, 4. Indeuouring to keep the unity of the spirit in the bond of peace : for there is one body, and one spirit, &c.* This spiritual unity is that which Christ so earnestly and often praised for in that short prayer, *Joh. 17. ver. 21, 23. That they may be one as we are one, that they all may be one, that they also may be one in us, that they may be made perfect in one.* And this was Paul's prayer, *Rom. 15. ver. 5, 6. Now the God of patience and consolation grant you to be like-minded one towards another, according to Christ Jesus, that ye may with one mind and one mouth glorifie God, &c.* And this was Paul's earnest request, *1 Cor. 1. ver. 10. Now I beseech you brethren, by the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, that ye all speak the same thing, and that there be no divisions among you : but that you be perfectly joined together in the same mind, and the same judgment.* And again, *2 Cor. 13. ver. 11. It is one of the last things he concludes his Epistle with, Finally brethren, farewell, be perfect, be of good comfort, be of one mind, live in peace, and the God of love and peace shall be with you.* And *Phil. 1. ver. 27. He presseth it as the onely thing he desired of them, Onely let your conversation be as becometh the Gospel of Christ, that whether I come and see you, or else be absent, I may hear of your affairs, that ye stand fast in* one

Quest. 2.

*one spirit with one minde, striving together for the faith of the Gospel.* Certainly unity of judgment is of more importance then we are aware of, else the Apostle would not presse it with such solemn adjurations and entreaties, so often as he doth. Yea, when there were but two Women that differed in opinion ( as it is conceived ) the Apostle thought it becoming Apostolical gravity, and the Holy Ghost judged it meet for a piece of canonical Scripture to take notice of it, and compose it, *Phil. 4. 2. I beseech Evodias, and beseech Syntyche that they be of the same mind in the Lord,* Though it might seem but womens brabbles, yet we know how great a matter a little fire kindleth, a little strife and error will increase to more ungodlinesse.

Consider we, that there is but one Truth, and that is of God, and God is truth, and error is of the Devil.

Consider, that the understanding is the highest and foremost faculty of the soul, it is as the fore-horse in the Team, the leading faculty; and as that is informed, so the will and conscience, and affections must needs work, and follow that, and if that be led into error, it must necessarily mislead the whole man.

Consider, that a chief part of the image of God in man consisteth in knowledge, and so is upon the understanding, which by error is defaced.

Remember the solemn caveats given by the Apostle, *Rom. 16. ver. 17. I beseech you, brethren, mark them which cause divisions and offences contrary to the doctrine which ye have learned, and avoid them.* For they that are such serve not the Lord Jesus Christ, but their own belly, and by good words, and blessed or fair speeches deceive the hearts of the simple. And *Eph. 4. 14. That we henceforth be no more children tossed to and fro, and carried about with every wind of doctrine, by the sleight of men, and cunning craftinesse ( or after the methods of error ) whereby they lie in wait to deceive.* Christ himself tells us, that false prophets shall come that shall deceive ( if it were possible ) the very elect. Behold, I have told you before, *Mat. 20. 30, 31.* And Paul tells us, *Of your selves shall men arise speaking perverse things, to draw disciples after them; Therefore watch, Act. 20. 30, 31.* Therefore hold fast the form of sound words, which thou hast heard of me, *saith Paul, 2 Tim. 1. 13.* They that

that coin new words, & new strange expressions to amaze the people, it is a sign, as *Calvin* tells us, that they have some new opinion upon the Anvil. Sect. 8.

O let us labour to be of one heart, seeing we are all but one body, and have but one head, and one spirit, and because we are all brethren, children of the same heavenly Father. This is that which God hath promised his people, *Ezek. 11. 19. I will give them one heart, and I will put a new spirit within you.* And we find Christ inculcating this exhortation, *Joh. 13. 34. A new Commandment I give unto you, that ye love one another, as I have loved you, that ye also love another.* By this shall all men know that ye are my disciples, if ye love one another, *Joh. 13. 34. 35.* Again, *This is my commandment, that ye love one another as I have loved you, Joh. 15. ver. 12. and ver. 17. These things I command you, that you love one another.* And this I find practised, *Act. 4. ver. 31. And the multitude of them that believed were of one heart, and one soul.* And this *Paul* exhorteth to, *Rom. 12. 12. Be kindly affectioned one to another with brotherly love, in honour preferring one another.* And we finde the unity both of judgment and heart exhorted unto, *1 Pet. 3. ver. 8. Finally, be ye all of one minde, having compassion one of another; love as brethren, be pitiful, be courteous.*

Division is the Devils musick, but that which makes the Devil laugh, should make us crie. O what a solemn obsecration is that of *Paul*, *Phil. 2. ver. 1, 2. If there be any consolation in Christ, if any comfort of love, if any fellowship of the Spirit, if any bowels and mercies, fulfil ye my joy, that yee may bee like-minded, having the same love, being of one accord, of one mind.*

O that we might labour to bee of one way also! This is that which God promised his people, *Jerem. 32. ver. 39. I will give them one heart, and one way, that they may fear me for ever, for the good of them, and of their children after them.* And *Zeph. 3. ver. 9. Then will I turn to the people a pure language, that they may all call upon the name of the Lord with one consent, or one shoulder.* And this was the blessing that God gave *Hezekiah* in his people, *2 Chron. 30. ver. 12. Also in Judah the hand of God was to give them one heart to do the commandment*

Quest. 2.

of the King, and of the Princes by the Word of the Lord.

Certainly there is but one rule for doctrine, worship, discipline. And as many as walk according to this rule, peace be on them, and on all the Israel of God, Gal. 6. ver. 16. And this is the Apostles exhortation, Romans 15. vers. 6. That ye may with one mind and one mouth glorifie God: Yea, though we be not of the same judgment in every thing, yet as it is Phil. 3. 16. Whereto we have already attained, let us walk by the same rule, let us mind the same things.

And this unity in way is that which wee have sworn unto, and covenanted in our late National League and Covenant, in the first branch of it. That wee shall endeavour to bring the Churches of GOD in the three Kingdomes of England, Scotland, and Ireland, to the nearest conjunction and uniformity in Religion, Confession of Faith, Form of Church-government, Directory for Worship and Catechizing; That we and our posterity after us may as Brethren live together in faith and love, and that the Lord may delight to dwell in the midst of us. And wee shall all be forsworn, if we endeavour it not.

All the members of the same body natural agree to go the same way: Yea, the strength, health, and beauty of the body natural, consisteth in the fast knitting of all the members together to each other, and to the head, and the laxation thereof is dangerous: so and much more it is in a body polittick or Ecclesiastical. And though the divisions in our civil estate be very sad, and might deserve tears of blood to bewail them, yet I look upon the divisions in the Church as a matter of more sad and doleful consequence, and I fear (but with I might be mistaken) that when the breaches of the Commonwealth shall be closed, the breaches of the Church may grow wider, and the differences rise higher: and such errorrs are sown among us as will not be plucked up again in our age: which having seized upon the understandings and consciences of men, cannot be composed by commands, nor clubbed down by force. Onely here is my comfort, that though our condition is such, that we know not what to ask, yet God is wise, and knows what to bestow. And this is my hope herein, that he

which



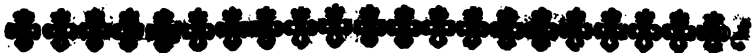
which found a way to reconcile God and man, when they were  
at enmity, can find way to reconcile man and man, though Sect. 8.  
they be at difference. Now the God of peace that brought again  
from the dead our Lord Jesus Christ, that great shepherd of  
the sheep, through the blood of the everlasting Covenant, make  
us perfect in every good work to do his will, working  
in us that which is well-pleasing in his sight,  
through Jesus Christ, to whom  
be glory for ever and  
ever. Amen.

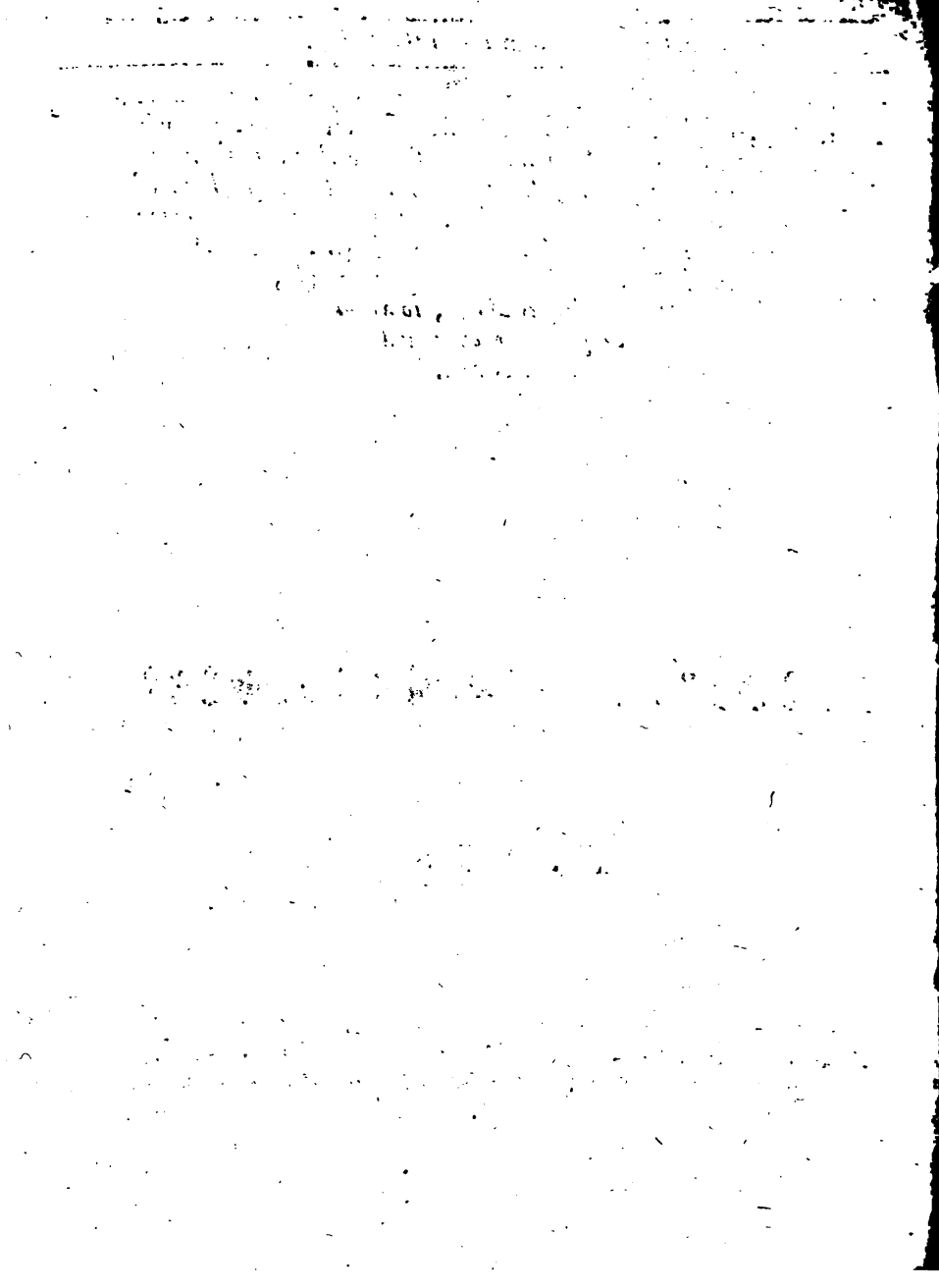
\* \*

\*



**F I N I S.**





AN  
Addition or Postscript  
TO THE  
VINDICATION  
OF THE  
ESSENCE and UNITY  
OF THE  
Church-Catholick visible,

And the Priority thereof in regard of  
Particular CHURCHES.

In answer to the Objections made against it,  
both by M<sup>r</sup> Stone, and some others.

---

By SAMUEL HUDSON, Minister of the Gospel  
at Capell in Suff.

---

*Ecclesiam teneo tritico & palea plenam, emendo quos possum,  
tolero quos emendare non possum: fugio paleam, ne hoc  
sim, non aream, ne nihil sim. Aug. Ep. 48. contra Don.*

---

LONDON,

Printed by J. B. for Andrew Kembe, and are to be sold  
at his shop neer S. Margarets hill in Southwark, and by Ed-  
ward Brewster at the Crane in Paul's Church-yard,  
and Thomas Basset under Dunstons Church  
Fleetstreet, 1658.

THE UNIVERSITY OF CHICAGO

PHYSICS DEPARTMENT

CHICAGO, ILLINOIS

OFFICE OF THE DEAN

CHICAGO, ILLINOIS

CHICAGO, ILLINOIS

CHICAGO, ILLINOIS

CHICAGO, ILLINOIS

CHICAGO, ILLINOIS

CHICAGO, ILLINOIS

CHICAGO, ILLINOIS

CHICAGO, ILLINOIS

CHICAGO, ILLINOIS

CHICAGO, ILLINOIS

CHICAGO, ILLINOIS

CHICAGO, ILLINOIS

CHICAGO, ILLINOIS

CHICAGO, ILLINOIS



TO THE  
CHRISTIAN READER.

Christian Reader!

**H**IS second impression of the *Vindication of the Essence and Unity of the Church-Catholick, visible, &c.* came to the birth altogether without my knowledge of the Stationer, or his intention, and without his knowledge of me, and mine intention: and it was so far passed in the Press before I knew of it, that there was no recalling of it. I had another Copy of it almost ready for the Press, wherein I had given answer to M. Stone, and some other opponents in their proper places in the Book.

Also I had obliterated the name of my antient friend M. Ellis, who had written in opposition to my first Thesis upon this question, and had left out all personall reflections upon him, to which I was in a manner, necessitated in my former impression to vindicate myself; and therefore I must crave his indulgence for this impression, the coming out whereof (so as it is) being wholly against my minde. The Book having met with some opposition, and that in Print, from some reverend brethren, I thought not fit to let this impression of it pass into the world, without taking notice of what was objected against it, and therefore am constrained to play

an after-gamr, and to add these few sheets as a Postscript therunto.

I have not as yet, met with any thing in print, which should cause me to alter my judgment about the main subject of the Book, and yet dare not say but some passages in it, may be carped at, and are liable to exceptions against; for I am but a frail man, and see but in part, and so am subject to erre, as well as others; yet am willing to be reclaimed in whatsoever I mistake at any time, and would not willingly bee misled, much less mis-lead others.

The subject is something knotty, and difficult, and not apt to be understood by every Reader, and therefore let him that readeth consider it well, that so he may understand, and not pass a censure rashly upon it before he understands it. That the Lord would guide thee and me into all truth, is the prayer of Christs worthlesse servant,

SAMUEL HUDSON.

---



THE  
VINDICATION  
OF THE  
Essence and Unity  
OF THE  
Church-Catholick visible, &c.



Ince the first publishing of the same, which was 1649. hath met with various entertainment amongst men, according to the various judgments of the readers thereof; as Books of polemical subjects, such as this is, use to do. From some it obtained acceptation and approbation, from others it met with improbation, and opposition. Two things especially have been opposed therein. First, the being of an universal visible Church, which is the subject of the second and third Chapters of this Vindication, and the former Chapter proving it by Scripture, the latter by arguments and reasons. Secondly, the integrality of the universal visible Church, handled in the fourth Chapter is opposed.

The essence or being of it, is opposed lately in print, by some Ministers in *Norfolk* and *Suffolk*, in their answer to *Jus Divinum Ministerii Evangelici*, set forth by the Provincall Assembly in *London*, and to *Vindicta Ministerii Evangelici*, set forth by M. *John Collins* of *Norwich*. But because this was not the main scope of their book, only they lighted upon it in their Epistle Dedicatory; I shall leave it unto their proper opponents; and only answer to what they say in their Epistle concerning this subject. The integrality of the universall visible Church hath been opposed by M. *Stone*, a reverend Minister and teacher to the Church of Christ at *Hartford* in *New-England*, and my ancient acquaintance. And this was in a tractate, called, *A Congregational Church is a Catholick Church*; which came forth in print, 1652. To whom I never intended to return an answer in any particular Treatise, partly because I saw his book was only a logical Lecture, and of so abstruse and sublime a subject, that as it was little taken notice of, so it was less understood by any, but those scholars that were versed in those studies, and so must mine answer have been also. And partly because he only or chiefly opposed the arguments which I set down in my fourth Chapter, and dealt not with the whole book, or the main scope of my Vindication, or question: and therein also opposed only those arguments which I brought against M. *Ellis*, which were taken from principles and grounds which I knew M. *Ellis* granted, which was warrant sufficient for to me use them, though M. *Stone* granted them not. And in them also M. *Stone* mistook my meaning, for by my denying the universal Church to be a *genus*, I did not deny it to an existing *genus*, or *genus in actu exercicio*, which M. *Stone* argued for; for I knew though it were an integral, it must be of one kinde or other, but I denied that it could put on the notion or consideration of a Church in *generis*. So, that my question about the integrality of the universal Church was no whit impaired by his arguments, though they had all been granted, only those arguments taken necessarily from principles granted by M. *Ellis* might have been invalidated thereby. And partly because I saw that M. *Stone* did implicitly grant what I contended for, which was, that the universal Church is not the *genus* of particular Congregations, in that he assigned another *genus* to



to them in the frontispice of his book, and upon the top of every page in his book, and that is Congregation *in genere*. But I intended that if ever this vindication should again come to the Press, I would have explained my meaning more fully, and that I meant by *genus* Church *in genere*, and not the integral nature of the *genus* that existeth in individuals, and so to have inserted an answer to M. Stone in that my fourth Chapter, which now I am prevented in, by this surreptitious coming forth of this second Edition without my knowledge, and therefore I have added this Postscript. I first therefore shall clear that there is a Church-Catholick visible.

Some of our brethren which have lately written, tell us that a particular Church is a particular company of Saints in mutual union, for mutual worship appointed by Christ for the glory of God, and the edification of their own souls, and the good of others. I intend not to carp, but shall give as candid an interpretation as may be of their words. I suppose by *Saints* they mean visible Saints, Saints by dedication and consecration, and not absolutely of Saints by regeneration, for as they have no certain rules to judge thereof in others, so also they can never be sure they are in a true Church, but will still be scrupulous in their communion, and cannot dispense or communicate freely, but doubtingly. They are also very tender in expressing the form, or as some will have it, the *Cement* of this particular society, and therefore have left out the word *Covenant*, either explicite or implicate; and so I hope they intend to let in parochial Congregations into the definition, though not independent, for there is such a *mutual union* among them.

For *mutual worship*, I suppose they mean joining in publick worship, and not as we speak of mutual duties between man and wife, to be performed to each others, but worship performed by them jointly to God. But I marvel that this definition mentions not any relation of this particular Church to some officer or officers to whom they should subject themselves, and by whom they should be taught, edified, and governed; and who should be Gods mouth to them, and their mouth to God. I am loth to be too bold or peremptory in guessing at their meaning; but happily it is because they intend to put the keys of discipline into the body.

body of this Congregation, which can exercise them without officers, or because they can set up un-ordained private members to preach and pray among them, and so make up their mutual worship also without an officer or Ambassador of Christ, *to whom is committed the word of reconciliation*; for indeed that is the scope of their book, though they do acknowledge that there ought to be such officers: or haply they feared to be unchurched again by the death of such an officer, if they had put him into their definition. They say also that the end of this mutual union is for the edification of their own souls, but that must imply them all truly converted; but I mervail that they make no provision in their definition, for the education, instruction, and conversion of children born members of their Congregation, and servants of their members, seeing by Gods appointment, and the usage in Old and New Testament, the parent or master brings his whole family into covenant aswel as himself: and a part of the Ministers Office is *to go to the lost sheep of the house of Israel*, to convert unconverted persons, as well as edifie converted. They say nothing also of their mutual inspection and watching over one another, for which this way is so highly cryed up above others: haply it is because their members dwell so far remote, in so many parishes, that they see it is impossible to do it.

“ They grant an universal company of Saints, in a reformed  
 “ sense, comprehending every individual Saint-member thereof,  
 “ whether formed into fellowship or unformed: but as Saints,  
 “ not as Churches of Saints.

I acknowledge it is true the particular visible believers are the matter of the universal Church, whether formed into Congregations or no, for that is but a secondary accidental relation that betideth them, and enters not into the essence of their Christianity.

It is true, their particular membership of this or that Congregation comes by their union with it; but were they not members and subjects of Christs political visible Kingdom before any such union, and initiated into it by one of his officers, yet not as a particular officer of a Congregation, for none are baptized into a Congregation but as by an indefinite officer of the universal visible Church of Christ: And an indefinite officer in relation

ing to his employment, and general object, is equivalent to a general, and that is the prime relation of a Minister, and that to a particular Congregation is secondary, as it consists of a parcel of the universal Church, over whom he takes especial, actual, constant, care and charge.

“They say the *World* is universal, of which all creatures are a part, yet did a man stand where he might see all Countries, and all creatures, he should see but a particular world; really particular, but intellectually universal.

*Answer.* If by particular world, they mean in relation to a general world, it is not true; for one particular cannot make up an universal; and there was never any world but this one. But if by particular they mean an individual integral world, it is true, and that is it which I contend for in this Vindication; that the universal or Oecumenical Church cannot put on the notion of a Church *in genere*, but of a great individual integral: and so both the world, and universal Church are, whether a man stands where he can see them or no: they are *integraliter universale* as *America* calls the universal Church.

“It is true that they say, did a man stand where he might see all the Corporations, and all particular civil societies of men, he might acknowledge the general nature of Corporations existing in either of them (*or the integral nature rather, and from them all abstract a general nature*) and yet deny an universal Corporation, consisting of them as parts thereof.

But this comes to pass because the several Corporations or polities are constituted by several Charters, granted from several sovereigns; under several laws.

But the universal Church hath but one Charter, from one sovereign, under the same system of laws, and the officers indelimits, officers in reference to their imploiment to which they are called by Christ, and may exercise the same towards any of the subjects of that whole Ecclesiastical body, as they have opportunity, and a call: which the officers of the several civil Corporations cannot do.

They answer that text, *1 Cor. 12. 28. God hath set in the Church first Apostles, Secondly Prophets, &c.* which is usually brought to prove an universal visible Church, by paralleling it with what

is said *ver. 18. God hath set the members every one in the body.* And if that will not conclude a Catholick body, neither will the former conclude a Catholick Church.

I answer, the difference between them is great: for the several bodies, though they may have a general consideration and notion put upon them, or abstracted from them rather, of body *in genere*, yet are they not united together into one individual body by any external bond, they are not *integrally* one, but only *generically* or *specifically* one. But the universal Church is united into one body by a visible external bond, yea bonds of the same Sovereign, the same Law, the same Covenant, the same Initiation and enrowment, and the same indefinite Officers over it. And this is the primary consideration that comes upon it, before any particular distinctions into Congregations, which consist of parcels of that great body. And therefore that which the Apostle saith, *ver. 27. ye are the body of Christ, and members in particular;* is meant, ye are of the body of Christ, or parts of the body of Christ, not the whole, for Christ hath but one body, in the same respect, and ye are particular members thereof.

They bring diverse arguments against an universall visible Church.

*Argu. 1.*

Their first argument is, because every part is incomplete; not having the power of a whole in it; but every particular Church rightly constituted hath in it the power of a whole Church; therefore it is not a part.

*Ans:* It is true, every part hath not the *extensive* power of the whole, it hath the compleatness of a part, and no more. Every civil Corporation is called a body politic, and it is compleat according to the constitution of it, but this hinders it not from being a member of a greater body politic, *viz.* the Kingdom or Common-wealth whereto it belongeth. So every particular Congregation hath the compleatness of a particular Church in it, but still as it is a part of the whole Church, which is the political Kingdom of Jesus Christ on earth. It is an integral or whole in reference to its particular members, but in reference to the rest of the Church it is but a member.

*Argu. 2.*

Again they say, that every whole is really distinct from every part, and from all the parts collectively considered. They are constituting, that is constituted.

*Ans.*

*Ans.* So I may say of all the visible believers in the world, they may in consideration be distinguished from the whole, and all the members of the body from the whole, because they constitute it: but they being all the constituent members joined in an unity make up the whole-constituted Church or body: and therefore that argument was no better then a fallacy. For I can say the same of all the members of a Congregation both publick and private, they are distinct from the whole, for they are constituent, and that is constituted: but as they are united they are one constituted Congregation; so are all the visible private Christians and Ministers united, one universal visible Church: In consideration indeed they may be distinct, yet by political conjunction in the political Kingdom of Christ they are one whole.

Again they say, there is no universal meeting to worship God, therefore there is no universal Church. *Argu. 3.*

So neither is there ever a meeting of all the subjects of a Kingdom or Common-wealth to do homage or service to their Sovereign, but they all obey him *diversim* in their places, or some smaller conventions, and yet they are a whole Kingdom or Common-wealth nevertheless. *Answer.*

*Object.* But the word *ekklesia* is never used either in a civil, or sacred sense, but *propter conventum*: and *totus est à consensu*.

*Ans.* *Ekklesia* properly signifieth a calling out, and not a calling together: And in a sacred sense it signifieth a people called either out of the world, as the invisible Church is, or from Idols as the visible Church is. The members thereof are *ἐκκλησιᾶς*, persons called out; and *ἐκκλησίαι* and *ἐκκλησιᾶς* are *conjugata*, and they relate to, and argue one another. The particular Congregation is rather *ἐκκλησία* in the strictest sense in reference to their meeting together, then *ἐκκλησιᾶς*.

So *ἐκκλησία*, whence the Scottish word Kirk, and our English word Church comes, properly signifieth the Lord's people. And this notion becometh people not primarily because they are of this or that Congregation, but because they are of the Kingdom of Christ, and have given their hand to the Lord. And the word *ecclesia* and *congregatio* more properly respects them that as they meet together in an Assembly. Heathens may *coire* come together

ther, even into a sacred Assembly, but because they are not *sum-  
101* called from their Idols to Christ, they are not part of the  
Church, though they be parts of the Assembly.

Argu. 4.

Again, they say, there are no distinct offices appointed for  
such a distinct Church, therefore there is no such Church.

*Ans.* Though there are no distinct officers of the univer-  
sal Church besides the officers of particular Churches, or ordina-  
ry Ministers of the Word, yet every Minister hath an indefinite  
office, which standeth in relation to his imployment, which he may  
put forth any where in the whole Church, as occasion serveth,  
and he hath a call thereto, which is equivalent to a generall  
office.

Every Minister of the Word hath power *in actu primo* to dispense  
the Word and Sacraments, to pray and bless the people in any sa-  
cred convention, though the members of that Assembly be not  
members of any one particular Congregation, and though the Mi-  
nister himself be not fixed to, or set actually over any particular  
Congregation. And that meeting shall be a sacred convention, not  
only in respect of the Ordinances of Ministers, but in respect of the  
members of it, because they are all the Lord's people *in actu* and  
*in actu* in the proper & primary sense, and the Lord's Ambassa-  
dor designed to that imployment. The body of the whole Church  
being so great, and consisting of persons of several Countries, and  
languages, and under *several* civil governments, hardly at variance  
between themselves, it was not convenient, nor scarce possible to  
have any constant ordinary actual officers of the whole, but that  
is saved by their habitual power of office, which may be drawn  
forth any where in as oft as occasion serveth.

Argu. 5.

Again, they say, there is no Church greater then that which  
hath the power to hear and determine upon offences committed  
in the Church, but that is particular, *Mat. 18. 17.* which place  
say they, if it meaneth the Congregation, it includeth all other,  
if it meaneth any other it excludes the Congregation.

*Ans.* I shall let M. Parker answer this argument, who saith in  
*Pol. Eccl. lib. 3. p. 255.* although he hold particular Congregations  
the prime Churches in reference to Synods, yet groundeth that those  
general or greater Assemblies for discipline upon this text, yet  
*gradatim, & per sequelem rationem, & per sequelem rationem, &*

I noted in my *vind.* 463. And this appears by the gradation in the text from one to two or three, and from two or three to the Church, and if the Church cannot end it, as sometimes they cannot, then by the like manner of reasoning it is to be referred to a greater number of Elders convened.

For doubtless Christ did not mean by Church the body of the Church; but the Elders, for the body of the people never had any right of judicature among the Jews, nor in the Christian Churches, though I suppose some of our brethren would infer so from this text. And it is very probable that our Lord Christ speaking to the people of the Jews, spake to them in their own dialect, of Courts then set up, where there were appeals from the three Judges to 23, and from the 23 to the Sanhedrin or seventy one Elders. For Christ had not then instituted any Christian Congregations or jurisdictions; and if Christ had spoken of what was not in being as the people he spake to could have no relief thereby, so they could not understand him. Now if primarily he meant the three Judges or Rulers of the Synagogue, yet that did not exclude the 23, and if he meant primarily the 23, that did not exclude the Sanhedrin; so in Christian jurisdictions, which for the general nature were to be like the Jewish, though not in every particular circumstance, the bringing a cause to a Congregational Eldership excludes not the Classis, nor the Classis a Provincial Synod. Though the Jewish police was not long after to be pulled down, and the Christian to succeed, yet it was not then pulled down, but stood *jure divini*, though many of the persons in those offices were corrupt, and the people as yet were bound by Gods law to make use of them, and be determined by them. Our Lord Christ sends the cleansed Lepers to the Priests to offer for them, though they were generally wicked. And in his sermon, *Mat.* 5. 22. he clearly alludes to their present judicatures.

Afterward the same Authours except against the definition of the office of the Ministry set down by the Province of London, in their *Jus Divinum* &c. Because they make it a relation to the whole employment of the Ministry. But whether you call it right or power, or authority given them by commission, or what general nature or notion can be put upon it, it is certain it was in relation to the whole employment of the Ministry, as they well

clear it up. That was the subject wherein they had power by their office or function to deal, and be exercised in. *To them was committed the word of reconciliation.* And therefore the Ministerial office is set out in Scripture thereby, *Luk. 1. 2. Act. 6. 4. 2 Cor. 3. 6. 1 Thes. 3. 2.* as I noted more at large in *vind. 233.* And though there must needs be an object, viz. persons to whom they are to administer the Word, yet that object in their commission is not set down in Scripture to be particular Congregations only, but *go teach all Nations and baptize them, &c. and lo, I am with you always to the end of the World, Mat 28. 19, 20. And go ye into all the world, and preach the Gospel to every creature, Mar. 16. 15.* And so likewise administer the other Ordinances to them when you have made them capable of them.

And the Argument which those Brethren insist upon from *relat.* is of no force; for though as they are particular Ministers of such a flock, indeed that particular relation ceaseth, if the flock ceaseth &c. but the generall relation to the whole remaineth, so that there is a correlate object still as long as there are any believers that stand in need of edifying by their office, or any meer visible believers, or their children or servants that stand in need of instruction, exhortation, reproofe, or internall conversion, &c. And if all those should cease, yet they shall find objects for their Ministry, as long as there be any reasonable creatures under heaven; as *M. Norton* in his answer to *Apollon. pag. 81.* wel observeth, where he saith, that when they preach to heathens it is a ministerial act in regard of the dispenser and administrator: *Habent Ministri potestatem Ministerialem non Ecclesiasticam erga universum mundum, & erga omnem creaturam.* And therefore he pleadeth that the Ministers have Ministerial power *in modo debito erga omnem Ecclesiam,* Or else saith he, the heathens should be in better case then the neighbour Churches, if it were Ministerial preaching to them, and not to neighbour Churches. He saith, no duty of Ministerial acts of office in other Churches is to be denied, p. 82. so it be regulated.

When *Paul* and *Barnabas* were called forth by the holy Ghost, *Act. 13.* and sent out with fasting and prayer, and imposition of hands to go to the heathen; was it a Ministerial work which they performed, or a Charitative? If a Ministerial work of their office,



office, then not only the particular Congregation, or the universal Church, but the very heathens are the object of the Ministerial office, as it is an office.

The Scripture speaking so indefinitely of the office of the Ministers, under the name of Ministry, makes it appear that their office related to the imployment or subject thereof, & not only to a few persons in Congregational Covenant, or particular mutual union with them. See *Ab. 20, 24, and 21. 19. Rom. 12. 7. 2 Cor. 5. 18. Eph. 4. 12. 1 Tim. 1. 12.* And hath not the Minister the same subject and object that the Ministry hath, seeing the Ministry is committed to him.

If a Minister of the Church in *England* should baptize a converted Jew, Turk, or heathen; he doth not do it as a Minister of a particular Congregation, or of the Church in *England*, but as an Indefinite Officer of Christ, to whom he hath committed that employment: and so the office reacheth that forreigner, not as a member of the Church in *England*, for so he never was, and haply never will be, but as a new subject added to Christ's visible Kingdom.

Secondly, I shal shew that the universal Church is an integral, and not Church *in genere*.

But before I enter upon this Chapter, which hath been opposed in print by *M. Stone* a reverend Minister in *New-England*; it will be requisite for me to premise something in general, and then answer his particular Objections against the several arguments as they lie in order.

It was mine unhappiness to fall into the hands of two reverend Divines, whose principles of Logick, and especially concerning *Genus*, were different from each other; and so while I proved the universal Church to be no *genus* according to the principles and express grants of the former in his *Vindicia Catholicæ* which I cited, who was an *Aristotelian*; the other understanding *genus* in another sense, being a *Ramist*, opposeth my arguments, denying the *Aristotelian* principles, which the former went upon and granted; whereas it was sufficient for one to prove the universal Church not to be a *genus* by his own principles whom I answered.

So it fareth with me, as I have seen it with a Country man in

In a crowd, who being stricken a box on one ear, and turning himself to see who struck him, and so defend himself on that hand, was stricken by another on the other ear, and so was fain to turn again to defend himself on that side also. M. Ellis took *genus* to be a logical or metaphysical abstract non-existing notion, as he acknowledges in print, and upon his own grant: I dealt with him; M. Stone taketh *genus* to be an existing being, appearing, and shewing his face in every individual, whether we see it or no, and thereupon disputes against my arguments, otherwise then M. Ellis could have done, and so put me upon a new Vindication, by denying the principles upon which my arguments were built, which principles the former granted freely. If I had thought the word *genus* would have met with such opposition, I should have set down my meaning more warily, and for *genus* have set general, or in *genera*, or in general consideration, which was my meaning, and so be whom I answered understood it, and M. Stone might have seen that was my meaning also. The paucity of words, and multitude of things is the cause why the same word is used for many things, and so is taken in a different sense, and so it falls out in the word *genus*, for sometimes it signifieth a Stock, Linage, Parentage, Kindred, or Family: as M. Stone in his Treatise, p. 2. from *Ast.* 4.6. and *Phil.* 3.5. notes. And sometime it is taken for that common nature which existeth in the individuals, as humane nature in *Peter* and *Paul*, and *animal* in man and brute, &c. And sometime it signifieth an abstract notion arising from this community of nature, or a thing in *genera*, or general consideration, and in that sense M. Ellis took it, and so I formed my arguments in his own sense. But concerning the existing *genus* which M. Stone speaks of, I cannot see how it can agree with the definition which himself giveth of it out of *Ramus*; which is, *Genus est totum partibus, i. e. specibus offensibile*.

For that which doth exist, existeth in some individual, and there is neither a *totum* or whole, nor essential to the *species*. It is not a *totum*, for *Totum est quod habet partes*: indeed it may have its parts, that is members, as it is an integral, but the parts of a *genus* are his *species*. The existing *animal* that is in *Peter* is more general whole, for it is but a part of *Peter*, and hath no species under

under it. The truth is, it is an essential part of *Peter*, for whereas *totum continet suas partes*, that animal in *Peter* is wholly contained in *Peter*, and holden there by *Peters* form; and as soon as *Peters* form left him, that animal was gone. Again, *totum est majus qualibet parte*, but *Peter* is *major hoc animale*, he contains the animal and more than it. Hence *Downam* upon *Ramus* saith, *hinc apparet genus speciei & totum & partem esse, totum quidem predicatione, & communi significatione, quâ species continet: pars vero si ad constitutionem respiciamus.*

Now the giving essence, or being essential to a thing respecteth the constitution in every existing thing. *Boëthius* also saith, *Genus in divisione totum est in definitione pars. Species contra, in divisione pars est, in definitione totum.* Neither is that genus that existeth in an individual *partibus* i. e. *speciebus essentiali*, for it giveth its essence to that individual, and hath no influence upon any others, when those men and brutes that are now alive die, then die those physical existing genus's indeed, but the logical abstracted genus of them dyeth not: the physical individual genus's are renewed by generation, but the logical genus of them is not generated but abstracted, and is the same from the beginning of the world to the end: it ever was, and ever will be a true axiom, *homo est animal rationale.*

Here *M. Seane* helpeth himself with a distinction of genus in *actum signato* & *actum exercito*, p. 7. I know not well what he meaneth thereby, or how he will apply it to the cause in hand. But *Scheibler* in his *Metaph.* l. 1. c. 14. art. 5. saith, *Apprehenditur res in actum signato, cum concipitur sic, prout communi definitione signatur, & sub proprio signo i. e. nomine apprehenditur. In actum exercito apprehenditur cum concipitur aliquid non communi, sed particulari, dimisso communi nomine.* So that it layeth aside his common name and notion of a genus in *actum exercito*, and is but an integral under it. *Jacob. Martin.* in disput. 2 metaph. thes. 60. saith *Actus signatus vocatur a singularibus abstractus. Actus exercitus est actus in singularibus multiplicatus i. e. in individuals and integrals under that kinde.* And further *Scheibler* giveth this instance to clear it. *Genus predicatur de specie. Hoc verum est, loquendo de eo in actum exercito, non in actum signato, hoc est genus predicatur de specie non sumendo communes notiones, sive nomina generis & speciei, sed particu-*

*lavia exemplis*, which particular examples are the integrals under that kinde.

But this distinction will not help him; for if *genus in alio ex-*  
*erente* be not a totum or whole, but a part, and be not *essentiale*  
*speciei* but only *uni individuo*, then it is not *genus*. If the defini-  
 tion and notion of *genus* cannot agree to it, it is not *genus*. The  
 definition of *integrum* agreeth to every example of an *integrum*, it  
 is a whole made up of his members, but the definition of *genus* a-  
 grees to none of those which he calls examples of *genus*. Is that  
 it wanteth or loseth its universality, it wants and loseth its  
*genus*; and its difference or form: for the very essence of *genus*  
 (by his logick) is to be a whole, and to give essence  
 to its *species*. It hath but a piece of the *genus*, and a piece of the  
 form: it hath *integrum naturam generis, non universalem*, as M. Stone  
 saith p. 4. and *Richardson* out of whom he had it saith the same.  
 Then if it hath only the integral nature, and not the universal,  
 it hath it not as it is a *genus*, but as it is an integral, for the na-  
 ture of *genus* lyeth in the universality, which the individual hath  
 not. Though there be an *Ear*, substance, body, and animal in  
*Peter*, yet they are not individual as *Peter*: and the *Ear*, substance,  
 body, and animal in *Peter*, differ every way as much as the hu-  
 manity in *Peter* differs from that which is in *Paul*, or as *Petrus*  
 differs from *Paulus*, or *Socraticus* from *Platonius*, so use his own  
 expressions. *Socrates* consisteth of *hoc Ear, haec substantia, hoc cor-*  
*pus, hoc animal, and hic homo*; and so all these kinds are under  
 contraction and individuation. *Quicquid est in Socrate fingatur*  
*est. Ponsoe. Metaph.* Take all the individuals of one sort that  
 ever were, are, or shall be in the world, and you cannot make  
 one totum universale of them, but by abstraction, & *abstrac-*  
*tionis & denudationis*, and so by the minde you may draw them to  
 an unity, and make a totum of them, for there is a foundation  
 layd in the individuals for such an abstraction, but no formal  
 general nature or unity; you must divest them of their existence,  
 and individuality first. There is not *Ear*, or *substantia*, or *corpus*,  
 or *animal* in *genus*, or general consideration existing in any one  
 man, or in all of them, but as they are abstracted. *Plato non est*  
*homo in genere &c.* Put many sticks together, and you may make  
 a faggot or cart-load of them, but not make wood in *genus*, yet,  
 put

put all the wood in the world together, and you may make a great heap and integral of them, but you cannot make wood *in genere*, but by mental abstraction, and that a man may do from a little as well as a great deal. *Genus* is another thing than all the individuals gathered together. *Genus* is not by conjunction, apposition, or aggregation, but by abstraction. *Peter* or *Paul* may say, this is my entity, my substance, my body, mine animal, my humanity, as well as my *Petrinity*, or my *Paulinity*.

It is true a man may abstract, and as it were cut out a *genus* or general nature out of the individuals, and consider that alone because there is a foundation for it, and a potentiality; so a workman when he fetches a piece of Timber may conceive in his mind, that if such and such parts were hewn and plained or carved away, there would be an Image of the *Virgin Mary*, or a crucifix, &c. yet no man will say that there are any such existing Images there, for then it were fit to be burnt. So the Chymist saith, that *Salt*, *Sulphur*, and *Mercury* are in every thing, and boasteth that he can extract honey out of *Album graecum*, but they are not formally there, but may possibly be extracted by the dissolution of those things; so by mental dissolution or abstraction a man may fetch a *genus* or general out of individuals, but it is not formally in them. It cannot be denied but the object of the understanding precedeth the act of it, but it never findeth it existing, but it is contracted by an individual, and to draw forth the general nature, the understanding pareth off the contracting differences by abstraction, precision, or detraction. *Apprehenduntur universalia, non apprehensis ullis particularium differentiis. Fomsec. Metaphys.*

But I conceive that there is a great difference between *animal genus* and *animal in genere*; between an existing *genus* and that thing considered *in genere*. The individual *animal* existeth, but *animal in genere* existeth not but in the understanding. There is existence in every thing, but where dwells existence *in genere*? Concretes exist, but where do abstractions exist? I will not contend whether universals be *entia reuera*, or *entia rationis*, because there is a foundation for them *in re reall*, but they are not formally one but by abstraction.

Indeed in reference to other *genus*, a *genus* is capable of numerical unity; *There is one genus*, and substance is one *genus* &c.

but in reference to particulars existing under them, you cannot say there is one *genus* in *Socrates*, and another in *Plato*, for numerical unity in the strictest sense is proper to individuals as integrals.

But I will not contend with M. *Stone* about these notions of existing or extracted *genus's*, I shall leave it to younger heads which have been more lately versed in those studies. But if you take *genus*, for the existing *physical, political, mathematical, or artificial genus's* as M. *Stone* doth, then it is impossible to deny any thing in the world to be a *genus*, for it is of one kinde or other. And by that notion every integral is nothing else but a cluster of *genus's* bound together by the last individual form: and so we may make every thing not onely a *genus*, but a heap of *genus's*; and so a man hath more *genus's* in him, then he hath limbs, senses, and faculties. For there is *Ens*, substance, body, vivens, and animal besides humanity: and then every limb, and sense, and faculty, have limb, and sense, and faculty kinde in it.

There is head kinde, and foot kinde, and arm kinde, and leg kinde, &c. and after his constitution, he is dressed up with nothing but *genus's* from head to foot. And by the like reasoning every thing should be as full of *genus's* as ever it can hold. M. *Stone* could not think that I did deny this sort of *genus* to be in the universal Church, for I clearly expressed so much *Vind.* p. 82. "Indeed if you consider this society or religion, it is a distinct kinde in regard of the Authour, laws, qualifications of members, but in reference to its members, it is an integral. If this be all that is meant by *totum genericum existens* it may passe without any dammage to this question. So the severall companies in *London* are distinct from other companies, yet in reference to their own members they are integrals, and in reference to the whole City they are parts, *i. e.* members.

But all this dispute on which side soever it be cast, hurts not my question at all, though it may seem to strike at this Chapter of arguments, which were taken from grounds which were granted by him against whom I then argued, we both by *genus* meant a thing in *genere*, or *general consideration*, and to that sense I framed my arguments, and then comes M. *Stone* and disputes from an existing *genus in alia respectu*, that hath neither the *genus* nor form

form of a *genus* in it, and he strikes at my arguments by that which is not *ad idem*. If M. Ellis's *genus* and M. Stones were put into a syllogism, there would be four terms, for they are not the same, and had I argued with M. Ellis from an existing *integral genus*, he would have thought me wilde. And therefore this is but a *logomachy* about the word *genus*, one takes it in one sense, and the other in another. I clearly layd down my meaning in the explication of the question: for *chap 1. sect. 3.* I gave different senses of Catholick or general. "First, the Orthodox Churches  
" were called catholick Churches. Secondly, the Patriarch  
" Vicar general was called catholick. Thirdly, Catholick is ta-  
" ken for a logical-second notion abstracted by the minde, com-  
" prehending diverse different *species* under it (in which sense  
" M. Ellis took it.) Fourthly it is taken in the same sense that  
" we use to take Oecumenical, and I took the latter sense, and  
" therefore put Oecumenical into the terms of the question: and  
" said there, that in the question in my sense the Church-catholick  
" existing on earth at the same time is compared with particular  
" Churches existing at the same time also, *pag. 11. 12.* And in  
denying this Catholick Church to be a *genus*, I took *genus* in the third sense as M. Ellis did.

And I shall a little more plainly set it down now. The question is, Whether the whole company of visible believers in the whole world, which is the one visible Kingdom of Christ on earth, and is usually called the Catholick or universal Church, being considered in respect of the particular visible believers in the particular Nations, Towns, or Congregations, be the *genus* of them, or a great integral whereof they are but members. Here was the hinge of the question handled in this chapter. And the thing that made the doubt was the diversity of the use and signification of general and particular. For sometime general refers to *species* and particulars under it, and then it is called *genus*, or that thing *in genere*. And sometime general is taken for a large integral, as when we speak of a general Court in a Corporation, and a general summons, a general meeting, a general muster, a general humiliation, a general pardon, our general calling, a general Covenant, the general judgment, &c. These phrases are not meant of these things *in genere*, for they are so many individuals, but in respect of the

the extent of the subject or object of them. And you may as well make the general Covenant a *genus* or *Covenant in genere*, as the generall Church to be a *genus* or *Church in genere*. It is called the general Covenant, not because it is *Covenant in genere*, but because it reacheth all the members of the Church, and they are entred into it; and so the universall Church is called general, not because it is *Church in genere*, but because it is made up of all that are entred into that general Covenant, in the whole world. So that as the general Covenant is one individual Covenant, so the generall or universall Church is one individual Church or society, whereof particular Congregations contain but parcels of the members.

And sometimes particular relates to a general, as a particular man, a particular horse, to man or horse *in genere*, or the general nature of them; and in this sense it is true, *Omne particulare habet suum generale*. But sometimes it relates to an integral, and signifieth a member; as a particular room in a house, a particular street in a Town, a particular ward in a City, a particular drop in a measure, a particular sand in a heap, a particular man in a Town or Family. And so we say the particulars in a bill, or sum, or bundle, so many, and then sum up all in general so much: the particular Brigades or Regiments in an Army so many, and then cast up the Army in general so many. Now because all the visible believers in the world, both Officers and private Christians are called the generall, and in that sense the universall and Catholick Church, and those that live in severall Countries or Congregations are called particular Churches; the question is whether general or universal as it is given to the whole Church or political Kingdom of Christ on earth signifieth a *genus* or *Church in genere*, or an integral: and whether the particular Churches are to be accounted *species* of that general, or members of that integral.

But then comes M. Stone and neither affirms nor denieth the whole visible Church to be either a *genus* or general, or an integral; nor the particular Churches to be either *species* or members, but starts a new hare, and saith, that a Congregational Church is a Catholick Church. That is to say, as I conceive, because every particular Church is a Congregational Church, and



and Congregational Church may be predicated of every particular Church, therefore Congregational Church is the *genus* of them all. He dared not make the whole Church to be a *genus* of the particular Churches, and he would not make it the integral.

And whereas I had proved *chap. 2.* that there is an universal visible Church, and that it is one, I expected that either it should have been denyed that there is such an universal Church, or that it is one, or if it be one, then to have it declared whether it be one generically, or one integrally and numerically; but M. Stone waves them both, and saith, a Congregational Church is a Catholick Church, and so puts a surreptitious question in the room of it. Whereby he doth implicitly grant what I affirmed, that the whole universal Church is not the *genus* of the particular Congregational Churches, but Church *in genere* or general notion.

It is true if we refer a street, or ward in a City, or a Brigade or Regiment in an Army, to Street, Ward, Brigade or Regiment *in genere*, they are particulars under such generals; but if we refer them to the City or Army whereof they are parts, so they are members. So if we refer particular Congregations to Congregations *in genere*, they are particulars; or, as you will have it so, species, or individuals rather of Congregations *in genere*, but if we refer them to the whole Church they are members thereof. And it cannot be denyed but particular Congregations may, yea must bear relation unto both.

And by the same way of reasoning that he makes a Congregational Church to be a Catholick Church, a man may make a particular Church an individual Church, a Church that is one numerically to be a Catholick Church, for all these may be predicated of every Congregational Church, and that essentially as they are such. And so a man may say an individual man is a Catholick man, an individual horse a catholick horse, an individual house a catholick house, an individual eye a catholick eye, an individual foot a catholick foot, because individual may be predicated of all these, and that essentially as such. And so we may make *his home* to be the *genus* of all the men in the world, because it may be predicated of every man. And so we may see in-

individual, and *unum numero* above *Ens* the highest *genus* of all, because every *Ens* is individual and *unum numero*, if it doth exist. And so *genus* shall be a pretty *Proterus*. *Omnia transformat sese in miracula rerum*. And every man shall be an individual particular general Catholick man.

There is a second thing about which M. Stone bestoweth much pains in his book to invalidate this chapter, and that is to prove that *individua* are *species*. I am not willing to contend with him about the *logomachy*, and the rather because though it crosseth something said in this chapter, yet it invalidates not the cause at all.

That there is an essential predication of that which Logicians call *species infima*, and he *genus infimum* upon the individuals, so that it doth the office of a *genus* thereunto cannot be denied, and therefore as it respects the individuals it is called *species predicabilis*, as the other, as they respect the superiour *genus* are called *species subiectibilis*, *Burgesd.*

For the Logicians carrying the name *species* no lower then abstract natures which have some universality in them, though the lowest that may be and nearest individuals, did not account individuals to be *species*, for though universals may be distributed lower and lower into less universals; yet are not, in their opinion distributed into *species singulares*, or into several integrals, which are a *totum* of another opposite nature. But they conceive *genus* to be *natura universalior sub qua alia minus universalis continetur* *Keckerm.* and *species* to be *natura universalis alteri universaliori subiecta*: and the lowest *species* to be that which hath obtained the lowest and utmost perfection among the universals *ultimum universalium*. And indeed there is a difference between *species* and *individuum*. *Quamvis species conservari potest in uno individuo, genus tamen non potest conservari in una specie*, *Burgesd. 45.* So that as M. Stone confesseth that *animal* was not a compleat *genus* untill man was made, yet man was compleat as soon as *Adam* was made.

Again, they say that *species* *homo* *perfectior est genere, sed individuum non est homo perfectius sua specie, i. e.* man is more perfect in regard of essence then animal, that is, hath a further perfection added to him then was in animal, yet *Socratus*

is not more perfect in essence then man in general. The *species* hath the integral nature of the *genus*, and besides that it hath an essential difference perfecting it, and thrusting it on a degree further, but the individual hath no such essential difference added to the lowest *species* to perfect that, or thrust it on further, but the *species essentiam ejus absolvit*; it hath nothing but individuality and existence added, whereby it becomes an integral; there is no essential perfecting part found in one that is not found in another, but only the soul and body of *Peter* is not the soul and body of *Paul*. And for ought I know he may make the animal, substance, and *Ens* in *Peter*, differ as much from the animal, substance, and *Ens* in *Paul*, as the humane nature in *Peter* from that which is in *Paul*, seeing they are all alike under contraction, as well as the humane nature, and so make several *species* of them also.

*Genus* is like a Bell that ringeth out, and strikes on both sides, and so *Ens* or being in general strikes double, it is either *primum*, vel à primo ortum; à primo ortum is double, *substantia*, vel *accidens*; *substantia* is double, *corporea*, vel *incorporea sive spiritualis*; *corporea* is double, *simplex*, vel *mista*; *mista* is double, *vivens*, non *vivens*; *vivens* is double, *vegetativa*, vel *sensitiva*; *sensitiva* is double, *homo*, vel *brutum*; and then you are fallen as low as universals go, which the Logicians commonly make the lowest *species*; and then the Bell, as it were falls into a single touling of individuals, which are strokes of the same side, and man soundeth *Peter*, *Paul*, *John*, *Robert*; so that the peal of *genus*'s that struck double before, at last when they are fallen as low as they can fall into a single chime, strokes on the same side: and individuals differ no more from one another, then single strokes of the Bell one from another.

*Genus* bears twins which are opposite, nay contrary one to the other, and so struggle in the womb, like *Esaü* and *Jacob*, of two contrary natures, hairy and smooth, but the lowest *species* beareth only single Children of the same nature.

If a man in his mind travels from *Ens* or being which is the highest *genus*, he finds it divide presently into two opposite ways, one as it were on the right hand, the other on the left, viz., sub-

stance and accident; if he will trace the one way *viz.* substance, he findes it presently divided again into two opposite ways; *viz.* Corporeal, Spiritual; if he traceth Corporeal, he findes it divide again immediately into simple, and mixt; if he traceth mixt, he findes it divide into that which hath life, and that which hath none; if he traceth that which hath life, it divideth immediately into vegetative and sensitive; if he traceth sensitive, it divideth immediately into man and brute; now if he will trace man, he findes him no more to divide as the former into opposite perfecting differences, thrusting that nature on further, but he goes on from generation to generation, still the same in kind and essence, like a right on path, that goes further and further, but divideth not into cross paths. Or to make the similitude more full, it leadeth him out into a plain or heath where are many ways to ride a brest in, but they all come from the same head, and lead to the same town: and these are the individuals which proceed from the lowest species, but divide not into lower differing perfecting species. So that though they agree with other species, in that they are comprehended by something more general, and that is predicated on them, yet they are not predicated upon any inferiours; they may be cut in pieces into members, but not distributed into further perfecting distinguishing essential forms.

So that call individuals, species, or what you will, yet you see they are not like other species.

And to prove them to be species, M. Stone makes them not *diversa quæ sola ratione differunt*, *i. e.* though all men have humane nature, yet they are not the same: But *opposita quæ re & ratione differunt*. And truly if it were ever true of men, it is true in our age, where almost every man is opposite to each other; *Quot homines, tot sententiæ*. But this is not an essential but accidental opposition. And though he cannot make them contraries, *Quorum unum uni oppositur*, yet he makes them *Disparata*, *Quorum unum multis pariter oppositur*. By reason of their distinct forms and essences: well, be it so, but then he must make two or three kinds of *Disparata*. For formerly we were wont to account things that are under divers genus's to be *disparata*, as *humus*, *arbor*, *lapis*: or intermediate different species under the same genus, as yellow, blew,

blew, green, red, under colour, as M. Stone acknowledgeth, p. 26. But by this opinion the several yellows, blews, greens, and reds, are each of *disparata* to themselves, and so are opposite to themselves, though dyed in the same farr at the same time. And by the same reason he may say that every thred of a cloth both warp and woof of the same cloth are opposite colours, and every *punctum* of every one of those threds are of an opposite colour. I should rather have said that they are *similia*, and that *unum multis pariter assimilatur, potius quam oppositur*. But I shall let him enjoy his notion, because it hurteth me not. He yieldeth the consequence of this opinion p. 23. that there are so many *species* of water, wine, or milk, as there are drops of them in the whole world; and so a hundred thousand *species* of water in a pail full of water, and these have all opposite essential forms, and yet are similar; which is as much as to say, they have similar, opposite essential forms, *Gravia bella fratrum*.

But what if the individuals be *species*, yea to many *genus's*, yea comprehend a bundle of *genus's* in the belly of every one of them, as by this Logick they must. Will this be any hinderance that many of these individuals may be brought into one integral?

Suppose every brick hath brick-kinde, and body-kinde, and substance-kinde, and *Ens*-kinde in it; yet may not an hundred thousand of these bricks make one brick-house; and a hundred thousand tiles make one tiled roof; and a thousand pieces of timber make one timber-house; and many individual men be in one family, one town, one army, one Kingdom, or Commonwealth? So may many individual visible believers be in one Congregation, and many Congregations of them bee in one Classis, and many Classis in one Province, and many Provinces be in one Nation.

And all the Christian Nations in the world be one universal visible Church, and that be an integral.

When the first Gospel-Church (which might be called general or Catholick in contradistinction to the National Church of the Jews; and because then the partition wal between Jew and Gentile was broken down, and the comission issued forth for teaching all Nations and baptizing them) grew too big to meet in one

place for all Ordinances, it divided it self into many less Assemblies, called, though improperly and as second hand, Churches, yet then this division was of an integral into its members, not of a *genus* or general into its *species*.

I acknowledge the matter of the visible Church militant universal, or visible Kingdom of Christ on earth, to be the particular visible believers, and the external form thereof to be their joint submitting unto Christ's regiment and laws under his Officers where they dwell, but this whole Church when it comes to be divided, it is considered according to the places where those members dwell, either in *England, Scotland, Ireland, or New-England, &c.* and so receive particular denomination from those places; but this division is of an integral into its members, as the parts respect the whole, and of adjuncts into their subject places if they be considered in reference to the places wherein they are contained.

Look at the Church *in genesi*, saith M. Cawdrey, *vindic. vindictarum*, 72. and the single members are the causes thereof as an integral, but look on it *in analysi*, in the distribution of it into Congregations, and so it giveth essence unto them, and they are parcells of that greater integral. Though in the constitution of an integral the parts are before the whole, as the essential causes thereof, yet, in the distribution the whole is before the parts, *Cawd.* p. 82.

And whereas I had proved that the universal Church is not a *genus* or Church *in genere*, because it doth exist, or hath an individual existence of its own, which a thing *in genere* hath not, *vind.* p. 79. l. 8. To this argument M. Stone answers, by affirming that *genus* doth exist. But when he comes to prove it, he proves only that the integral nature of the *genus* doth exist in the individuals, and leaves us from them to abstract the *genus*, which is an universal, but proves not that the universal doth exist any where, but in the mind of man, or Angel. Now as it doth exist in the several individuals, it is contracted, and is an integral, and must be loosed from his contraction by abstraction, before it can be a logical *genus*, or that thing considered *in genere*.

This is as if he should say, as it is an integral it is a *genus*, which he confesseth differs very much. There is that which may be ab-

stracted

abstracted, but it doth not exist as abstracted but as contracted. So I may in my minde consider a prisoner that is bound with many chains, without his chains, and so a free-man, but I dare not say he existeth a free-man. I can abstract a man from his riches, learning, piety, nobility, that is endued with them, but I cannot say he existeth so. Where a thing *in genere*, or general notion, or general consideration doth exist, but in the understanding, I, as yet know not.

Moreover as such a nature doth exist in individuals, it is manifold, but as I have abstracted it, it is but one. As it doth exist in individuals each differ from other (as Mr. Stone acknowledgeth) *re & ratione*, and by his own Logick all those individuals are opposites, and so dissentanies, now *dissentaneum est quod à re dissentit*, but one is not a dissentanie, much less an opposite to itself. Now *genus* is one, because it is *totum quod habet partes*.

Therefore you must divest it of existency, before you can consider it as a *genus*, or general, or thing *in genere*.

And to apply it to the whole Church in reference to the members of it: the whole Church hath an existence of its own, as an integral, being *individuum*, as Ames confesseth, but as Mr. Stone's *genus* hath no existence, but in the *species*. The existence of the whole Church resulteth from the conjoined existence of the members, but the existence of a *genus* is abstracted from the *species*. The whole Occumenical visible Church hath no *species* or individual Churches under it, whereof it's the *genus*; but is made up of individual visible believers, and then divided into several pieces or parcels, which we call particular Congregations. Like a piece of ice divided or marked out into many little pieces; the great piece of ice is not the *genus* of them, but the integral, and they are the members. Though the whole Ocean were frozen it would make but a great integral, and the several parcels thereof members.

But it would not be the *genus* of those parcels, for ice *in genere* is the *genus*. A pail of water is not the *genus* of the several drops that are in it, but is an integral, and they are members, but water *in genere* is the *genus*. A heap of sand (though there were no more sand in the world but that) is not the *genus* of the particular sands in it, but sand *in genere*. So the universal Church is not

the *genus* of particular believers, but believer *in genere*, nor of the particular Congregations, but Congregation *in genere*.

And whereas I had said in my second Argument *vind. p. 79. l. 30.* that *Quod habet partes extra partes est totum integrale*, M. Stone denies it to be a true definition. I answer I had it out of *Burgesdicius p. 47.* and I conceive he defines it so in opposition to that which he calls *totum essentiale, quod constat ex materia & forma*, for there the parts do *mutuo se pervadere, & loca, & finem non differunt*, as the soul and body in man; but the parts of an integral *quâ* integral do differ in both. But to make the Argument pass his exceptions, I shall change onely one word, and in that change only express *Burgesd.* his meaning more clearly. *Quod habet membra extra membra est totum integrale, sed ecclesia universalis visibilis habet, &c. Ergo.* The universal Church hath its members one distinct and severall beside and without each other, whether you consider them to be particular believers, which are the prime members, or Congregations, &c. which are secondary.

And whereas I had said in my third Argument that the whole Church is made up of the visible believers in particular Congregations, and of such as are not fixed members in any particular Congregation, *vind. p. 80. l. 17.*

M. Stone answereth, That individual Christians which are not members of any particular Congregation, are not formally political Church-members. Now if by political Church-members he means actual members of this or that particular Congregation it is true, but they are political members of the Church-Catholick visible, for they have taken Christ to be their King, and his laws to rule them; they are enrowled by baptisme, and attend on Christs Ordinances, and subject themselves to his Ministers, where they become, though some occasion may not suffer them to be fixed in a particular Congregation. They are political members of Christs visible Kingdom primarily, by being members of the Church-Catholick, the membership in particular Congregations is secondary, and but accidental to the former. He saith they are members *materialiter non formaliter*, because they are not confederate. But I answer, they are confederate *i. e.* in Covenant with Christ the head and King of the Church,



Church, and confederate with the members in the general Covenant, into which they are entred, and any other Covenant or confederation to constitute a political Church-member I finde none in Scripture, neither scrip nor scrawl. And I conceive all Congregational confederations and Congregations, to be but accidental to the universal Church, by reason of the numerosity of its members, for could we conceive that all the members of the whole Church could meet in one place, and partake of the same numerical Ordinances orderly, the meeting in several places should cease.

The woman of *Canaan* which *M. Stone* instanceth in, by being a visible Saint and believer, though she was not formally thereby a member of the Jewish Church, as he saith, yet was she a member of the Evangelical Church, and that compleatly if she were baptized, If not baptized, then but incompleatly, and *matters-aliter*.

The place which is brought by *M. Stone* to prove the Apostles to be fixed members of the particular Church in *Jerusalem*, *Act. 1. 2. 3. 13. 14.* proves it not, but onely that they abode in *Jerusalem* untill the coming down of the holy Ghost at Pentecost, to enable them to discharge their Apostleships, but then they travelled over the world, and joined in Ordinances with the Churches which they converted, as Officers administering both word and seals, and were no more fixed members of the Church of *Jerusalem*, then of any other Church where they became. They were never dwellers at *Jerusalem*, but men of *Galilee*, only staid a while at *Jerusalem* upon occasion.

And whereas I sayd in my fourth Argument, That the Church universal is not *genus*, or Church in *genere*, because it hath accidents and adjuncts existing in it as its own, *vind. p. 80 l. 28.*

*M. Stone* affirmeth that a *genus* is capable of inherent accidents as its own, *p. 35.* and more largely *p. 21.* with a wonder at me for that opinion. But I must cleave to mine opinion, as I meant it, for all that he hath sayd against it. For I have proved that we must divest the integral of the *genus* from its existence, before it can be a *genus* or thing in *genere*, and divesting it of existence we must necessarily divest its adjuncts from existence also. Now as *animal* in a man furnished with all his adjuncts and accidents doth

doth exist, it is *integrum animal*, it is not *animal in genere*. It is true we abstract the proper accidents with the nature, and say they belong to that nature primarily, as visibility to humane nature, but visibility existeth only in an integral man. No man ever heard *homo in genere* laugh. And in a Logical abstract sense I granted *vind. p. 106*, as much as M. Stone contends for; but if *homo in genere* doth not exist, visibility *in genere* doth not exist neither. But the Oecumenical Church is not Church *in genere*, neither doth M. Stone think it is Church *in genere*, and yet *p. 35*, he doth grant a Church *in genere*, and saith that the particular Churches are *species* of it. Now should Church *in genere*, and Oecumenical or Catholick, or Synholick Church, as M. Stone calls it *p. 40*, in which sense I took it, and it is usually taken, be brought into a Syllogism together, there would be four terms.

Again, whereas I said in the prosecution of this fourth Argument, that the universal Church cannot be a *genus* or Church *in genere*, because it is capable of being *major* and *minor*, of greater or less extent, *vind. p. 81. l. 11*. To this M. Stone answers, that a *genus* is capable of being *major* and *minus in actu exercito*. Mankind is capable of increase, virtue shal increase at the calling of the Jews: and sin may increase, because the particular virtues and vices may increase.

I answer, the question is not about *genus in actu exercito*, for that properly is not *genus*, but an Integral under that *genus*.

And there is no more put into the definition of man then *animal rationale*, now there are hundred Millions of men in the world then there was when there was but one man: so there is no more put into the definition of Church *in genere* now it consisteth of Millions of visible believers, then there was when it had far fewer members, the Integral is enlarged indeed, but not Church *in genere*. Though a Giant be *major homo*, yet he is not *magis homo*, and though a dwarf be *minor homo*, yet he is not *minus homo*.

So for virtue and vice there is nothing more put into the definition by the increase of them, and therefore they have no other definition then they had at the lowest ebb; now the definition explicates the essence of the thing. The habits of virtue and vice

vice may grow stronger, but *gradus non variant speciem*, they may be in more subjects, but that varies not the *species* neither. So that *genus* being *unum, consistit in indivisibili*: take away either *animal* or *rationale* and you spoil the definition of man: and for you can add nothing to the essence of it more than is in it, unless you put a further perfecting distinguishing essential form, and so make a new *species* below man. The majority or minority of a thing respects the members, and so is ascribed to it as an Integral; either continuous magnitude as in man or brute, or discrete as in *species*, by the multiplication of members, and this is the case of the whole Church, it may grow greater or less as the members are multiplied or decreased.

Also whereas I said in the prosecution of the fourth Argument that the whole Church is not a *genus*, or Church in *genere*, because it is mutable and fluxile, which are accidents of an Integral only, vind. p. 81. l. 24.

M. Stone answers this Argument by affirming that *genus* may be mutable, *Totum genus plantarum & brutorum* is mutable and fluxile.

I answer, that the Integrals under each of those generals is mutable and fluxile, but still the *genus* of them, or things in *genere* is not so.

There is nothing taken out of the definition of it by the change or death of the individual Integrals under those generals, nor nothing added by the renewal of more.

*Object.* It may be objected, that in this sense no Integral is mutable neither, because the definition of it is not changed, though the individual Integral be changed or perish, and be extinct.

*Ans.* I answer, That every individual Integral is an example and instance of an Integral, and hath the definition of an Integral belong unto it, but every individual existing *genus*, or *genus in actu exercito*, as M. Stone calls it, is not an example of the *genus*, much less the thing in *genere*, for the definition of *genus*, cannot agree thereto, seeing a *genus* is an universal, and that is but particular, yea an individual of, or under that *genus*, and so is but an Integral. If any essential part of an existing Integral be changed then it is not an Integral of the same kinde it was,

and so the peculiar definition of it must be changed; yet still it is an Integral.

There cannot in propriety of speech be an example of the same genus, because it is but one, but there may be many examples of Integrals under that genus, and they indeed are mutable and fixable, as they are Integrals that exist. How can an individual man be an example of *genus humanum*, since, by his own logick, it is but the lowest species, & species est pars generis, and pars est quæ continetur à toto, therefore a part cannot be the whole; nor an example of the whole. And to speak properly, if you would give an example of a genus, you must give an example of an universal, not of an individual e. g. *Ens* is a genus, and substance, and accident, and spirit, and body, and animal, &c. considered in the general nature of them. And if you will call individuals species, then is man in general consideration a genus, but you must not bring an individual man to be an example of man in general; which is an universal. I say, an individual is no instance of an universal, it hath integrality in it, but no universality. *Universalia sunt perpetua quæ per se ipsa nec giuntur nec intereunt. Philosophia Metaph. l. 5. c. 8.*

And whereas I had said *vind. p. 80. l. 30.* in prosecution of the same Argument, that the whole Church is not a genus, or Church in genus; because it is measured by time and place. *M. Stone* saith p. 11. that genus as well as integrum is an existing thing measured by time and place.

I answer, that the integrals not such on such a kinde, or under that general, are indeed measured by time and place, but the kind considered in genus is not so. My question was, whether the whole Oecumenical Church existing at the same time, be Church in genus, or a great integral consisting of many members.

But how particular time and place comes to take a measure of Church or man in genus; I as yet perceive not. As it was not drawn from the universal Church of one or two or ten ages; so it is not measured by them; so that though this or that Church ceaseth, yet all the members of that whole Church that are now existing should dye, and the whole Church consist of new members, yet Church in genus ceaseth not, neither is altered, unless you will say that the whole time of this world takes a measure of

of it, because it shall exist in this kind no longer than this world endures. Though individuals under a *genus* be Corporeal, yet the universals of them *non sunt ex iis corporeis quæ per se hoc & tempore subiecta sunt, ut per se ipsas ligatæ ad se ipsas possunt, sed per* Ponsæus, *Actus. l. 5. c. 28. qm. 2.* They are only individuals, and so Integrals that are eyed to *hic & nunc*.

And whereas I had proved the whole Church to be an Integral because there is admission into it, nutrition and edification of members in it, and ejection of members out of it, *wind. p. 82. L. 19.* "M. Stone saith p. 9. that a *genus* is capable of admission, nutrition, and ejection. *Animal* admitted man and beast under his wing. A man at birth is admitted into mankind, so is a lion and a horse into their kind when they come into the world, and by death are excommunicated out of that kind.

I answer, the Integrals of such a kind are admitted and ejected, but not the universals; every Integral must be of, or under one kind or other; if indeed there were a new creature made, differing in kind from all creatures that ever were made, then were there a new *genus* admitted into the world, or if any of the former kinds were quite destroyed, then were a *genus* ejected indeed. But by adding the word member admitted, nourished, edified, or ejected, this Argument is put beyond his exceptions: and this is the case of the whole Church, there are members continually admitted and edified, and sometime by censure ejected; therefore it is an Integral; for member and Integral are *id est*.

And whereas I said in my sixth Argument, that the whole Church militant on earth at the same time is not Church *in genere*, because it is capable of Officers, and had once several Officers over it, and hath still Officers that are indefinitely and habitually *i. e. in actu primo* Officers to the whole, *wind. p. 82. l. 23.*

"M. Stone answers, that a *genus* may be capable of Officers. "Every complete Ecclesiastical society or Church is furnished with Officers; But *Episcopus* Congregation is complete entire Church, or a complete Ecclesiastical society; therefore *Episcopus* Church is furnished with Officers, p. 30. And thus he endeavours to make out, p. 33. And there he collect, that an individual Church is a *species*, as I respect Church in *genus* under which

"it is comprehended, and yet as it contains members it is an Integral.

"Hence it is that every individual Church contains members, because it is an *integrum*, and yet it is a *species* as it stands in reference to a Church *in genere*: Hence also a Church *in genere* may be said to have members and Officers in it, not considered under the nature of *genus*, but because the *species specialissima* containeth members, it is an *Integrum*.

And whereas I had said a *genus* is not capable of Officers, he answers: "It is true *in actu signato*, but that which is *genus* comprehending the *species* and individuals which contains members, may in that respect be said to comprehend members and Officers.

Ans. I am glad to see M. Stone at length finde out the notion of a Church *in genere*, a Vine *in genere*, a body *in genere*; I hope it may prove a clew to help us out of this Labyrinth. But how doth this vine *in genere* give essence to the individual vines, or this Church *in genere* give essence to the particulars, or this body *in genere* give essence to the individuals? Surely not by generation (except by generation *in genere* also) but because the entire nature existing in an individual vine, Church, body, giveth essence to it; so that it will follow, that the entire Integral existing nature comprehended under these kinds gives essence to the individuals, and not those natures in general consideration, or *in genere*. And therefore either *Esper* hath not given us a right definition of *genus* (as some bating Logicians then I conceive) or else he giveth a definition only of an existing integral nature of a *genus*, which is onely an Integral of or under such a *genus*, and so hath passed by the topick of a thing *in genere*, or general consideration *in abstracto*.

But then I argue, that if that which is *genus* comprehends the *species* and individuals which contain members, may in that respect be said to comprehend members and Officers, then the *genus* and *integrum* are all one; for the *genus* hath members, yea, principal members, even Officers as well as *integrum*, saith he. But here M. Stone helpeth himself with a distinction, and saith, this is not as considered under the nature of a *genus*, but because

the species *specialissima* contains members as it is an *integrum*. And I desire to make use of the same distinction also, and say, that the Officers are not Officers of it as it is a *genus*, or as it is considered *in genere*, but as it is an *integrum* under such a *genus*. And so let me strengthen all my former Arguments against which he hath so much excepted, by his own distinction, and say, that the existence of the whole Church, the having *membra extra membra*, the having existing accidents, the being *maius & minus*, the being mutable & fluxile, the being measured by time and place, the admission, nutrition, edification, and ejection of members, and the doing, actions, and operations, betide to the whole Church, not as considered under the notion of a *genus* or Church *in genere*, but because it is an *individuum*, and so an *integrum* under such a *genus*.

The same existing thing being considered in several respects, may be a cause, an effect, a subject, an adjunct, a consentany, a dissentany, an *integrum*, and a *genus* in M. Stone's sense, *in actu exercitio*, but it cannot be that thing *in genere*. The whole universal Church in reference to Society or polity in general is a *species* or individual, but in reference to its members both private and publick, it is an *integrum*.

But before he leaves this Argument, he adds a suppliment to make his answer full, pag. 36. viz. "That there are no habitual Officers in the Church, all Officers in the Church are actual, habitual Officers are *non ens passibilia, quod non est, sed potest esse*."

I answer, that they are all actual Officers, and might, if they were able and had a call, officiate in any part of the Church; and do actually serve the whole Church, by admitting members into it, and watching over a company of the members of it in their own places, and administering Word and Seals in many Congregations, yea Counties, and sometimes many Nations, but exert not the exercise of their power to the extent of the whole Church actually, in every part of their office.

So Justices of the Peace for the County do not ordinarily execute their Office in every Town of the County, and yet have power by their Commission, if they could do it, and had a call thereto. But as watch-men in particular wards do safe-guard

the whole City as well as their particular wards, though they stand not in every part of the City, and are called the City watch-men; so do Christs Ministers serve the whole Church in their particular places, though they cannot reside, or act in every place of the whole Church, but could do it in regard of the extent of their office and commission, if they had ability of body and mind, &c. a call or opportunity. I mean not by habitual power that which is never drawn into act, but the power in one officer is not drawn into act in every part of the Church, nor in every part of the exercise of his office. And the lett is not any want of power by their office, but want of ability in themselves, and of call and opportunity in the severall places. And so they divide that full execution of their office among the officers, and spiritual watch-men of this City of God, and some take care of some places and members of the whole Church, and others of other actually, for order and convenience sake, and their better edification.

And whereas I had said in my seventh argument *und. p. 84. l. 8.* That the whole Church is an integrall, because it hath actions and operations of its own, for a thing considered *in genere* is not capable thereof.

“ To this *M. Stone* answers, that a *genus* is capable of actions  
 “ and operations of its own, because *operatio sequitur esse, & ens*  
 “ *non ens agit.* A *genus* hath properties and qualities, and therefore  
 “ can act; where there is no *verbum* there can be no *verbum*,  
 “ but that is the end of all being *p. 21. 22.* It is true *sic* the  
 “ Church Catholick hath actions and operations of its own;  
 “ and that it exists and acts its individualls, yet his properties are  
 “ his own, and so likewise are his operations. *p. 36.*

I answer, that these actions and operations are properly the operations of the integrall under that *genus*. Now because all the integralls of that kind have those operations, therefore they are attributed in notion to that *genus*, and said to belong thereto, but that thing *in genere* operates not, but in the individualls or integralls under it. But the whole Church may, as I have proved, act in one and the same individuall act, as a City or Kingdome may do, therefore it is one integrall. A *genus* or general may act, as it may be said to have members which are the instruments



Instrument of actions; but as himself confesseth, that though the members be in the *genus*, or comprehended under the *genus*, yet they respect it not as a *genus*, but as an integrall, so I say the operations are the operations of such an integrall of such a kind, and not of the *genus* as a general. The generall in *abstracto* worketh not any *way* or *wayward* (except notionall) but the integralls work them.

And whereas I proved in my eight argument: *vind. 88. l. 8.* that the whole Church is one integrall, by the severall appellations given to it in Scripture, as Body, *Σύνοχη* Kingdom, tabernacle, house, building, temple, army, sheep-fold, wheat-field, &c.

“ M. Stone p. 33. saith, that these and such appellations are  
 “ indeed firstly, and properly appellations of an *interrum*, having  
 “ analogy to *totum integrare*: but saith he this *totum integrare* is  
 “ *species specialissima*, or every individuall Church being *species*  
 “ *specialissima*, is also an *interrum*; and containeth members, and  
 “ the *genus* comprehending all his *species* under him, it compre-  
 “ hendeth the individuals with all their members under it, or  
 “ within it self. Hence those appellations which are given to an  
 “ individual Church are given to the Church in general, &c. If  
 “ a Church be a body, then this or that individual is a body, and  
 “ all the members of it are *Σύνοχη*, one and the same body, of  
 “ one and the same Corporation.

I answer, that then it will follow that the whole Church is firstly and properly an integrall, of or under such a kinde, viz. Society, or polley, because those appellations are firstly and properly meant of that, and of particular Congregations but at second hand.

For first men are drawn into that, and into Congregations as a secondary and accidental thing, containing but parcels of the members of that great society, or polity. It is clear that *Σύνοχη* is not meant in Scripture of a particular Congregation, but of the whole Church consisting of Jews and Gentiles entred into the Kingdom of Christ.

We finde not a particular Congregation called the body of Christ, for then Christ should have innumerable bodies, who hath but one, in the same kind, and that sely join'd together and

compacted by that which every joint supplyeth, Eph. 4. 16. which M. Hooker, as I said before, calls the external political Kingdom of Christ. Neither are particular Congregations called the Kingdoms of Christ, for then he should have many Kingdoms, in the same respect, whereas the Church militant is but one, consisting of many members. And Christ tells us the wheat-field is the world, and not particular Congregations. If a King hath many Kingdoms, Cities, or Armies, though he speaks of things that concern them all, and all alike, he doth not say my Kingdom, City, Army, but Kingdoms, Cities, Armies. If a man hath many fields, houses, floors, netts, loaves, and speak of that which concerneth them all, he doth not say my field, house, floor, nett, loaf, but in the plural number, as of many: so would Christ have done if he had spoken or meant it primarily and intentionally of many Churches or Congregations, but he bindes them up in the singular number, because he meant but an Integral by all those terms, and the particular Congregations are but parcels thereof; And differ no more, then when a cart-load of wheat is put into diverse sacks, whereof every one contains several parcels of the load, because it could not conveniently be all put into one, which though severed is accounted as, and sold for one load of wheat, and when it is shot out maketh but one heap. Or as a great common field divided by several meers or banks, or a great meadow into several acres by dools, or marks, and so one man cutts and tends one acre, and another another, but these hinder not the integrality of the whole, much less do they make the whole meadow the *genus*, and the parts of it the *species*: so neither do the accidental and secondary differences between particular Congregations hinder the integrality of the whole Church, much lesse make that the *genus*, and them the *species*.

A ninth Argument I brought to prove the whole Church an Integral, was from the severall words which the Scripture useth to expresse the union of the members of the whole Church together, as *added, builded together, fitly framed together, compacted, all the body by joints and bands knit together*, &c. *vind. p. 87. l. 18.*

To this Argument M. Stone, p. 36. giveth the same answer, that he did to the former Argument.

But

But it is clear that the phrases are meant of the whole Church primarily and immediately, and not of particular Congregations.

This adding, joining, jointing, and building of the converted ones is first to the Kingdom, Body, and House of Christ; and there is no other essential form added to them beside Christianity, by being severed out *partiatim*, by parcells into several Congregations; that is a most accidental thing to them as Christians, brought in by convenience, and necessity. Particular Congregations are but as several ridges in a wheat-field, which hinder not the integrality of the whole field at all. As the dwelling of several men in several Towns in a Kingdom or Commonwealth, which Towns contain only some parcells of the subjects of that Kingdom or Commonwealth hinders not the integrality of the whole, though they be under particular officers for civil affairs: no more do the distinction of visible Christians, into several Congregations under several particular officers for Ecclesiastical affairs, hinder the integrality of the whole Church. First, men are subjects or denizens of the Nation or Kingdom, and then have liberty according to their conveniences to live in what petty society they please. So, &c.

Though a man should have several houses in never so many Counties or Towns, and at sometime or other resort to them all, and dwell for a time in them, yet this varies not his membership of the Kingdom or Commonwealth, being merely accidental to that relation. So, &c.

It cannot be denied but that the several Congregations are integrals in reference to their own members, and so is any village in reference to the inhabitants, but in reference to the whole Church or Kingdom of Christ they are members, as the villages are of a Kingdom, or Commonwealth.

How many bodies politic, and societies in a Nation are members of the greater body politic and society of that Nation: so many less bodies Ecclesiastical make up the greater body Ecclesiastical in a Nation; For it was foretold that the Kingdoms of this world should become the Kingdoms of our Lord and of his Christ, Revel. 11. 15. The Ecclesiastical polities in converted Kingdoms, are said to be commensurable to the civil. And by the same rea-

son all the Christians in all territories on earth make up the whole Church or whole visible Kingdom of Christ in the Christian world, because it contains all the members thereof, who are Christ's subjects.

And whereas M. *Stane* saith, p. 37. that Baptism is a priviledge of a political member, as Circumcision was a priviledge of the members of the Jewish Church, *Gen. 17.* Those *Act. 2.* were admitted into the Church, and then baptized.

*Answ.* It is not said, they that were admitted into the Church were baptized, but they that gladly received his Word were baptized, *verse 14.* so that Baptisme admitted them into their first relation, and that was into the visible Church.

Neither can it be absolutely said that Circumcision was a priviledge of the Jewish Church, for the second person, *Issmael*, that was circumcised was not of it, nor any of the other Children of *Abraham*, by *Kezarah*, nor *Esan*, and yet were circumcised. Can wee thinke that *Job* and his friends so eminent for piety, and who sacrificed to the true God with acceptance were uncircumcised?

And were all those nations among whom they were chief men, if not rulers, which were of *Abrahams* posterity by *Kezarah*, and of *Esan's* stock, heathens, uncircumcised? The very name of *Elibu* sheweth the contrary, which significth my God is *Jehovah*. So that it is more then probable that these were religious persons and Countries after *Abrahams* time, beside the Jews, if not before them, as M. *Baxter* hath well observed in his treatise upon Infants Baptism, and these no doubt were circumcised.

It's true Religion did not very long continue among them, as among the Jews, but God would not have cast off them, if they had not forsaken him.

I grant that the seal of admission is to be given to none but such as are in covenant with God. But what covenant? The generall divine covenant, or the particular humane covenant? Surely into the generall covenant with God. Then many thousands baptized by *John*, and Christs disciples, and the three thousand in *Act. 2.* were indeed in covenant with the Christian Church of

of the Jews before baptism, because the Church was then Nationall, but by this new sign they were admitted into the Evangelicall Church by a new and Catholick seal, to which their former standing gave them no right. And though as *M. Stone*, saith Obligation with the initial seal of Baptism implyeth confederation, and admission into the Church, yet it implyeth not confederation with this, or that, or any particular Church, or admission into it. Though *Saul* was baptized by *Ananias* at *Damascus*, yet was it not as confederate either with the Church at *Jerusalem*, or *Damascus* whereof he had been a bitter persecutor, but as a Convert to Jesus Christ,

And though haply *Cornelius* *Acts* 10. might be confederate with the Jewish Church, being a Proselyte, yet we know of no such confederation of his kinsmen and near friends mentioned *vers.* 24, who were Gentiles, and yet were all baptized. Neither do I think there was any implicite covenant to bind the Jewish Church together, or the Proselytes to the Jewish Church, besides the divine general covenant with God, and yet for ought I know it had been as requisite for the members of every Synagogue as for particular Congregations now, seeing they were liable to censures there,

With what particular Church were the *Samaritans*, and *Simon Magus* confederate *Act.* 8. 12? who were a little before bewitched by *Simons* forceries, yet upon *Philips* preaching unto them, and their conversion unto Christ, they were baptized both men and women; the witch, and the bewitched.

Surely *Samaria* was not confederate with *Jerusalem*, they did not love one another so well: neither was there any instituted Church (as the new phrase is) as yet in *Samaria*: neither was it a Congregationall Church, but the whole City with one accord: neither were there any particular officers set over them then, neither could they enter into a particular Church covenant, as it is called, untill they were baptized, the generall covenant must precede the particular, and therefore were in no capacity to choose any officers over them, and yet they were baptized, and therefore baptism is no privilege of a particular politicall Church-member, but of the general. And with what Church was the *Juglone* or *Philippi* and his rude family in covenant? *Act.* 16. 33.

who was a russianly heathen. Yet being converted at midnight, was baptized the same hour of the night, without asking leave of the Church there, if there were any.

And for this particular covenant, though *M. Stone* saith p. 37. that it is a covenant not only between man & man, but also between God & man. But *quoniam?* where is the institution of it, or any hint of it in Scripture? It may be a promise before God, but not between God & them; but between the people among themselves, & between the people & their Minister. The first and general covenant is between God and man, and is of divine institution, but the second and particular is but humane and prudentiall, and therefore cannot divolve any such priviledg upon people unless the Lord had instituted it to that end. The universal Church is the whole politicall visible kingdom of Christ on earth, and the visible belevers are the matter thereof, and these believers are converted, or, at least, initiated into it by Christs officers, not under the notion of particular officers, but as Christs Ministers and Ambassadors, *to whom is committed the word of reconciliation*; and are bound by their generall covenant to believe what God hath revealed, and obey what God hath commanded. As a Denison of England is bound to obey the Lawes of England, by being a subject thereof, and then these subjects are placed in several towns under particular civill officers, but no particular covenant is required of them to make them severall villages, which for ought I know is as requisite as a particular Church covenant. And those towns consist of English subjects, but they are not bound to the laws, because members of those towns, but because subjects to the sovereign power of the whole nation. So Christians are bound to perform obedience to Christ in all their relations and places, as subjects to Christ, and not by a particular covenant, except Christ had instituted any such, as between man and wife, and there they are bound by both.

*M. Stone* bringeth two Enigmaticall places to prove this covenant to be between God and man. *Zech. 11. 7. 10. 14.* Of beauty & bands. And *Isa. 62. 5.* *As a bride-groom rejoiceth over his bride, so shall thy God rejoice over thee: and as a young man marrieth a virgin, so shall thy sons marry thee.* But I can find no evidence or hint in either of these places for a Congregationall Covenant. No nor

in all the instances that are usually given, *viz.* Gods Covenant with *Abraham*, but we know that was the generall covenant between God and man, and not Congregationall. And the covenants made in the days of *Asa*, *Jehoshaphat*, *Hezekiah*, *Josiah*, *Nehemiah*, are nothing to the purpose, for they were not Congregationall, but renewalls of their National Covenant with God, and they were the Church of God. before they renewed this covenant, and not constituted by the renewall of it.

Neither doth *Act. 9. 26.* which is alledged some, prove it. It is said indeed that *when Saul was come to Jerusalem, he assayed to joyn himself to the disciples, but they were all afraid of him, and believed not that he was a disciple.* But this joyning him to the disciples, was to have communion and society with them, and not to be a particular Church member there. It is not said he assayed to join himself to the Church, as a member, but to the disciples, much lesse is any particular covenant mentioned there.

But as if one that was known to be an Apparitour, or Pursuant, or Persecutour in the Bishops days should assay to join himself with private Christians in converse, or some private meeting, they would be afraid of him; so was that case. But before that journey to *Jerusalem*, *ver. 15.* it was shewed them, and by Christ to *Ananias* that he was a chosen vessel to bear Christ's name before the Gentiles and Kings, as well as the children of *Israel*. And therefore might not join with the Church at *Jerusalem* neither as an officer or private member. Neither is it mentioned to which of the Congregations in *Jerusalem* he assayed to join himself, whereof no doubt there were great store, seeing they had not great publick houses to meet in, but private houses onely, but it was to the Disciples or Christians there.

Others bring a proof for this way from *Isai. 42. 16.* *I will bring the blinde by a way that they knew not, I will lead them in paths that they have not known: I will make darkness light before them, and crooked things straight.* But this will not prove it, but may as well serve for any way that men can fancy. They may as well prove themselves blind by this text, as prove a Congregational Covenant from thence.

Others argue that Church-relation is not a natural relation but a voluntary, and therefore must be by a Covenant or mutual agreement.

\*A man say they will be my brother or kinsman whether I will or no, because it is a natural relation, but it is not so in this relation.

I answer, so a man being born within the Church will be a Church-member by federal holiness, and so a brother in a spiritual sense whether I will or no, being in the general Covenant. O! but say they, how can a woman become my wife, or a man become my servant, but by a voluntary Covenant? *Ans.* no more can a man or woman of age be a Christian, or member of the whole Church, but by being in Covenant with Christ the husband and Lord of his Church, but what is this to a Congregational Covenant between member and member? Do servants when they enter into a family, or souldiers into a band or troop, make one covenant with the master or captain, and another with their fellow-servants, and fellow-souldiers? If haply they should covenant together to be faithful in their places, and helpful one to another, and this should tend to the great advantage of the master, or captain, and benefit of each other, yet this is not that which makes them that masters servants, or that captains souldiers, but the covenant with the master, or captain. Neither doth any master or captain require any such secondary covenant between his servants or souldiers, and yet it is a voluntary relation, they enter into, but it is voluntary in respect of the master and servant, the captain and souldier, not in regard of the fellow-servants, and fellow-souldiers, that falls in necessarily.

O! but it is voluntary what particular members I will join withall in a particular Congregation, I may choose of what particular society I will be a member.

*Ans.* so I may choose in what Town in a Kingdom I will dwell, but I must take the inhabitants thereof to be my fellow-neighbours necessarily.

So all the Churches of Christ ever took the Christians cohabiting with them within the civil bounds, to be their fellow-members of those Churches.

The Church of *Jerusalem* consisted of the Christians inhabiting in *Jerusalem*, and so it may be said of *Corinth*, *Ephesus*, *Philippi*, &c. they did not pick and choose some out of one vicinity some out of another. If any were heretical or scandalous they had censures to remove or amend them.

New



Now our civil bounds for Towns and Vicinities have been anciently set for civil transactions, and cannot be by particular men altered, but by authority; and if all the Inhabitants within those limits be in the visible covenant with Christ and under his seal, and have publick houses or Churches, as they are ordinarily, but tropically called for publick worship, and a maintenance appointed out of the revenues of those Towns to maintain a Minister over them, and have a Minister of their own set over them, to whom, and his predecessors the Christians of that precinct have from generation to generation submitted in the Lord, and enjoyed Gods Ordinances from them, I cannot see how without breach of order, and removing the ancient land-marks, and introducing confusion, any particular member either of that Town or Church can of their own heads alter this, and pick Church-members whom they list, and where they list, and bring them into a particular Covenant to make a new particular Church, under colour to make a pure Church.

I believe all the Church-members in *Jerusalem, Corinth, Phsippi, &c.* were not really godly, but many only externally, and many very loose, and guilty of foul faults, *1 Cor. 11. Tit. 1. 26. 2 Tim. 3. 5. Phil. 3. 18, 19. Jude 12, 13, 16.*

Yet they did not leave them out, and institute new Churches of choice members, but sought to reclaim them. I scarce think all the members of the Churches in *New-England* are really godly, or so judged of their Pastors or fellow-members, and yet they do not pick the good from among the rest, & make new Churches of them, but keep the particular Churches still answerable to the civil bounds. It is a bad way of cure to cut off the sound members from the diseased, and unite them together in a new body.

It's true the civil bounds are heterogeneal to the Church, but so they were in *Jerusalem, Corinth, Ephesus, &c.* and yet they bounded them then, and denominated them, and so they do still in *New-England*; and so the several shewres are to the severall Seas, yet they bound and denominate them also. Indeed if Towns and Churches were to be constituted, they might have other bounds and quantities allowed them, and so might the Towns in *New-England* have, for there is no precept left in the

word to limit either of them, but the Churches would be comprehended in those towns : this is not to measure Churches by the acre, as some foolishly object. But we have both precept, example and necessity requiring that the Churches should be in a vicinity, and not scattered abroad, so as the cannot conveniently meet together publicly on the Lords day, or watch over one another.

Yea, say some, if Churches were rightly constituted at first, we ought not to separate from them, or gather Churches out of Churches, but ours were not so.

*Ans.* I here are three things that I hear objected against our constitution of Churches : First, that it was not voluntary, but forced by authority.

*Answer,* The members were not forced from heathenisme to christianity, but they became christians many generations ago voluntarily, for ought I know : and for reforming of them, their predecessours, or successours, either from Popery, which was a spirituall leprosy over-spreading the Church, or any other superstition, and reforming of them by authority and compulsion, I think it is no more then the Magistrate might, yea ought to do, and the godly Kings and Rulers in the Old Testament did, and were commended and blest for doing. Indeed a man cannot regularly compell a woman to be his wife against her will ; nor a man compell another to be his servant, or apprentice, but if they have once bound themselves by marriage, promise, or indenture, they may compel them to hold so, and to obey and reform themselves. So is the case between Christ and his visible Church.

Secondly it is objected that we are not fit matter for a Church, and therefore not fit to be made Churches, or to be joined with all.

*Answer,* was there not as unfit matter in the Jewish Church before Christs coming, and yet the Church for the essence of it was the same then and now ? yea was there not as unfit matter in the Churches in the Apostles time at *Corinth* and *Phillippi* &c ? see the texts before named, and tell me if we have worse matter then there was, and yet what the Gospell there saith, it saith to them that are under the Gospell. Give an instance of any man or woman that ever professed beleeve in, and subjection to Christ in all the

the New Testament that ever was denied admission into the visible Church, or that was cast out merely for want of the power of godliness. The Apostles instructed, informed, reproved, and sought to amend them, and if they were heretically, or notorious and obstinate, excommunicated them; and that we allow and could heartily wish were still done, and hope may in due time.

Doth a shepherd turn the diseased sheep out of his flock quite, and feed only the sound ones? no, he is to *strengthen the diseased, and heal the sick, and bind up the broken, and bring again that which was driven away, and seek up that which is lost*, Ezek. 34. 4. Indeed it is requisite he should separate the scabbed and diseased from the rest for a time, lest they infect the rest, and then having cured them to put them together into the same fold. Ministers are sent to *the lost sheep of the house of Israel*, as Christ commandeth; *Mat. 10. 6.* and not to feed the sound ones only that went not astray: and what manner of people Christ means by those lost sheep, I need not tell you, such I believe as many in our age would have passed by, as the Priest and Levite did the wounded man in the parable, or counted goats rather than sheep.

Yea but the members of the Churches in the New Testament that grew so corrupt, did not appear so at their admission into the Church.

*Ans.* We know they were new Converts to the faith of Christ, and immediately admitted by baptism, even by thousands of a day, and that when they were men grown, without any strict enquiry of the truth of grace in them, and without any waiting for experience of their godly conversation.

*Philip* baptized *Simon* the Sorcerer after his profession of his belief in Christ, who yet was in the gall of bitterness and bond of iniquity, and of all men one would have thought he should have been well tryed first, but was not.

And the Apostle saith of some members in the Church of *Corinth*, that they had not the knowledg of God, he spake it to their shame. Surely if they had had it at their first admission into Church, they would not have lost it afterward, under the Ministry of their teachers. Indeed they might corrupt in manners, or in judgment, but not lose their knowledg, and grow sottis.

But there is a great deal of difference between a Church at the first constitution of it, when possibly they may pick choice members, as they did at first in *N. E.* when they went over thither, men converted by the Ministry in Old England before they went thither; and a successive Church in after ages, which consist of a new generation, and seed of the former, *atque parentum peior avis, tulit nos nequiores, mox daturos progeniem vitiosorem.* The Churches succeeding the Apostles age were not so pure as in the Apostles times, and yet then they were bad enough: and I fear the succeeding Churches in *N. E.* will not prove altogether so pure and eminent for sincerity of grace and holy conversation as their first were; and yet our brethren do not hold that corrupt members in such a successive Church doth unchurch them; and alas that is our condition in this nation, the Lord in mercy reform and amend us.

Thirdly it is objected against us, that we are not rightly constituted, because we want an explicate Congregational covenant; and so the true form.

*Answer,* Thus you see I am enforced to return to speak of the Covenant again.

But I answer, that all our Brethren for the Congregational way do not unchurch us for want of that; and I think I may clear our Brethren in *N. E.* from that aspersion: and some of our Brethren at home who have lately written, require but a mutuall agreement for joint worship of God, and I am sure that may be found in our Congregations, and both have been, and might be more, but for these new scruples put into their minds.

For my part I am not against an explicate Covenant in our Congregations, but wish they were as willing to it, as they are in many places willing to come to an agreement with their Ministers for their tithes, if they can get advantage thereby, as most what they do abundantly. For by such a covenant, I conceive they should be more bound to their Ministers, as well as their Ministers to them, and it might haply be a means to cause them to submit the better to our instructions, reproofs, admonitions, inspection and discipline; but I dare not stamp *ius divinum* upon it, neither do I find any hint of it in Scripture or primitive times, and therefore cannot believe there was any: but that they stood bound.

bound by their general Covenant to submit to the Ministers that were set over them in the Lord, in their several places. Neither dare I think it is that which gives people right to Gods Ordinances, nor that it can divolve such a privilege upon the members that enter into it, to invest them with the power of the keys, to admit members, make officers, to invest and divest them, and have all Church power radically in themselves.

I know M. Stone doth not make it the form of a particular Congregation, but the *Cement* rather; but truly as it is used or abused rather, by many about us, I fear it will prove but untempered mortar. For first people are so eager of it, that some people will join with Antipædobaptists, Millenaries, and sit monarchy-men, or any sect so they may but be in a covenant. Secondly, it is raised up as a partition wall between them and all the rest of the Churches of Christ (though they be in implicate covenant, and agreement together, and with their Pastors) so that they will not communicate with them, though never so religious, reformed, and eminent Congregations, nor suffer any of them, though never so godly and so acknowledged by them to communicate with themselves. They will not baptize any of our children, nor suffer us to baptize any of theirs: nay they will not so much as stay to see any of our children baptized, if they be occasionally at a Lecture where any such child is to be baptized, though they know the parents be very godly, and the Minister bee godly that is to baptize them, and though there bee nothing offensive in the manner of administration of Baptism, but run out, as if the Church were on fire over their heads. Thirdly, as it occasioneth the breach of many marriages that else would be suitable, so it many times causeth great breaches after marriages between man and wife, even to the antichristianizing, or at least to the unchurching one of another, and causeth jars and alienation of affections, and vain janglings and disputes, and unchristian heats and animosities instead of sweet Christian love, unity, and communion, and mutual edification. Fourthly, it exceedingly hinders family-duties, that they can neither join so cordially together in prayer, having such sinister thoughts one of another, nor yet in Catechizing of their families; nor calling over the Word publicly taught, or calling

children and servants to an account for what they have heard publicly, because one runs to one Town to the publick Ordinances, and another to another, and one draws some of the family one way, and the other another. Fifthly it is used as a means to enthrall the members that are entred into it, so that though they marry out of that Town, or remove their dwellings out by necessity or for convenience, and dwell never so far distant from them, yet must they remain members of that Congregation, and may not join with any other Church, without their leave and dismission, which they will not give, except that Church with which they would join be constituted, or instituted, as the new phrase is, by an explicite Covenant, as sad experience hath proved: nay, are not permitted to join with a Congregation, though never so eminent for godliness and reformation; no, not though the person acknowledge, not only the Minister to be godly and eminent, but also the instrument under God of the work of grace in him formerly.

Yea it is accounted no less then spiritual adultery to depart from them after they are thus joined, without their dismission, which they will not give, except to a new instituted Church of the same kind.

If it be such a snare, it is good for single persons to keep out of that bond untill they see how and where God will dispose of them by marriage: and for married persons to get as long leases of their farmes as they can, and keep their yoke-tellows as long as they can, for, if they dye, they lay a great bar in their own way against a second marriage, except to one of their own Church, or one of like constitution. I do not conceive that God ever bound any man or woman to such inconveniences, onely they must not marry, but in the Lord, saith the Apostle; nor yet do our brethren in *New-England* put any such yoke upon the Disciples necks, as far as I understand; neither do I think a brother or sister is in bondage in such a case, but this use or rather abuse is made of this Covenant by some in our Country.

It is a harsh censure which *M. Sam. Mather*, a young man as I hear, hath given against such as are not of his judgement in this point, in his preface before *M. Stones Book*, "As if the dread-

“dreadful revenges of God, either for personal pollutions, or for  
 “sinfull compliance with former devices, or wayes of men in  
 “the things of his house, or for secret contempt of the simplici-  
 “ty and power of the Gospel, are gone forth in penal blindness,  
 “and other blasting strokes, upon the souls of some in these  
 “times.

As if this were the very pattern shewed in the Mount, and the very fashion and form of the house shewed to the Prophet Ezekiel, Ezek. 43. 10. 11. as is there intimated. But we pray you is it a pattern revealed in the Word of God, or by inspiration onely? If it be set down in the Word of God, we beseech you be pleased to shew it unto us, and point us to the texts of Scripture that hold it forth: we hope some of us desire to fear and serve God in truth, as well as among you. How many worthy Martyrs, Ministers, and eminent Christians have dyed for the faith, and in the faith, and gone to heaven, before either M. *Mather*, or this Covenant were born; were they all stricken with the dreadfull revenges of God in penal blindness and blasting strokes? I believe our brethren will not say so.

And if this Church-Covenant hath no better effects elsewhere, then it hath in these parts, as I shewed before, truly it were better it never had been devised, or were made. *Nehemiah*.

M. *Stone* calls the Universal Church, *Totum genericum existens*, as M. *Hooker* did also in his book; of which I said vind. 40 that it is nothing else but *integrum simile*. But I do acknowledge that though *totum genericum existens* may be *integrum simile*, yet is not always so. It is so when all of that kind that existeth is bound together in one *copula* or bond.

As if all the Sand in the world were on one heap, or all the Gold in the world were of one lump, they were integralls.

Or if there be such a bird as the Phoenix, it is *totum genericum existens*, and yet it is an integrall. But if there be no such bond, then it is not an integrall; yet they are not that thing *in genere*, nor the genus of all that kind. But the universall visible Church, though it be *totum genericum existens*, i. e. all of that kind of society or body that existeth, yet it is an integrall, because it is bound together by an externall visible bond, yea bonds, as hath been

shewed before; & that Covenant with God in Christ, & the seal of Baptisme, which makes them of that kind compleatly, makes them also of that integral, *ea formali ratione*, and they cannot be of that kind, except they enter in as members of that integrall.

I acknowledg also that the instance of the nature of a flock not reserved in one sheep, or of a Corporation reserved in one man, mentioned *vind* p. 79, which M. Stone puts me twice in mind of, was misplaced and misapplied there; for the flock is not the *genus* of sheep, nor the Corporation of the men in it; but both flock and Corporation are each of them integrals, and so is the whole Church.

M. Stone also findes fault that I said *vind* p. 78, that that which existeth in the individuall is *ipsa causa materialis individui*. If he like not that expression, let him take the former mentioned but three lines before it, it is *pars essentialis individui*, for it goeth to the constitution of the essence of it, but it is not the *genus* of the integral, or that thing *in genere*.

And whereas I said *vind* p. 216. that I do not mean that the universall Church is first in regard of constitution of the whole politicall Kingdome of Christ by aggregation and combination, because the particular Congregations must exist before they can be combined and aggregated. I now declare that the first matter of the universall Church are particular visible beleevers, that are drawn into the generall Covenant, and these are secondarily combined into particular combinations, and so the combinations of Congregations in the universall Church is not the first combination, but a secondary, and in the distribution or *analysis* of the Church Catholick, they are accounted members of the distribution, but in the *genesis* or constitution, the particular members are first constitutive.

I shall also be willing that the eighth way whereby the whole Church may be accounted the prime Church, namely *cognitione seu noscibilitate perfecta*, mentioned *vind* 218. 219. and 253 may be left out, because it is more proper to a genericall nature than an integrall: and so may be said of the Church as it is a kind of society differing from others; rather than as it is an integral consisting of members, for there the members are first considered.

And to M. Stones objection against what I said *vind* p. 219 and